



**Assessing the relevance of political attitudes towards ‘rulebreakers’
in the criminal justice system, the welfare system and the
education system in British society today.**

by

Victoria Barrett

A thesis submitted in partial fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy

The University of Sheffield
Faculty of Social Sciences
The School of Law

July 2020

**ASSESSING THE RELEVANCE OF POLITICAL ATTITUDES
TOWARDS 'RULEBREAKERS' IN THE CRIMINAL JUSTICE
SYSTEM, THE WELFARE SYSTEM AND THE EDUCATION
SYSTEM IN BRITISH SOCIETY TODAY**

Victoria Barrett

**Doctor of Philosophy in Criminology
The School of Law, The University of Sheffield,
July 2020**

Contents

Abstract	6
List of Tables	7
List of Figures	10

Part 1 What Do We Know About Punitiveness?

Chapter 1: Introduction

1.1.	The aims of the study	12
1.2.	Punitiveness and the Political Context	12
1.3.	The Link between the Criminal Justice System, the Welfare System and the Education System	14
1.4.	Punitiveness and Neo-conservatism	16
1.5.	The Research Framework	17
1.6.	Methodology	17
1.7.	Structure of the thesis	18

Chapter 2.1: Literature Review: Exploring Punitiveness Towards Lawbreakers

2.1.1.	Introduction	20
2.1.2.	Socio-demographic factors	22
2.1.3.	Crime Experiences	28
2.1.4.	Belief Systems	29
2.1.5.	Summary	33

Chapter 2.2: Literature Review: Public Attitudes Towards Welfare Claimants

2.2.1.	Introduction	35
2.2.2.	Socio-demographic factors	35
2.2.3.	Beliefs and Perceptions	40
2.2.4.	Summary	46

Chapter 2.3: Literature Review: Public Attitudes Towards School Pupils

2.3.1.	Introduction	47
2.3.2.	Attitudes Towards Indiscipline	47
2.3.3.	Attitudes Towards School Exclusions	50
2.3.4.	The Corporal Punishment of School Pupils	52
2.3.5.	Summary	55

Part 2 Exploring Trends in Punitiveness

Chapter 3.1. The long-term trajectories of punitiveness towards rulebreakers in the criminal justice system: Government policies, political discourse, and public punitive sentiment

3.1.1.	Introduction	57
3.1.2.	The Prison Population and Recorded Crime Rates	58
3.1.3.	History of Responses to Lawbreakers: key policies related to increased punitiveness	62

3.1.4.	Political Discourse: a trend of rising punitiveness	69
3.1.5.	Trends in Public Opinion Towards Lawbreakers	72
3.1.6.	Summary	77
Chapter 3.2.	The long-term trajectories of punitiveness towards rulebreakers in the welfare system: Government policies, political discourse, and public sentiment	
3.2.1.	Introduction	79
3.2.2.	History of Responses to the Disadvantaged: A Summary	80
3.2.3.	Political Discourse	96
3.2.4.	Trends in Public Attitudes Towards Welfare Recipients	99
3.2.5.	Summary	106
Chapter 3.3.	The long-term trajectories of punitiveness towards rulebreakers in the education system: Government policies, political discourse, and public sentiment	
3.3.1.	Introduction	107
3.3.2.	The Corporal Punishment Debate	107
3.3.3.	History of Responses to Rulebreaking School Children: key education policies	110
3.3.4.	Trends in the Number of Exclusions	115
3.3.5.	Trends in Public Punitive Sentiment Towards School Pupils	126
3.3.6.	Summary	131
<hr/> <hr/>		
Part 3	Researching Punitiveness	
<hr/> <hr/>		
Chapter 4.1.	The Role of Cognitive Interviewing: a literature review	
4.1.1.	Introduction	132
4.1.2.	How Can Cognitive Interviewing Help Develop Survey Questions?	133
4.1.3.	Limitations of the Cognitive Interviewing Technique	143
4.1.4.	Summary	145
Chapter 4.2.	Using cognitive interviewing techniques to explore contemporary attitudes towards ‘rulebreakers’	
4.2.1.	Introduction	146
4.2.2.	Ethical Considerations	146
4.2.3.	Question Design	148
4.2.4.	Cognitive Interviewing Fieldwork	150
4.2.5.	The Analysis Process	153
4.2.6.	Summary	166
Chapter 4.3.	A Quantitative Framework	
4.3.1.	Introduction	168
4.3.2.	Quantitative Methodology	168
4.3.3.	Measuring Public Attitudes	169
4.3.4.	Web-based Surveys: Strengths and Limitations	170

4.3.5.	The Pilot Survey	172
4.3.6.	Summary	174
Chapter 5.	Placing analysis into context	
5.1	Introduction	175
5.2.	The Sample	175
5.3.	Descriptive Statistics, T-Tests and One-way ANOVAs	181
5.4.	Constructing Variables	196
5.5.	Summary	209
<hr/>		
Part 4	Examining Punitiveness Towards Rulebreakers	
<hr/>		
Chapter 6.	Quantitative analysis of punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils	
6.1.	Introduction	211
6.2.	Exploring support for tougher punishments for unruly school pupils	213
6.3.	The need to punish?	218
6.4.	Exploring support for the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils	221
6.5.	A Sense of Compassion	225
6.6.	A comparison of support for tougher punishments and the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils	227
6.7.	School Punitivity	230
6.8.	Summary	238
Chapter 7.	Quantitative analysis of punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants	
7.1.	Introduction	240
7.2.	Exploring support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants	241
7.3.	Who are welfare claimants perceived to be?	246
7.4.	Exploring support for permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants	247
7.5.	'A fair share of the money': Fairness and deservingness	252
7.6.	A comparison of support for stiffer penalties and permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants	255
7.7.	Welfare Punitivity	258
7.8.	Summary	265
Chapter 8.	Quantitative analysis of punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers	
8.1.	Introduction	268
8.2.	Exploring support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers	270
8.3.	Exploring support for the death penalty	274
8.4.	A comparison of support for stiffer sentences and the death penalty	279
8.5.	Law Punitivity	283
8.6.	Summary	291

Chapter 9.	Punitiveness towards ‘Rulebreakers’	
9.1.	Introduction	293
9.2.	Exploring Punitive Attitudes Towards Distinct Groups of Rulebreakers	294
9.3.	Neo-conservative Values	300
9.4.	Exploring collective punitiveness towards rulebreakers	301
9.5.	‘Tiered Punitiveness’	309
9.6.	Developing a Structural Equation Model for Tiered Punitiveness	320
9.7.	What does this study add to the theories of punitiveness	327
9.8.	Summary	329

Part 5 What is the relationship between Political Attitudes and Punitiveness?

Chapter 10.	Conclusion	
10.1.	Introduction	332
10.2.	Summary	333
10.3.	Limitations	344
10.4.	Future Research Directions	350
10.5.	Final Words	353
References		355
Appendix A:	Ethics Application	385
Appendix B:	Participant Information Sheet	391
Appendix C:	Participant Consent Form	393
Appendix D:	Main Survey	394
Appendix E:	Unweighted and weighted socio-demographic variable frequencies	407
Appendix F:	Multiple regression pairwise and listwise comparisons	408
Appendix G:	Neo-conservative Values – multiple regression analysis	417

Abstract

'Punitiveness' has been the focus of increasing criminological attention in recent decades. This study extends this focus by taking a multi-disciplinary approach to examining punitiveness in the criminal justice system, the welfare system and the education system in British society today. In doing so, this study uses new survey data (n=5,781) applying ordinal and linear regression and structural equation modelling to examine the relationship between public punitiveness towards 'rulebreakers' and political values. This is explored through assessing punitive attitudes towards the treatment of i) school pupils who break school rules, ii) towards the treatment of benefit recipients who fail to comply with the rules, and iii) towards people who break the law. Findings suggest that neo-conservative values are consistently related to punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers. Neo-liberal values, and social, economic and political nostalgia also appear to play an important role, however. 'Tiered punitiveness' is also introduced, suggesting that 'punitiveness' is not a discrete attitude but has different degrees to it, identified here as 'Basic Punitiveness' and 'Ultimate Punitiveness'.

Keywords

Punitiveness, rulebreakers, social attitudes, political values

List of Tables

Table	Page
Table 3.1. The Vagrancy Act 1824	82
Table 3.2. The destination and costs of alternative provision for excluded pupils in England and Wales	123
Table 4.1. Model of Verbal Probing in Cognitive Interviews	139
Table 4.2. Final Survey Questions	149
Table 4.3. Summary of Participants	151
Table 4.4. Cognitive Interview Schedule	152
Table 4.5. Framework Matrix	155
Table 4.6. Cognitive Interviews: Comparison of round one and round two	163
Table 4.7. Rulebreaking welfare recipients: support for stiffer sentences results	164
Table 4.8. Rulebreaking welfare recipients: support for permanently stopping welfare payments results	165
Table 4.9. Final Draft of Survey Questions	166
Table 5.1. The Composition of the Sample	176
Table 5.2. Number of Face-to-face Interviews	178
Table 5.3. Number of Interviews	178
Table 5.4. Response Rates	179
Table 5.5. Descriptive statistics for the eight new variables	183
Table 5.6. Frequencies for the eight new variables	196
Table 5.7. Measuring neo-liberal values	201
Table 5.8. Measuring neo-conservative values	203
Table 5.9. Measuring social nostalgic values	205
Table 5.10. Measuring economic nostalgic values	207
Table 5.11. Measuring political nostalgic values	208
Table 6.1. Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models predicting punitiveness towards 'Unruly school pupils should receive tougher punishments'	214
Table 6.2. Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models predicting punitiveness towards 'School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded'	223
Table 6.3. Summary: A comparison of significant factors relating to rulebreaking school pupils	229
Table 6.4. Beta weights for multiple linear regression models predicting 'school punitivity'	232
Table 6.5. Summary table for relevant statistically significant factors for school punitivity	235
Table 6.6. Model summary for school punitivity	236
Table 7.1. Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models predicting punitiveness towards 'Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties'	243
Table 7.2. Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models predicting punitiveness towards 'Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped'	249
Table 7.3. Summary: A comparison of significant factors relating to rulebreaking welfare claimants	257
Table 7.4. Beta weights for multiple linear regression models predicting 'welfare punitivity'	260

Table 7.5.	Summary table for relevant statistically significant factors for punitivity towards rulebreaking welfare claimants in Model 4	263
Table 7.6.	Model summary for welfare punitivity	264
Table 8.1.	Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models towards 'People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences'	271
Table 8.2.	Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models towards 'For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence'	276
Table 8.3.	Summary: A comparison of significant factors relating to criminal rulebreakers	282
Table 8.4.	Beta weights for multiple linear regression models predicting 'law punitivity'	284
Table 8.5.	Summary table for relevant statistically significant factors for punitivity towards criminal rulebreakers in Model 4	287
Table 8.6.	Model summary for law punitivity	289
Table 9.1.	Summary: Relevant factors for punitivity towards different groups of rulebreakers (Model 4)	299
Table 9.2.	Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for 'collective punitiveness' items	302
Table 9.3.	Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting general punitivity	304
Table 9.4.	Summary of relevant statistically significant factors for punitivity towards rulebreakers in Model 4	306
Table 9.5.	Model summary for collective punitiveness	307
Table 9.6.	Reduction in agreement in 'Tiered Punitiveness'	310
Table 9.7.	Basic and Ultimate Punitiveness Variables	310
Table 9.8.	Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for 'basic punitiveness'	311
Table 9.9.	Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for 'ultimate punitiveness'	312
Table 9.10.	Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'Basic Punitiveness'	314
Table 9.11.	Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'Ultimate Punitiveness'	315
Table 9.12.	Relevant statistically significant factors for tiered punitiveness towards rulebreakers (Model 4)	317

List of Figures

Figure	Page
Figure 2.1. Publications on ‘punitiveness’	20
Figure 3.1. Adult Prison Population since 1975 in England and Wales	61
Figure 3.2. Recorded Crime Rates 1975 – 2019	61
Figure 3.3. Public attitudes: Support for stiffer sentences	73
Figure 3.4. Conditional Formatting: Support for stiffer sentences, 1983 to 2018 by age	74
Figure 3.5. Public attitudes: Support for the death penalty	75
Figure 3.6. Conditional Formatting: Support for the death penalty, 1986 to 2018 by age	76
Figure 3.7. Public attitudes: Value of benefits, 1983 – 2018	100
Figure 3.8. Public attitudes: Fiddling the dole, 1987 – 2018	101
Figure 3.9. Conditional Formatting: Most people on the dole are fiddling, 1987 to 2018 by age	102
Figure 3.10. Public attitudes: Social security claimants don’t deserve help, 1987 – 2018	104
Figure 3.11. Conditional Formatting: Many people who get social security don’t really deserve any help, 1987 to 2018 by age	105
Figure 3.12. Permanent Exclusions in England 1990/1 to 2016/17	117
Figure 3.13. Permanent Exclusions in Wales 2012/13 to 2016/17	119
Figure 3.14. Permanent Exclusions in Scotland 2002/3 to 2016/17	120
Figure 3.15. Reasons for permanent and non-permanent exclusions in state-funded primary and secondary schools 2016 to 2017 - England and Wales	121
Figure 3.16. Reasons for temporary exclusions in state-funded primary and secondary schools 2016 to 2017 - Scotland	121
Figure 3.17. Public attitudes: Teach children to obey authority, 1986-2018	127
Figure 3.18. Conditional Formatting: Schools should teach children to obey authority, 1986 to 2018 by age	128
Figure 3.19. Public attitudes: Young people lack respect for traditional values	129
Figure 3.20. Conditional Formatting: Young people today don’t have enough respect for traditional values, 1986 to 2018 by age	130
Figure 4.1. Interview Summaries Template	154
Figure 5.1. Age Range of the Sample	180
Figure 5.2. Politics Scale	181
Figure 5.3. Frequencies for tougher punishments for unruly school children	184
Figure 5.4. Gender responses for punishments for unruly school children	184
Figure 5.5. Mean by age range for tougher punishments for unruly school children	184
Figure 5.6. Frequencies for permanent exclusion	185
Figure 5.7. Gender responses for permanent exclusion	185
Figure 5.8. Mean by age range for permanent exclusion	186
Figure 5.9. Frequencies for caning.	187
Figure 5.10. Gender responses for caning.	187
Figure 5.11. Mean by age range for caning.	188
Figure 5.12. Frequencies for punishments not strict enough	189
Figure 5.13. Gender responses for punishments not strict enough	189

Figure 5.14. Mean by age range for punishments not strict enough	189
Figure 5.15. Frequencies for welfare claimants stiffer penalties	190
Figure 5.16. Gender responses for welfare claimants stiffer sentences	190
Figure 5.17. Mean by age range for welfare claimants stiffer penalties	191
Figure 5.18. Frequencies for permanently stopping welfare	192
Figure 5.19. Gender responses for permanently stopping welfare	192
Figure 5.20. Mean by age range for permanently stopping welfare	192
Figure 5.21. Frequencies for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers	193
Figure 5.22. Gender responses for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers.	193
Figure 5.23. Mean by age range for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers.	194
Figure 5.24. Frequencies for death penalty.	195
Figure 5.25. Gender responses for death penalty.	195
Figure 5.26. Mean plot of death penalty by age range.	195
Figure 5.27. Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for neo-liberal values items	203
Figure 5.28. Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for neo-conservative values	204
Figure 5.29. Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for social nostalgic values	207
Figure 5.30. Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for economic nostalgic values items	208
Figure 5.31. Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for political nostalgic values items	209
Figure 6.1. Histogram for school punitivity	237
Figure 6.2. Normal P-P Plot for school punitivity	237
Figure 7.1. Histogram for welfare punitivity	264
Figure 7.2. Normal P-P Plot for welfare punitivity	264
Figure 8.1. Histogram for law punitivity	290
Figure 8.2. Normal P-P Plot for law punitivity	290
Figure 9.1. Histogram for collective punitiveness	308
Figure 9.2. Normal P-P Plot for collective punitiveness	308
Figure 9.3. Histogram for basic punitiveness	318
Figure 9.4. Histogram for ultimate punitiveness	318
Figure 9.5. Normal P-P Plot for basic punitiveness	319
Figure 9.6. Normal P-P Plot for ultimate punitiveness	319
Figure 9.7. Structural Equation Model of Basic Punitiveness	322
Figure 9.8. Structural Equation Model of Ultimate Punitiveness	323
Figure 9.9. Structural Equation Model of Collective Punitiveness	324
Figure 10.1. Theoretical Model of Punitiveness	329

Acknowledgements

Thank you firstly to my supervisors, Stephen Farrall and Emily Gray, for their guidance, support and wisdom and for helping to make this PhD an enjoyable and stimulating experience. Gratitude is also due to The School of Law at the University of Sheffield and the Economic and Social Research Council. Special mention is also due to my family for their support and love; and, to Joe for his humour, love and encouragement. Last but not least, thank you to those who gave their time to take part in this study.

This study is dedicated to the memories of Elsie, David, Maggie and Roy.

Part One: What Do We Know About Punitiveness?

Chapter 1: Introduction

1.1. The aim of this study

This study's objective is to explore and explain the prevalence of punitive attitudes towards 'rulebreakers' in three regulatory systems: the criminal justice system, the welfare system and the education system in contemporary British society. In doing so, it focuses on the relationship between punitiveness and political attitudes from the late 20th Century, when a change in government has been noted as definitively altering the political landscape in the UK.

Whilst punitiveness towards lawbreakers has an established place in criminological literature, this is not the case for welfare claimants or school pupils in their respective literatures. An attempt then has been made to expand this punitiveness lens to rulebreaking welfare claimants and school pupils with the aim of examining similarities and differences between attitudes towards the different groups. This examination commences by reviewing the empirical literature on public attitudes towards the different groups of rulebreakers. Legislative changes, political attitudes and trends in public attitudes are then explored. The development of the new survey questions designed for this project are then presented, before moving on to present the findings of this study. Finally, this study's contributions and implications for future research are discussed.

1.2. Punitiveness and the Political Context

'The desire to punish those who break social rules is a widespread, if not universal, feature of human societies.' (Tyler and Boeckmann, 1997:237)

'Punitiveness' has been the focus of increasing criminological attention in recent decades (Farrall et al., 2016). Studies generally gauge punitiveness through the nature of punishments available or analysis of attitudinal data from surveys measuring public support for punitive actions (Farrall et al., 2016; Hogan et al., 2005). 'Punitiveness' then

can be operationalised through examining public attitudes or system operations; this study considers the former of these. The literature examining the general public's support for the tough sentencing of offenders is dominated by three explanations (Gerber and Jackson, 2016). An instrumental perspective suggests that fear of crime and victimisation drive a desire for punishment to reduce potential future harm; a relational perspective proposes that concerns about community breakdown drive a desire for punishment to restore moral boundaries; and, a psychological model founded on ideological preferences suggests that people desire conformity and authority in society, and for institutions to punish those who threaten collective security (Gerber and Jackson, 2016). This study aims to extend this criminological focus by taking a multi-disciplinary approach to examining punitiveness, operationalised as a person's level of support for harsher penalties with an emphasis on a desire for both tougher punishments and extreme sanctions, across three regulatory systems (criminal justice, education and welfare). In doing so, the literature on punitiveness towards lawbreakers, and the most relevant literature towards welfare claimants and school children will be examined, aiming to place this study in context and aid its design. The concept of 'punitiveness' has not been explored in relation to rulebreakers in the welfare system and the education system. The literature reviews for these two systems then aim to consider empirical research most relevant to the study of punitive attitudes placing this study into context within the frameworks of these two areas. The long-term trajectories of punitive attitudes towards the three distinct groups of rulebreakers will also be reviewed providing an analysis of government policies, political discourse and trends in public attitudes over the last forty years.

This study aims to explore the extent to which a range of political values and social attitudes are related to punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers. These influences will be explored through assessing punitive attitudes towards the treatment of:

- i) school pupils who break school rules;
- ii) benefit recipients who fail to comply with the rules; and,
- iii) people who break the law.

These three areas will be explored with a view to understanding the various punitive attitudes of the general population and the influence of enduring political values on social attitudes in contemporary society.

British Social Attitudes Survey (BSAS) data will also be drawn upon to consider trends in social attitudes over time. The BSAS has been conducted annually since 1983 with over 90,000 people taking part in the study so far (NatCen, 2020). BSAS asks around 3,000 people every year questions to understand current issues but also repeats questions periodically to chart changes over time (NatCen, 2020). BSAS long-term existing data will be analysed to map trends in social attitudes and how these attitudes shift (on aggregate) over time.

Recent research suggests that contemporary policy is influenced by the tough law and order agenda that emerged during the late 1970s and early 1980s (Farrall and Jennings, 2014), raising standards in education driven by choice and competition (Dorey, 2014), and rhetorical hostility towards social security recipients (Hill and Walker, 2014). Lacey (2008:76) suggests that political leaders are 'increasingly focussed on the median voter' and leads to the 'unmediated responsiveness of politics to popular opinion'. Analysis of social attitudes in this area will allow assessment of whether these same attitudes endure in the wider population, and whether public opinion has been shaped by political influences resulting in 'political socialisation' (Grasso et al., 2017).

1.3. The Link between the Criminal Justice System, the Welfare System and the Education System

This study proposes that political discourse and policies within the criminal justice system, the welfare system and the education system demonstrate an increasing trend of punitiveness towards those who 'break the rules'. 'Law and order' began its prominence within political discourse in the 1980s when the Conservative Party gained power (Reiner, 2000:73). From the early 1990s, both the Conservative and Labour parties made significant efforts to be seen to be 'tough on crime' (Newburn, 2007). Consequently, an increase in the use of punishment resulted in a significant increase in the prison population (Newburn, 2007). This trend of an increasing prison population has endured and has risen by 82% in

England and Wales since the early 1990s (Prison Reform Trust, 2017) and remains at high levels (Home Office, 2020). The Government is currently planning to create 10,000 new prison places as part of its 'Prison Estate Transformation Programme' in response to projected rises in the prison population (Beard, 2019). This punitiveness can be observed in the contemporary government's response to crime in England and Wales, which centralises 'tough punishments' and 'tough' approaches to crime (Ministry of Justice, 2010:9), 'tougher sentencing' and 'tougher community sentences' (The Conservative Manifesto, 2019:19) and 'restating our commitment to law and order' (Priti Patel quoted by Gayle, 2019).

Support for harsher responses to rulebreaking, however, is not limited to the criminal justice system and can be observed in other regulatory systems. Since the 1980s, the education system has received criticism for a range of social issues by government, such as anti-social behaviour, which has involved a political rhetoric of teachers 'failing pupils' by being incapable of maintaining classroom discipline (Dorey, 2014:109). Government discourse, which commenced during the 1980s, focuses on the failings of education, which enabled extensive policy reforms to be implemented driven by market principles and managerial authority over professionals (Dorey, 2014). Official data reported 6,685 permanent exclusions in 2015/16, however, a further 48,000 school children were educated in the Alternative Provision sector catering for excluded pupils during this period (Gill et al., 2017). School children are much more likely to engage in criminal activity whilst excluded from school than those who have not been excluded (Ipsos MORI, 2000). Negative outcomes such as unemployment and prison are more likely to be future experiences of excluded children with approximately 50% of the current prison population excluded from school (Gill et al., 2017).

A punitive rhetoric towards benefit recipients was evident prior to the 1980s; however, punitive discourse towards welfare recipients escalated in the 1980s with 'idleness and cheating' used as common descriptors (Thatcher, 1993 in Hill and Walker, 2014:97). This attitude has permeated policy changes making access to benefits more difficult with a view to making cuts to the majority of the welfare system (Hill and Walker, 2014). Increasingly, changes to welfare policies have exposed claimants to sanctions aimed at effecting behaviour control and change (Wright et al., 2018). For some people, the current welfare system

dominated by conditionality and sanctions, has resulted in increased poverty, destitution and crime (Welfare Conditionality Project, 2018). Some claimants, particularly those with additional vulnerabilities, such as drug and alcohol dependencies and homelessness, withdraw from the welfare system all together (Welfare Conditionality Project, 2018).

1.4. Punitiveness and Neo-conservatism

Punitiveness is explicitly related to attitudes to punishment, in particular about how people think that rulebreakers *ought* to be punished. Punitiveness has ‘connotations of excess’, suggests an intensification of punishment either by duration or severity, and is applied disproportionately (Matthews, 2005:179). The operationalisation of punitiveness in this study aims to tap into the public’s desire for harsher penalties (school punishments, welfare sanctions, sentences). It is an attitude that suggests that punishment as it is, in its present form, is not enough, and that it should be harsher (Kury and Ferdinand, 1999; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Roberts et al., 2003). It is a reflection on the present form of punishment and shows a desire for harsher punishments in the *future*.

Neo-conservatism, on the other hand, is an evaluation of the *past* in response to how people observe and experience the *present*. It is an underlying belief and is a historical construction; it is rooted in the past. During the early 1980s, New Right political ideologies emerged in many western industrialised nations and are characterised by a combination of neo-liberal and neo-conservative ideals (Gamble, 1988; Hay, 1996; Hayes, 1994).

Neo-conservative ideals assert social order, traditional values and the authoritarian state (Hayes, 1994). During the 1970s, there was an increasing concern over falling standards and ‘violent’ schools (Hall, 1979). There were also concerns about the link between indiscipline in schools and anti-social behaviour in neighbourhoods (Berridge et al., 2001). An educational strategy emerged under the conservative governments during this period, which reiterated ‘social skills, respect for authority, traditional values and discipline’ founded on a traditional education (Hall, 1979:19). Meanwhile, neo-liberal ideals assert the free market, competition, profit, and the belief that state authority should be limited to defence, the rule of law and monetary control (Hayes, 1994). New variables have been designed for this study to examine the relevance of neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values to understanding

punitiveness. A more in depth discussion of their theoretical and empirical construction is detailed in Chapter 5.

1.5. The Research Framework

This project's aim is to assess the extent to which people hold punitive attitudes, that is support harsher penalties and extreme sanctions, towards rulebreakers. This will be explored in the following areas:

- a) Compulsory education - attitudes towards the treatment of pupils who break school rules.
- b) Welfare – attitudes towards the treatment of benefit recipients who fail to comply with the rules.
- c) The Criminal Justice System – attitudes towards the treatment of adult lawbreakers.

The research questions posed by this project are:

- What is the relationship between punitive and political attitudes?
- How prevalent are punitive attitudes towards 'rulebreakers' of the law, the welfare system, and compulsory education evident in British society today?
- How do punitive attitudes vary towards different groups of 'rulebreakers'?

1.6. Methodology

The project comprises of a quantitative approach encompassing cognitive interviewing and a national web-based survey.

- The main method is a new national web-based survey of 5,781 people conducted in England, Wales and Scotland in January and February 2019. Survey research enables a large sample to be systematically examined (Denscombe, 2014). This examination will measure the prevalence of punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers and the influence of political values on these attitudes. The survey asked a range of existing and newly developed survey questions to explore contemporary social and political attitudes. A specific battery of questions was designed for this study aiming to assess the prevalence of punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers, which was embedded within the larger survey.

- Cognitive interviews were undertaken during the design phases of the survey. Cognitive interviewing is a key method in the question design process used for ‘identifying and correcting problems with survey questions’ (Beatty and Willis, 2007:287). Pre-testing methods in questionnaire design can be used to highlight problems in respondents’ interpretations and responses, enabling potential solutions to be explored (Conrad and Blair, 2009). The cognitive interviews also shed some light on the differences and similarities of public attitudes towards different groups of rulebreakers. Therefore, they have also been applied qualitatively.

1.8. Structure of the Thesis:

This thesis is comprised of four parts. Part one forms the theoretical basis for this study by exploring what we know about punitiveness. Chapter 2 presents the literature related to the areas under examination from a multi-disciplinary perspective. Firstly, by providing a literature review of public punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers, before presenting the most relevant literature to enable developing a ‘punitiveness’ perspective in relation to rulebreaking welfare claimants and school children.

Part two then focuses on exploring long-term trends in punitiveness in relation to government policies, political discourse and public attitudes towards the distinct groups of rulebreakers. This considers the extent to which government policies have implemented harsher sanctions for rulebreakers, political discourse endures a punitive tone, and public attitudes have become less favourable towards the different groups of rulebreakers over time.

Part three builds on what we have learned to this point and commences the process of researching punitiveness. Part one and part two formed the basis for the development of the newly designed questions detailed in part three. This commences by presenting a literature review of cognitive interviewing in the design process of new survey questions. Part three then progresses to detail how cognitive interviewing has been used in this study to explore attitudes towards rulebreakers, before presenting the final battery of questions designed for this project. The limitations of survey research are then discussed, before presenting the pilot study findings. Part three concludes by placing the quantitative analysis into context by

presenting the descriptive statistic and basis analyses for the battery of questions. The theoretical basis and practical process of constructing the conceptual variables are also detailed.

Part four examines punitiveness towards rulebreakers and presents the findings to this thesis. Chapter 6 commences the quantitative analyses towards rulebreakers by exploring punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school children though conducting ordinal regression and multiple linear regression. Chapter 7 repeats the same analyses in Chapter 6, this time in reference to rulebreaking welfare claimants. Finally, Chapter 8 completes the trilogy of distinct chapters by examining public attitudes towards lawbreakers. Chapter 9 then brings these three distinct chapters together by examining the variation in attitudes towards the three groups of rulebreakers. The chapter then progresses to merge these three groups of rulebreakers together to examine punitive attitudes towards them as a collective group. 'Tiered punitiveness' is then introduced, suggesting that punitiveness is not a discrete attitude but consists of different degrees, identified here as 'Basic Punitiveness' and 'Ultimate Punitiveness'. Part four concludes with Chapter 10, which first provides a recap on what has been learned throughout this study before considering the limitations of the study. Finally, this thesis concludes by suggesting potential implications for future research.

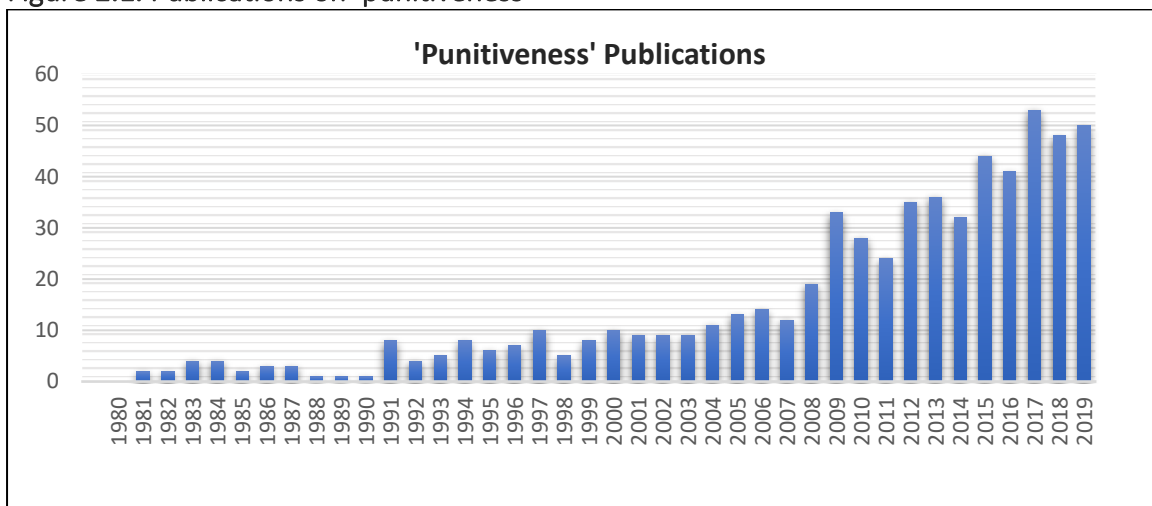
Chapter 2.1. Literature Review: Exploring Punitiveness Towards Lawbreakers

2.1.1. Introduction

This chapter reviews the most relevant literature on public punitiveness towards the three groups of rulebreakers. Firstly, by exploring attitudes towards lawbreakers; secondly, towards rulebreaking welfare claimants; and then finally, towards rulebreaking school pupils.

‘Punitiveness’ in the Criminal Justice System has been the focus of increasing criminological attention over the past few decades (Farrall et al., 2016). A search of ‘punitiveness’ on Web of Science (Figure 2.1.) shows the extent to which publications have increased in this area from the early 1980s (Web of Science, 2020).

Figure 2.1. Publications on ‘punitiveness’



Source: Web of Science (2020)

Punitiveness can be operationalised in two ways: analysis of attitudinal data from surveys measuring public support for punitive sentences (Tyler and Boeckmann, 1997; King and Maruna, 2009) or the nature of punishments given out (Farrall et al., 2016; Hogan et al., 2005); this project considers the former of these.

Public demands for harsher sentences for offenders have become customary in many countries across the world (Gerber and Jackson, 2016). ‘Populist punitiveness’ is a feature of criminal justice over the past 40 years and has influenced sentencing policies observed in most Western countries, contributing to increases in prison populations (Bottoms, 1995:18).

In England and Wales between 1980 and 2010 the prison population more than doubled from around 40,000 to in excess of 80,000 (Jennings et al., 2017a). Jennings et al. (2017a) suggest that public punitiveness increased as a response to crime concerns influencing the incarceration rate as a policy response. Scotland followed this trend with a prison population increase from just under 5,000 in 1980 to approximately 8,000 prisoners in 2010 (Scottish Government, 2011). The prison population in England and Wales in June 2019 was approximately 83,500 (Home Office, 2019a) and 7,595 prisoners in Scotland (Sturge, 2019). Morgan and Clarkson (1995:7) attribute some of the prison increase in the early 1990s to the announcement of 'get tough' measures and the 'prison works' proposal of the Home Secretary, Michael Howard, at the Conservative Party Conference in 1993. Bottoms (1995) proposes that punitiveness appeals to some politicians due to their belief that prison reduces crime through general deterrence and incapacitation, increases society's moral consensus against certain behaviours, and satisfies the electorate. 'Populist punitiveness' reflects the idea of politicians 'tapping into, and using for their own purposes, what they believe to be the public's generally punitive stance' (Bottoms, 1995:40), therefore appealing to the public and politicians alike. Hough and Walker (1988:203) suggest that punitive is 'shorthand to indicate a preference for heavy sentences' irrespective of the basis of this punitiveness.

Punitiveness is explicitly related to how people think rulebreakers *ought* to be punished. It is an attitude that suggests punishment, in its present form, is not enough and should be harsher (Kury and Ferdinand, 1999; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Roberts et al., 2003). Punitiveness implies excess, intensification, and is disproportionate (Matthews, 2005: 179). The literature as to why the general public are supportive of the tough sentencing of offenders is dominated by three theories: An instrumental perspective (fear of crime and victimisation drive a desire for punishment to reduce future harm); a relational perspective (concern about community breakdown results in a desire to restore moral boundaries through punishment); and, a psychological model founded on ideological preferences (a desire for societal conformity and authority, and for institutions to punish those who threaten collective security) (Gerber and Jackson, 2016). A range of national and international studies, reviewed below, have focussed on public preferences for harsher sentencing as a measure for punitiveness. The literature examining the public's desire for punitive sentences for offenders covers a relatively wide range of factors. This chapter begins

by reviewing the literature examining the relevance of socio-demographic factors to understanding punitive attitudes towards offenders. Crime experiences will then be considered assessing the importance of real threats of crime and victimisation to public punitiveness. Finally, the relevance of belief systems, including abstract anxieties, conservative beliefs, right-wing authoritarianism and economic beliefs, will be reviewed. Whilst there is some discrepancy between the measurements designed to assess punitiveness amongst these studies, certain trends in the data have emerged. The literature reviewed in this section is deemed the most relevant to this project in terms of how punitiveness has been operationalised drawing on empirical research using survey data.

2.1.2. Socio-demographic factors

A large volume of empirical research has sought to understand public sentiment towards offenders through exploring socio-demographic factors (King and Maruna, 2009; Costelloe et al., 2009; Unnever and Cullen, 2010). However, as this review shows there is conflicting research regarding the influence of demographic factors on punitive attitudes towards offenders.

Age

In the UK, age has been found to be variably related to punitiveness. Hough and Moxon (1985) analysed the findings from the 1982 and 1984 sweeps of the British Crime Survey (BCS) and found that older individuals generally held more punitive views when questioned about the most appropriate sentence across a range of seven crimes. Those over 60 years old favoured longer prison sentences (*one or more years in prison*) across all crimes compared to lower age groups, with those under 30 years old being least punitive. Hough et al. (1988) found age made a statistically significant contribution to their scale of punitiveness ($\beta = .14$, $p = .05$) with older people expressing more punitive views measured as *'court sentences are too soft'*. However, more recently, King and Maruna (2009) ($n = 940$) operationalised 'punitiveness' as a person's level of support for harsher sanctions and/or crime policies (*With most offenders, we need to 'condemn more and understand less'; My general view towards offenders is that they should be treated harshly; and, We should bring back the death penalty for serious crimes*). They found that age was not a significant predictor of punitiveness.

Internationally, results have also varied. In Australia, Roberts and Indermaur (2007) operationalised punitiveness through statements relating to sentences (*The death penalty should be the punishment for murder; People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences*) and public opinion (*Judges should reflect public opinion about crimes when sentencing criminals*). They found age to be a significant factor with punitiveness increasing with age ($n=4270$, $r=.009$, $p<.05$). Spiranovic et al. (2012) also found punitiveness increased with age ($n=5571$, $r=.09$, $p<.01$) measured through a punitive scale of seven items designed to measure an individual's desire for harsher punishments, including *People who break the law should be give stiffer sentences*. However, they noted age was only a weak predictor accounting for less than 1% of unique variance (Spiranovic et al., 2012). In America, older respondents were also found to be more punitive in relation to punishment ($n=156$, $\beta=.192$, $p<.05$) when measured as support for punitive responses to offenders (Cullen et al., 1985). In contrast, Tyler and Boeckmann (1997) found the young to be more punitive ($n=166$, $\beta=.22$, $p<.01$) in Northern California in relation to support for the 'three strikes' initiatives. Useem et al. (2003) explored punitiveness towards criminal offenders (*Favour for the death penalty; Courts in this area do not deal harshly enough with criminals; Spending too little money to halt the rising crime rate; Spending too little on law enforcement*) constructing variables based on the core experiences that New Penology theorists propose are related to increased punitiveness: experience or anticipation of unemployment, life and financial satisfaction, and job prospects. They found that age generally had no effect on their measures, with the exception of the satisfaction measure (*Generally 'not too happy'; Not satisfied with city or place in which respondent lives; Not satisfied with financial situation; Financial situation has been getting worse*), where support for the death penalty increased with age ($r=.006$, $p<.001$).

The age, period and cohort (APC) approach recognises the complexity of using age to measure punitive attitudes (Gray et al., 2018) and may explain some of the differences found in punitive attitudes related to age in the aforementioned studies. Each study has measured punitiveness at a specific period of time, in a specific place and context. The APC approach acknowledges the distinct temporal processes of individual ageing, contexts and generational membership and aids understanding of social changes (Gray et al., 2018). When measuring age in a group of people, Gray et al. (2018) highlight the importance of considering how

much change is related to the individual aging process, how much is due to the historical context of the data collection, and how much is related to the generation the individual grew up in. Gray et al. (2018) found that public perceptions of crime can be impacted by the socio-political environment in which people spend their formative years, that is the age at which individuals are most responsive to forming their opinions. This 'political socialisation' can impact on public perceptions and can endure throughout a person's life course (Gray et al., 2018). The relevance of APC effects to punitiveness will be returned to in Chapter 10 of this thesis.

Gender

Hough et al. (1988) found that male attitudes to sentencing to be more punitive than females, however, this gender difference disappeared for those over the age of 55. Hough et al. (1988) also found gender made a statistically significant contribution to their scale of punitiveness ($\beta = .07$, $p < .05$) with males expressing more punitive views than females. Internationally, gender has been found to be predictive of punitive attitudes. In the US, Cullen et al. (1985) and Useem et al. (2003) found a statistically significant difference between males and females in relation to support for the death penalty, with females being more likely to oppose the death penalty ($\beta = -.300$; $p < .01$ and $p < .001$, respectively). In Australia, Roberts and Indermaur (2007) found that being male was a statistically significant predictor of increased punitiveness ($\beta = .082$, $p < .001$), and Spiranovic et al. (2012) found that being female was associated with lower scores for punitiveness ($\beta = -.112$, $p < .01$).

Social Status

Higher educational attainment, those with A levels or higher, have been found to be associated with less punitive attitudes (Hough and Walker, 1988; Hough and Park, 2002; Unnever and Cullen, 2010). King and Maruna (2009) found that when demographic factors were considered in isolation, education was found to have one of the strongest effects on punitive attitudes towards offenders ($\beta = -.300$, $p = .001$) with those with more education being less punitive towards offenders. Education has also been found to be a strong predictor of punitiveness internationally. In Australia, Spiranovic et al. (2012) explored demographic, media usage and crime salience variables (*Perceptions of crime levels, fear of crime, and personal experience with the criminal courts*), and found education to be the strongest

demographic predictor of punitive attitudes ($n=6,005$, $\beta=-.516$, $p<.01$) accounting for 11% of unique variance when demographic characteristics were considered in isolation. When media usage, crime salience and demographic factors were considered together, education remained the strongest demographic predictor of punitive attitudes ($\beta=-.219$, $p<.01$) accounting for 4 percent of unique variance. Roberts and Indermaur's (2007) study also found that those with more years in education reported lower levels of punitiveness ($\beta=-.168$, $p=.001$). Findings in America have also followed this trend. Tyler and Boeckmann (1997) found lower educational attainment to be the strongest individual predictor of increased punitiveness ($\beta=.30$, $p<.001$). Costelloe et al. (2009) operationalised punitiveness through support for a range of punitive policies (*Death penalty for juveniles who murder; Send repeat juvenile offenders to adult court; Lock up more juveniles offenders; Make sentences more severe for all crimes; Limit appeals to death sentences; Make prisoners work on chain gangs; Take away television and recreational privileges from prisoners*). They found that higher educational attainment was a significant predictor of less punitive views ($\beta=-.086$, $p<.01$). Furthermore, Useem et al. (2003) found a curvilinear relationship between education and punitive attitudes in relation to their unemployment measure (*Likely to lose job or be laid off in the next 12 months; Been unemployed; Seeking work any time in the past 10 years*). High school graduates were more likely to support punitive policies, whereas both those with less than high school education ($\beta=-.222$, $p<.05$) and those with a college degree or more ($\beta=-.532$, $p<.001$) were more likely to oppose the death penalty. In relation to satisfaction variables (*Generally 'not too happy'; Not satisfied with city or place in which respondent lives; Not satisfied with financial situation; Financial situation has been getting worse*), Useem et al. (2003) also found a curvilinear relationship with those with lower ($\beta=-.204$, $p<.001$) and higher educational attainment ($\beta=-.476$, $p<.001$) more likely to oppose the death penalty. Career advancement and job threat variables (*Unlikely to be promoted in the next five years; Lost ground in job; Being a man/woman makes own promotion opportunities better or worse; Ethnic background makes promotion opportunities better or worse*) followed a different pattern with only those with higher education ($\beta=-.734$, $p<.001$) more likely to oppose the death penalty. However, in Illinois, Cullen et al. (1985) found that education was not a predictor of punitive attitudes when operationalised by measuring support for punitive responses to offenders based on the traditional punishment philosophies of retribution, deterrence and incapacitation.

King and Maruna (2009) found class origin to be a relatively stable predictor of punitiveness, suggesting that as self-reported class hierarchy ascends, the less likely a person is to express punitive attitudes ($\beta = -.154$, $p < .001$). Roberts and Indermaur (2007) found that those who described themselves as working class were associated with increased punitive attitudes ($\beta = .530$, $p = .001$). Hough and Moxon (1985) found that manual workers and their families are generally more punitive than non-manual workers measured by their preference for custodial sentences of one year or more across a range of crimes. Manual workers (40%) were also found to favour the tougher sentencing of burglars compared to non-manual workers (34%).

There is conflicting research regarding the influence of income on punitive attitudes. King and Maruna (2009) found that those earning more income are more likely to express punitive views ($\beta = .080$, $p < .05$). Spiranovic et al. (2012) found that upper income was a significant predictor of a less punitive attitude ($\beta = -.09$, $p < .01$) when demographic factors were considered in isolation, although this accounted for less than half a percentage of unique variance. Whereas Cullen et al. (1985) and Costelloe et al. (2009) found that income was not a predictor of punitive attitudes. Lastly, Costelloe et al., (2009) found marriage to be a significant predictor of increased punitive attitudes ($\beta = .067$, $p < .01$).

Religiosity

In England, self-reported religiosity or spirituality was found to be related to decreased punitiveness ($\beta = -.125$, $p < .001$) (King and Maruna, 2009). Self-reported attendance at religious services at least once per month was also associated with lower punitiveness in Australia ($\beta = -.089$, $p = .001$) (Roberts and Indermaur, 2007), whilst in America those considered religiously orientated people were also found to be less supportive of punitive responses to crime and the death penalty (Unnever and Cullen, 2010). However, when religion is based on fundamentalist beliefs, such as referring to more literal interpretations of the Bible, increased punitiveness towards juvenile offenders was found to be statistically significant ($\beta = .331$, $p < .001$) (Grasmick and McGill, 1994).

Ethnicity

Research in England suggest that ethnicity is not linked to punitiveness (King and Maruna, 2009), whereas in the US, white people have been found to hold more punitive views

(beta=.17, $p < .01$) (Tyler and Boeckmann, 1997). African Americans have been found to be generally unsupportive of punitive responses to crime and the death penalty (Unnever and Cullen, 2010). Useem et al. (2003) found that African Americans were less likely to favour capital punishment (beta=-.928, $p < .001$) than white people, and also less likely to believe that the courts are too lenient on offenders (beta=-.436, $p < .001$). Costelloe et al. (2009) also found that black people were significantly less likely to hold punitive views (beta=-.081, $p < .01$). Cohn et al. (1991) suggest that there is a distinction along ethnic lines to punitive attitudes in America whereby African American punitiveness may be explained by fear of crime, whereas punitiveness in the white population may be explained by prejudice. Unnever and Cullen (2010) also suggest that public punitiveness is entwined by ethnic resentments and found that hostility towards ethnic groups was one of the most constant and substantive predictors of both a punitive approach to crime (beta=.230, $p < .001$) and support for the death penalty (beta=.223, $p < .001$).

Summary

Whilst there is some evidence to suggest that certain socio-demographic factors can account for some variance in punitive public sentiment, they alone are not particularly strong explanations of punitive attitudes (King and Maruna, 2009). Whilst some demographic factors, particularly education and gender, emerge as relevant predictors of punitive attitudes, collectively they are weak predictors accounting for a relatively small percentage of variance in punitive attitudes (Spiranovic et al., 2012). Roberts and Indermauer (2007) found that demographic factors alone accounted for 12.8 percent of the variance in their measure of punitiveness, whereas Cullen et al. (1985) found that socio-demographic factors accounted for no more than 10 percent of the variance in explaining punitiveness. In England, King and Maruna (2009) found the variance of demographic factors in their research to be consistent with previous research. Yet, the interaction of socio-demographic factors may be very powerful and increase our understandings of punitive attitudes. Attitudes shift within social cleavages; therefore, complex background information of respondents should be considered. APC modelling suggests that generational values can vary distinctly depending on when people were politically socialised (Gray et al., 2018).

2.1.3. Crime Experiences

Fear of crime

Instrumental theories of public punitiveness suggest that people desire punishment to reduce the likelihood of harm to themselves and their communities through incapacitation and deterrence (Gerber and Jackson, 2016). Thus, punitive sentiment is measured through people's personal experiences of crime and victimisation (King and Maruna, 2009). Several studies have found a small, but significant, effect of fear of crime on punitive attitudes (Hogan et al., 2005; Sprott and Doob, 1997), whilst Sprott (1999) found no effect on punitiveness. King and Maruna (2009) found that anxieties about crime (*I consider myself to be at risk of crime; Crime is a serious problem where I live*) was only a significant predictor of a punitive attitudes (beta=.186, $p<.001$) when relational factors were not considered in the model. In this latter scenario, crime concerns were not found to be statistically significant suggesting that relational factors inflated crime concern in the former model. In Florida, Costelloe et al.'s (2009) study (n=2,250) examining punitive attitudes towards criminals through support for crime policies (including *death penalty for juveniles who murder; make sentences stiffer for all crimes*) found that crime salience, particularly fear of victimisation (beta=.164, $p<.01$) and concern about crime (beta=.304, $p<.01$), consistently predicted punitiveness irrespective of sex or ethnicity of the respondents. Spiranovic et al. (2012) found that perceptions of crime (beta=.298, $p<.01$) and fear of crime (beta=.140, $p<.01$) were significant predictors of punitive attitudes accounting for 7 percent and 2 percent of unique variance respectively.

Victimisation

A considerable amount of research has failed to find support for the hypothesis that victimisation is a significant predictor of punitive attitudes (King and Maruna, 2009; Unnever et al., 2007; Hough and Moxon, 1985; Costelloe et al., 2009; Kleck and Baker Jackson, 2016). These studies operationalise victimisation in several ways. King and Maruna (2009) asked individuals if they had been the victim '*of a personally damaging or serious crime*' and '*the victim of crime on many occasions*' and found that experience of criminal victimisation did not have an effect of punitiveness in any of the models tested. Unnever et al. (2007) used national-level US data from the General Social Survey, which asked '*did anyone break into or somehow illegally get into your (apartment/home)?*', and '*did anyone take something directly*

from you by using force-such as a stickup, mugging, or threat?’ within the last year. They found no relationship between being a victim and support for harsher local courts or the death penalty (Unnever et al., 2007). In Hough and Moxon’s (1985) study, victimisation was operationalised through asking victims of residential burglary and car theft to choose their preferred sentence for the offender from a range of options shown on a card and found that victims of these offences were less likely to opt for imprisonment and fines. Costelloe et al. (2009) operationalised victimisation by asking whether anyone in the respondents’ household had been a victim of a crime within the past year. Finally, Kleck and Baker Jackson (2016) used a range of questions regarding personal victimisation experiences (*a victim of robbery in the past year, a victim of burglary in the past year, a victim of an assault since becoming an adult*), vicarious victimisation (*knowing a person who has been a victim of a serious crime in the past year*) and perceptions of future victimisation (*the perceived likelihood that one will be murdered in the next 12 months, the perceived likelihood that one will be robbed or mugged in the next 12 months, and the perceived likelihood that one will be burgled in the next 12 months*). Indeed being a victim of crime has been found to be negatively related to punitiveness when measuring burglary victimisation (Taylor et al., 1979). Jackson and Gray (2010) propose that victimisation experiences differ; thus, those who perceive a high likelihood of repeat victimisation that will result in high personal costs may express more concern about crime.

2.1.4. Belief Systems

Abstract Anxieties

There is a body of empirical research that supports relational theories of punitiveness driven by socio-emotional responses to factors external to real threats of crime (King and Maruna, 2009). When norms and values are thought to be eroding, public support for authority to reassert those norms and values increases (Gerber and Jackson, 2016). Harsher punishments of lawbreakers are expressed by those who desire social values to be reasserted (Tyler and Boeckmann, 1997). King and Maruna (2009) found that punitiveness is strongly related to generational anxiety ($\beta = .395, p < .001$) expressed through concerns about loss of discipline and respect amongst young people in society (*The behaviour of adolescents today is worse than it was in the past; Young people don’t seem to have any respect for anything anymore*), which may relate to conservatism. In California, Tyler and Boeckmann (1997)

found that key predictors of punitiveness towards offenders (support for 'Three Strikes and You're Out' initiatives) were concerns about the deterioration of social values (beta=.37, $p<.001$), measured by authoritarianism, dogmatism and liberalism, and family social bonds (beta=.19, $p<.01$). Unnever and Cullen (2010) found that those who believed society was in moral decline are significantly more likely to support a punitive approach to crime (beta=.89, $p<.01$) and the death penalty (beta=.102, $p<.001$), which again suggests that this may be related to conservatism. When the same online survey was conducted in Britain and Singapore (n=131), national identity (how British or Singaporean someone felt) was found to be a positive predictor for support for sentences without parole for repeat serious offenders (Palasinski and Shortland, 2017). Hough et al. (1988) proposed that punitive attitudes towards the punishment of offenders can be explained by broader attitudes linked to a disciplinarian outlook (support for more discipline in school, the workplace and the armed forces) (beta=.16, $p<.05$).

Conservative Beliefs

Ideology affects people's attitudes about offenders, beliefs about the causes of crime and appropriate institutional responses to rule-breaking (Carroll et al, 1987). Several studies have found those of a conservative political orientation endorse tougher sentences. King and Maruna (2009) found that when background factors were considered in isolation, conservative self-identification (beta=.336, $p<.001$) was found to be have the strongest effect on increased punitiveness. With the inclusion of relational factors in the model, the effect of conservative self-identification reduced but remained significant (beta=.237, $p<.001$) (King and Maruna, 2009). A conservative orientation was also found to be a significant predictor of increased punitiveness in Costelloe et al.'s (2009) study (beta=.091, $p<.01$). Hogan et al. (2005) found that conservative views (*amount of tax money spent on welfare/health care for the poor; efforts to help women/ minorities achieve equality with men/white populations; and, the number of immigrants coming into the country*) were more important at predicating punitiveness amongst minorities and females, but not white males. Unnever and Cullen (2010) also found that those who had a conservative political orientation were more likely to support a punitive approach to crime (beta=.124, $p<.001$) and the death penalty (beta=.072, $p<.01$). In Australia, Roberts and Indermaur (2007) found that a right-wing political orientation was associated with increased punitiveness (beta=.197, $p=.001$).

Right-Wing Authoritarianism

Right-wing authoritarianism (RWA) has been found to be a significant predictor for support for harsher punishments of offenders. RWA consists of a collection of beliefs about how people should behave and how institutions ought to respond to lawbreakers (Gerber and Jackson, 2016). Gerber and Jackson (2016) explored punitiveness by testing instrumental concerns, relational concerns, and ideological preferences drawing upon a sample of 20,480 Londoners from the Public Attitudes Survey sweeps 2007/8 and 2008/9. Punitiveness was measured by using the item '*People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences*'. Punitive sentiment was found to correlate positively with all instrumental, relational and authoritarian (*Schools should teach children to obey authority*; *Young people today don't have enough respect for traditional values*) variables with the strongest correlation between punitive sentiment and authoritarianism ($r=.59, p<.01$). Authoritarianism was positively correlated with a number of instrumental and relational concerns regarding increased fear of crime ($r=.22, p<.01$), perceptions of crime level ($r=.18, p<.01$), perceptions of anti-social behaviour ($r=.22, p<.01$) and perceptions of disorder ($r=.23, p<.01$), concerns about collective efficacy ($r=.09, p<.01$), and concerns about local change ($r=.14, p<.01$). Gerber and Jackson (2016) found that when authoritarianism ($\beta=.21, p<.01$) was entered into the model, the R-square value increased from .17 to .57. They propose that their findings support the idea that ideology has a stronger effect on punitive attitudes with instrumental and relational concerns playing a weaker role. Gerber and Jackson's (2016) findings support those of Tyler and Boeckmann (1997) and King and Maruna (2009) in that instrumental concerns about future harm are less relevant than relational concerns and social anxieties, which explain a greater amount of variance in punitive sentiment. They argue that punitive sentiment and instrumental and relational concerns are driven by 'authoritarian submission' and concerns about traditional moral values where punishment is endorsed due to a 'symbolic attempt to defend social order and moral cohesion' (Gerber and Jackson, 2016:130). RWA has also been found to be a predictor for support for harsher punishments for first time and repeat fraud, sexual and violent offenders regardless of socio-demographic factors (Palasinski and Shortland, 2017).

Economic Beliefs

A number of studies have linked economic factors to punitiveness. Kornhauser (2015:27) examined the relationship between *economic individualism*, that is 'a belief that individuals can and should be responsible for their own economic welfare', and punitive attitudes measured by support for stiffer sentences and the death penalty in the English-speaking western world (US, Canada, Australia, UK, New Zealand) by using existing survey data. The study assessed the relationship between punitiveness and two dimensions of economic individualism: descriptive and normative economic individualism. *Descriptive economic individualism* is a belief that economic well-being is directly related to effort and the personal attributes of individuals, whilst *normative economic individualism* indicates a preference for individual economic responsibility (Kornhauser, 2015). Kornhauser (2015) found that economic individualism is a relatively consistent predictor of punitiveness cross-nationally, with the exception of support for the death penalty in the UK. In the UK, descriptive economic individualism (beta=0.29, p<.05) and normative economic individualism (beta=.25, p<.05) are associated with greater support for stiffer sentences. However, in relation to support for the death penalty only normative economic individualism (beta=.39, p<.05) was statistically significant.

Hogan et al. (2005:392) explored how punishment and the economy may be linked at the individual level in Florida through a survey of 1,476 residents. They examined whether punitiveness towards offenders measured by items assessing level of support for a range of crime control policies is associated with a general resentment towards the '*undeserving poor*'. Findings indicate that individual willingness to blame welfare, affirmative action, and immigration for declining wages is the strongest predictor of punitiveness when other relevant factors are controlled (beta=.42, p<.001). Economic insecurity, the perception of being worse off next year compared to this year, was found to be statistically significant only for females and ethnic minorities. The effect of blame on punitiveness was stronger in white males than for any other group (beta=.46, p<.001). In contrast, Costelloe et al. (2009) found economic insecurity, the expectation that financial circumstances will worsen in the near future, to be significantly linked to punitive attitudes among white males (beta=.075, p<.05), particularly those who are less well educated (beta=.149, p<.01) and earn less income (beta=.126, p<.05).

King and Maruna (2009) found that wider economic anxieties, measured by *'I feel the economy in Britain is in serious trouble'* was positively related to punitiveness, but found that personal financial satisfaction was not significantly related to punitiveness. Hanslmaier and Baier (2016) measured punitiveness with four items (*for many offenders, stricter sentencing is the only way to stop them repeating offences; many offences should receive stricter sentences than has been the case to date; stricter sentences are necessary to prevent others from committing crime; prisons should treat prisoners more harshly*) by conducting a nationwide representative survey (n=3,073) in Germany. They found that the regional economic situation as a function of a higher unemployment rate ($\beta=.018$, $p<.01$) was related to increased punitiveness, whilst the individual situation (monthly household income and employment status) appeared not to be related to punitiveness. Additionally, Hanslmaier and Baier also found that relative deprivation (*Compared to how others in Germany live, how much do you think you personally get?; How much of what you want can you afford to buy?*) has a significant impact on punitiveness ($\beta=.148$, $p<.001$).

2.1.5. Summary

Punitiveness towards lawbreakers suggests that people desire harsher responses when people break the law. This chapter has presented the literature on punitive attitudes towards offenders using surveys and measures most relevant to this study. Firstly, the relevance of socio-demographic factors was presented, which suggests education and gender emerge as relevant predictors of punitive attitudes. However, socio-demographic factors alone appear to be weak predictors accounting for a relatively small percentage of variance in punitive attitudes. The effect of crime experiences on punitive attitudes were then considered. Fear of crime, fear of victimisation and perceptions about crime have been found to be relevant factors increasing punitiveness towards offenders, albeit with a small effect. Whereas victimisation has consistently been found not to be a relevant factor in punitiveness. This suggests that punitiveness towards lawbreakers is related to attitudes rather than experiences. Finally, the importance of belief systems was presented. Beliefs that there has been a loss of discipline and respect in society, loss of social cohesion and moral decline appear to be relevant factors in understanding punitive attitudes. Additionally, conservative beliefs, right-wing authoritarianism and economic beliefs emerge as more relevant factors in understanding punitive attitudes towards offenders than socio-demographic factors and

crime experiences. The next subchapter now turns the attention to rulebreaking welfare claimants.

Chapter 2.2. Literature Review: Public Attitudes Towards Welfare Claimants

2.2.1. Introduction

Public attitudes towards benefit recipients and poverty are increasingly punitive (McKay, 2014) with hostility towards the unemployed, less well-off and welfare claimants increasing in recent years (Deeming, 2015). The majority of studies to date do not specifically examine public attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants, but instead explore attitudes more generally. This literature has generally assessed attitudes towards welfare claimants in Britain through analyzing longitudinal data measured by responses to questions regarding the welfare system and individuals in receipt of welfare. This literature generally shows a trend in attitudes towards welfare recipients hardening over time. However, 'punitiveness' is not explicitly linked to academic research on welfare claimants. The literature search¹ indicates that there is no research connecting 'punitive attitudes' directly with welfare claimants who break the rules. However, a large body of research, with the most relevant outlined below, has found some socio-demographic factors, welfare beliefs and political beliefs relevant to the hardening of attitudes towards welfare claimants. This chapter begins with a review of the most relevant literature to this study by examining the relevance of socio-demographic factors to understanding attitudes towards welfare claimants. Beliefs systems and perceptions are then considered, which include conservative beliefs, attitudes towards tax avoidance versus benefit fraud, attitudes towards the use of sanctions, and undeservingness.

2.2.2. Socio-demographic factors

A very small field of empirical research has sought to explore the relationship between socio-demographic factors and public attitudes towards welfare and its claimants.

Age

Taylor-Gooby and Martin (2008) explored socio-demographic factors towards welfare spending using British Social Attitude Survey data (*The government should spend more on welfare for the poor*). Age was found to be a significant factor (beta=-.09, p<.01) with the

¹ Electronic searches on Web of Science and Google Scholar were made using the terms 'punitive attitudes to benefit recipients', 'punitive attitudes to benefits', 'punitive attitudes to benefit claimants', 'punitive attitudes to welfare', 'tough attitudes to welfare', 'tough attitudes to benefits', 'punishment attitudes to welfare', 'harsh attitudes to welfare', 'punishment of benefit recipients' and 'punishment attitudes to welfare claimants'.

youngest age bracket (18-34) being least supportive of increased spending for welfare, and the oldest age bracket (55+) being most supportive ($\beta=.08$, $p<.01$), although different types of benefits were not measured. Deeming (2015) analysed British Social Attitudes Survey data to assess attitudes to work and welfare (*Out-of-work benefits are too high and discourage people from finding work or too low and cause hardship; If benefits were not so generous, people would learn to stand on their own feet*). Additionally, Deeming (2015) analysed opinions of requirements for unemployed people to show they are looking for work to assess whether welfare conditionality, that is the receipt of benefits on condition of meeting certain responsibilities (DWP, 2010:24), is too weak or too tough. Young adults (aged 15-24) were found to be significantly more likely than older adults to believe that unemployment benefits are too high (odds ratio=3.24, $p<.05$) as well as significantly more likely to believe that work conditionality is weak in the British welfare system (odds ratio =3.56, $p<.001$) (Deeming, 2015). Baumberg Geiger (2017) sought to examine deservingness perceptions about benefit beliefs analysing questions fielded by the British Social Attitudes Survey (various years), the European Social Survey (2008), and TUC/YouGov (2012). Deservingness (*Many people who get social security don't really deserve any help'* (BSAS); *many people receive benefits/services to which they are not entitled* (ESS); *unemployed people are really trying to get a job* (ESS) or *could get one if they tried* (BSAS); *Britain's welfare system has created a culture of dependency*) versus claimants being '*victims of circumstances beyond their control*' (TUC/YouGov). Perceived benefit fraud used three measurements, which asked people their estimates on the proportion of false claims (for sickness/disability and unemployment separately) and fraudulent claims as a proportion of the welfare budget (TUC/YouGov). Fraud perceptions were found to be related to perceived undeservingness as people get older ($\beta=.04$, $p<.05$).

Schofield and Butterworth (2015) analysed Australian Survey of Social Attitudes data in 2009 ($n=3,241$) to measure attitudes towards both welfare recipients and the welfare system (*People who receive welfare benefits should be under more obligation to find work; Around here most unemployed people could find a job if they really wanted to; Welfare benefits make people lazy and dependent; Most people getting welfare are trying to get a job*). A range of socio-demographic factors were included in the analysis along with prior exposure to welfare measured by either the respondent or their partners receiving some form of government

benefit in the last five years. Using a canonical correlation approach, they found that the sample held much stronger negative attitudes towards welfare recipients than towards welfare itself. Older individuals were found to be more likely to hold stronger beliefs that it is *'too easy to qualify for welfare benefits'*, which was accompanied by undeservingness attitudes towards people in receipt of parenting payments.

Gender

Deeming (2015) is the only study to explore the relationship between gender and welfare attitudes and found that gender was a significant factor with males more likely to believe that benefits were too generous compared to women (odds ratio =.67, $p < .05$).

Social Status

Education (beta=.04, $p < .05$) was found to be a significant factor in relation to welfare with those with higher levels of education being more supportive of increased welfare spending (Taylor-Gooby and Martin, 2008). Deeming (2015) also found levels of educational attainment to be a relevant factor. Those with no qualifications (odds ratio =2.33, $p < .01$) and below degree level of educational attainment (odds ratio =1.88, $p < .01$) were significantly more likely to believe that benefits were too generous compared to those with a university degree. Additionally, no qualifications (odds ratio =4.08, $p < .001$) and below degree level education (odds ratio =2.33, $p < .001$) were related to the belief that the welfare system disincentivises the unemployed from working compared to holding a university degree. However, Deeming (2015) also found that education was not a significant factor related to the belief that the welfare system suffers from weak conditionality. Schofield and Butterworth (2015) found that negative attitudes towards the welfare system and welfare recipients was linked to lower levels of education. Additionally, Schofield and Butterworth (2015) also found that those with lower levels of education were more likely to hold that the attitude that *'welfare is important but the people on it are lazy and dependent'*.

Deeming (2015) found that attitudes towards welfare benefits for poor families were found to be fairly consistent across the classes. In 1987, 61% of working-class (skilled, low-skilled and unskilled workers) respondents thought that the government should spend more on welfare benefits for poor families, in comparison to approximately half of middle-class

(professionals and routine non-manual workers) respondents. In 2011, the proportion of working-class respondents had decreased to 33% in agreement with increased spending in comparison to 25% of middle-class respondents (Deeming, 2015). Deeming (2015) found class (measured by occupation) to be a relevant factor in beliefs about the benefit system. Professionals (odds ratio =2.84, $p<.05$), managerial (odds ratio =2.40, $p<.05$) and skilled manual workers (odds ratio =3.05, $p<.05$) were more likely to believe that welfare benefits are too generous than unskilled workers. Professionals were also more likely to believe that the welfare system has weak conditionality (odds ratio =2.56, $p=.01$) than unskilled workers. Deeming (2015) also found labour force status to be a relevant factor with the employed (odds ratio =4.96, $p=.001$) and the economically inactive (odds ratio =3.00, $p=.01$), those who are retired, students, unpaid family workers and individuals engaged in home duties and child care, more likely to believe that benefits are too generous compared to the unemployed (Deeming, 2015). These differences were also evident regarding conditionality, with both the employed (odds ratio =3.52, $p<.001$) and economically inactive (odds ratio =2.73, $p<.01$) believing that the welfare system has weak conditionality compared to the unemployed (Deeming, 2015).

Additionally, Deeming (2015) found strong interaction effects between occupational class and level of education and between partisanship and occupational class. Skilled manual workers with qualifications (with a degree: odds ratio =2.09, $p<.05$, with below degree level qualifications: odds ratio =3.57, $p<.01$) were significantly more likely to believe that welfare benefits are too generous compared to unskilled workers with no formal qualifications. The managerial class with a degree (odds ratio =1.98, $p<.01$) were also more likely to believe that benefits are too generous compared to unskilled manual workers with no qualifications. Those believing that welfare disincentivises claimants from getting a job also increases when the interactions of class and education are combined. The strongest effects were being skilled manual workers with qualifications (degree: odds ratio =4.77, $p<.001$; below degree: odds ratio =4.64, $p<.001$), skilled non-manual workers with qualifications (degree: odds ratio =1.83, $p<.05$; below degree: odds ratio =6.55, $p<.01$) and managerial with a degree (odds ratio =1.87, $p<.01$) being significantly more likely to hold this belief compared to unskilled workers without qualifications. There were also significant interaction effects between class and education in regard to the belief that the welfare system has weak conditionality, albeit

with weaker effects. Managerial workers with below degree level education (odds ratio =2.11, $p<.05$) and skilled manual workers with a degree (odds ratio =1.55, $p<.05$) more likely to support this belief than unskilled workers without qualifications (Deeming, 2015).

Income was found to be a significant factor with those in the lowest quintile ($\beta=.04$, $p<.01$) and the second lowest quintile ($\beta=.06$, $p<.01$) showing most support for increased government spending on welfare for the poor (Taylor-Gooby and Martin, 2008). Deeming (2015) found that as household income increases, so does the belief that welfare benefits are too generous (£1201–£2200: odds ratio=1.80, $p<.05$; £2201–£3700: odds ratio =1.83, $p<.05$; >£3701: odds ratio=2.44, $p<.001$). However, income did not appear to be related to beliefs about welfare conditionality (Deeming, 2015).

Religion

Deeming (2015) found that those with religious views were more likely to believe that welfare conditionality was too harsh (odds ratio =.70, $p<.01$). No other relevant studies have sought to explore the relationship between religion and welfare attitudes.

Ethnicity

The only study to explore ethnicity and welfare attitudes found that belonging to a BME group increased the likelihood of believing that unemployment benefits are too generous (odds ratio=2.00, $p<.05$) and deters claimants from finding work (odds ratio=2.76, $p<.01$) (Deeming, 2015).

Geography/social patterns

People living in central London were significantly more likely than people living in Outer London to believe that benefits are inadequate (odds ratio=.24, $p<.001$) and deter people from finding work (odds ratio=.31, $p<.05$) (Deeming, 2015). People living in Yorkshire and Humberside were also significantly more likely to believe that benefits are inadequate (odds ratio=.38, $p<.05$) compared to the Outer London group (Deeming, 2015).

Relationship Status

Schofield and Butterworth (2015) found that those with no dependent children and those who had more stable housing were more likely to hold stronger attitudes towards welfare. Those with children were more likely to be positive about benefits for families, and those with life stability were less likely to be favourable towards welfare, thus suggesting welfare attitudes can be seen as self-serving (Schofield and Butterworth, 2015).

Summary

Few empirical studies have explored socio-demographic factors to understand attitudes towards welfare claimants. The few studies that have, have used a range of different measures to explore attitudes towards the welfare system and/or its claimants. Despite this limitation, age, education and occupational class appear to emerge as relevant factors in explaining punitive attitudes towards welfare and welfare claimants, albeit explaining a small amount of variance in attitudes. Taylor-Gooby and Martin (2008) found that socio-demographic factors explained 12% of the variance in attitudes in their model.

2.2.3. Beliefs and Perceptions

Conservative Beliefs

Studies have found that those of a conservative political orientation are less likely to be supportive of social welfare spending (Taylor-Gooby and Martin, 2008; Deeming, 2015). Taylor-Gooby and Martin (2008) found that those who identify with the Conservative Party showed less support for increased government spending on welfare for the poor ($\beta = -.16$, $p < .01$), whilst those identifying with the Labour Party showed more support ($\beta = .10$, $p < .01$). Deeming (2015) found that supporters of the Conservative Party were least likely to be supportive of better welfare benefits to help poor families. Whilst Labour Party supporters have traditionally been the most likely to be supportive of welfare, Deeming (2015) found that their support has been in steep decline in recent decades. In 1987, 73% of Labour Party supporters agreed that the government should spend more on welfare benefits for poor families compared to 36% in 2011. People who voted for the Conservative Party were significantly more likely to believe that unemployment benefits were too generous (odds ratio=4.75, $p = .001$), benefits disincentivise claimants (odds ratio=4.30, $p < .001$), and the welfare system has weak conditionality (odds ratio=1.82, $p < .001$) when compared to the

Liberal Democrats. When measuring the interactional effects of political party and class, comparing Conservative and Labour voters with Liberal Democrat voters, strong interactional effects were observed. Those voting conservative and belonging to the professional class were significantly more likely to believe that benefits are too generous (odds ratio=60.58, $p=.01$), welfare disincentivises claimants (odds ratio=5.02, $p=.001$), and the welfare system has weak conditionality (odds ratio=2.91, $p<.001$) compared to unskilled voting Liberal Democrats. This strong interaction effect between Conservative Party supporters and occupational class is also observed across all welfare attitudes examined, with Conservative Party voters in the managerial class (*generous benefits*: odds ratio=7.61, $p<.001$; *work disincentives*: odds ratio=3.66, $p<.001$; *weak conditionality*: odds ratio=1.93, $p<.001$), the skilled non-manual class (*generous benefits*: odds ratio=2.58, $p<.01$; *work disincentives*: odds ratio=5.17, $p<.001$; *weak conditionality*: odds ratio=1.65, $p<.05$), the skilled manual class (*generous benefits*: odds ratio=4.00, $p<.01$; *work disincentives*: odds ratio=6.52, $p<.001$; *weak conditionality*: odds ratio=2.23, $p=.01$), and the semi-skilled manual class (*generous benefits*: odds ratio=3.86, $p<.05$; *work disincentives*: odds ratio=6.97, $p<.01$) consistently less supportive of social welfare. The single significant interaction effect with people who vote for the Labour Party was with the skilled manual workers believing that welfare benefits were too generous (odds ratio=2.40, $p<.05$) when compared to the unskilled Liberal Democrat voters (Deeming, 2015).

When analysing responses to ‘*The government should spend more on welfare for the poor*’ and perceptions (*higher levels of poverty in Britain today*), social values (*agree the government should redistribute income*), and beliefs (*agree that many people claim falsely*), Deeming (2015) found that all subjective measures were found to be significant ($p<.01$) with social values having the strongest effect ($\beta=.26$). Social values, perceptions and beliefs accounted for 14% of variance in the model. Deeming (2015) found that people’s perceptions and values are clearly related to their policy preferences; those who think there is a high level of poverty were more likely to support government spending on the poor and to support income redistribution from the well off to the less well off.

Sefton (2005) analysed British Social Attitude Survey data using non-hierarchical cluster analysis to explore public attitudes to the welfare state (*It’s only right that taxes paid by the*

majority help support those in need; If we want to live in a healthy, well-educated society we have to be willing to pay the taxes to fund it; The best reason for paying taxes now is that you never know when you might need benefits and services yourself; It's not fair that some pay a lot of money in tax and hardly use the services their taxes pay for; It's not right that people benefit from services that they haven't paid for) and it's beneficiaries (If welfare benefits weren't so generous, people would learn to stand on their own two feet; Many people who get social security don't really deserve any help; Most people on the dole are fiddling in one way or another). Three key groups were identified: 'The Samaritans', comprising of about 30% of the population (50% graduates, 45% in receipt of means-tested benefits, 39% Labour Party supporters, 38% on high incomes, 37% professional and managerial, 33% middle-aged and 19% with no educational qualifications), were supportive of the principles of the welfare state and that those in need should be entitled to support from those who were more able. 'Club Members', comprised of around 45% of the population, were also supportive of the principles of the welfare, however, less so than the Samaritans and were more likely to support welfare benefits when those in receipt had met certain conditions. Lastly, 'Robinson Crusoes' (34% without educational qualifications, 11% with a degree qualification, and 33% Conservative Party supporters) were less supportive of the principles of the welfare state. Sefton (2005) suggests that lack of education may be a barrier to understanding how the welfare state operates and to the appreciation of the wider societal arguments for its benefits.

Sefton (2005) identified that the 'Samaritans' believed that claimants were entitled as they were in need (94% in agreement), others have a responsibility to help those in need irrespective of whether they have previously contributed or not, have few concerns about claimants abusing the system (4% in agreement of *fiddling the system*), and were less likely to believe that claimants were undeserving or not in need. 'Club Members' generally showed a commitment to a system of social insurance through paying taxes (70% in agreement). This group mostly believed in redistribution from those who are able, to those in need on the condition that those in need have contributed what they can and only receive what they reasonably need. 'Club Members' were more likely to distinguish between the 'deserving' and the 'undeserving' poor. Concerns about fraud and claimants taking advantage were much more likely to be prevalent in this group (42% agree with *most fiddling the system*)

along with the idea that should claimants fail to adhere to the rules then benefits should not necessarily be distributed. Finally, the 'Robinson Crusoes' were less in favour of the welfare state and thought it is unfair that someone who pays more in taxes hardly uses the system they have contributed towards (75% in agreement). They were also more likely to believe that welfare benefits were too generous with 93% in agreement that '*if welfare benefits weren't so generous, people would learn to pay their own way*'. The 'Robinson Crusoes' were more likely to believe that self-reliance is a key attribute where people should be more independent rather than depending on others. Those claiming unemployment benefits were generally thought to be fiddling the system by this group (86% in agreement).

Tax avoidance versus benefit fraud

Bamfield and Horton (2009) conducted a mixed methods study comprising of discussion groups (n=112) and a large-scale survey (n=3,316) to explore underlying drivers of attitudes to economic inequality and welfare. Through qualitative analysis they found that attitudes were harsher towards benefit fraud than tax avoidance due to the view that those avoiding tax were at least contributing in some way, whilst those committing benefit fraud were seen to be avoiding making any contribution at all. Individual responsibility and blame were more likely to be ascribed to benefit fraudsters than towards tax avoiders. Whilst the government was primarily blamed for not closing the loopholes to stop tax avoidance, rather than blame being attributed to the individuals concerned.

Marriott (2017) also explored public attitudes (n=1,500) towards tax evasion and welfare fraud in New Zealand using social dominance orientation (SDO) and right-wing authoritarianism (RWA) for analysis. SDO relates to people supporting policies that enable dominance over groups, such as the criminal justice system sentencing subordinate social groups more harshly (Marriott, 2017). RWA refers to attitudes that express authoritarian submission, authoritarian aggression, and conventionalism (Marriott, 2017). Welfare attitudes were explored using eight statements including *People who commit welfare fraud deserve to be punished*. New Zealanders were found to have differing attitudes towards welfare fraud and tax evasion with harsher attitudes being apparent towards tax evasion. Education and income were the most relevant factors related to attitudes towards welfare fraud ($p < .05$). As education level and income increased tolerance of welfare fraud

decreased. Both SDO and RWA significantly predict attitudes to welfare fraud and tax evasion ($p < .05$), accounting for 9.7% of the variability of attitudes to welfare fraud but only 2.1% of the variability for tax evasion. When demographic variables were added to the model as well as SDO and RWA the variance increased to 18.2% for welfare attitudes. Those who were self-employed were found to tolerate welfare fraud the least but were the most tolerant of tax evasion. No significant differences were found when considering occupation and benefit receipt.

Contributing to society

Bamfield and Horton (2009) also found that increased support for government welfare spending was related to subjective beliefs. The belief that *'Most people who receive benefits now will make a contribution back to society in the future, through activities like employment or caring for others'* had the strongest effect ($\beta = .268$, $p < .001$) with those more likely to agree with this statement being supportive of increasing welfare spending. Baumberg et al. (2012) also found that beliefs about whether or not benefit recipients will make a reciprocal contribution in the future has the strongest effect on support for welfare policy. Additionally, Bamfield and Horton (2009) found that those who agreed that people are *'disadvantaged because of their background, and find it impossible, however hard they work, to overcome the obstacles they face'* ($\beta = .154$, $p < .001$) were also more likely to support increased welfare spending. Those most likely to agree that people could *'manage perfectly well on low income if they budgeted sensibly'* ($\beta = -.164$, $p < .001$) and that people *'described as poor in Britain today have only themselves to blame for not having a higher income'* ($\beta = -.129$, $p < .001$) were more likely to be less supportive of increased welfare spending.

Sanctions

From April 2001 it became compulsory for lone parents in receipt of benefits with children aged over five years old to attend interviews at the Job Centre with no compulsion to take a job, but penalties of approximately £10 per week if they failed to attend (Hills, 2001). Analysing British Social Attitudes survey data, Hills (2001) found that there was support for cuts in benefits should lone parents fail to attend such an interview 'when asked'. Forty-five percent thought that benefits in this instance should be cut 'a little', 12% 'a lot', and almost a

fifth (18%) thought they should be stopped altogether, whilst 22% thought that benefits should not be affected.

Undeservingness

Baumberg et al. (2012) explored the 'stigma' of claiming benefits, that is the extent to which being a recipient of welfare benefits is viewed as embarrassing or shameful and results in a lower social status. In doing so, they explored the hardening of attitudes towards those in receipt of a range of benefits through combining deliberative focus groups and large-scale opinion surveys between 2008 and 2009. They found that benefit stigma in Britain was mainly driven by the view that claimants are 'undeserving', those who lack criteria such as need, and the level to which claimants were viewed to be accountable for their own situation. Baumberg et al. (2012) examined respondents' estimates of 'claiming falsely' and 'committing fraud' to determine the extent to which claimants were seen as undeserving or deserving and found that the public vastly overestimate these numbers. People living in neighbourhoods with more benefit claimants had a greater perception of fraud and reported more self-stigma, but only when they were inclined to view benefit claimants negatively.

Baumberg Geiger (2017) analysed data from the British Social Attitudes Survey, the European Social Survey and a TUC/YouGov 2012 online survey with a combined sample of 47,421 respondents. The intention of the study was to assess 'deservingness' using 18 belief measures across seven survey waves using measures to assess the extent of benefits fraud (two questions asking about 'false claims' and one asking about 'fraudulent' claims as a proportion of the welfare budget). Deservingness was measured through analyzing '*Many people who get social security don't really deserve any help*' from BSAS and questions relating to '*people manage to get benefits/services to which they are not entitled*', '*unemployed people are really trying to get a job*', and '*Britain's welfare system has created a culture of dependency*'. Baumberg Geiger found that there was a strong bivariate association between fraud knowledge and various deservingness perceptions. A one percentage point increase in the belief that disability claimants are 'false' is associated with 0.60 per cent increase in agreement with '*many claimants don't deserve any help*' ($p < .05$). A one percentage point increase in the belief that unemployment claims are 'false' is associated with a 0.58 percent increase '*many claimants don't deserve any help*' ($p < .05$).

2.2.4. Summary

Whilst the literature regarding public attitudes towards the welfare system and welfare claimants is relatively expansive, this chapter has aimed to present empirical findings most pertinent to this project. Firstly, very few studies have sought to explore the relevance of socio-demographic factors to public attitudes towards welfare benefits. Age, education and occupational class emerge as relevant factors in explaining punitive attitudes towards welfare and welfare claimants, albeit explaining a small amount of variance in attitudes. Belief systems and perceptions were then reviewed. Those holding conservative beliefs have been found to be less supportive of increased spending on the welfare system and welfare benefits. Interactional effects between political party support and class have also been found to be relevant in explaining attitudes towards welfare, with conservative supporters and those belonging to the professional class being less supportive of welfare. Beliefs about the value of the welfare state and welfare claimants were also found to be relevant in explaining attitudes; those who hold negative beliefs were less supportive of welfare. Subjective beliefs about the reciprocal contribution of welfare claimants has also been found to be related to welfare attitudes. Finally, deservingness perceptions have been found to influence support for social welfare with those who perceive claimants as undeserving holding less supportive views. Harsher attitudes towards welfare claimants appears to be related to deservingness, fairness and stigmatising attitudes. The next subchapter will explore the literature towards the final group of rulebreakers, namely, school pupils.

Chapter 2.3. Literature Review: Public Attitudes Towards Rulebreaking School Pupils

2.3.1. Introduction

The examination of public attitudes towards school pupils has received little attention compared to lawbreakers and welfare claimants. The literature search² indicates that there is no research linking ‘punitive attitudes’ directly with rulebreaking school pupils. Indeed, there is very little empirical research exploring public attitudes towards school pupils at all. Much of the research to date has explored teachers, parents and/or children’s attitudes to school behaviour and discipline, rather than members of the public. The most relevant literature to this study is recent research in America, which has explored public attitudes towards the use of corporal punishment due to its continued use in some US states. However, much of this research focuses on state-level data and factors rather than individual attitudes to its usage. This chapter aims to review the most relevant surveys conducted to explore attitudes towards the disciplining of school children. Firstly, this takes the form presenting surveys conducted in Britain to explore attitudes towards indiscipline, which has primarily been conducted with parents, teachers and children. Secondly, the literature relating to attitudes towards punishments will be reviewed, which has also involved surveying teachers, parents and children. The chapter will then move onto review surveys conducted to explore attitudes towards school exclusions. Finally, research relating to attitudes towards the use of corporal punishment will conclude the chapter.

2.3.2. Attitudes Towards Indiscipline

Teachers’ attitudes towards behaviour

The Elton Report (1989) commissioned by the Committee of Enquiry into Discipline in Schools was the first major report, and remains the most comprehensive work, examining teachers’ perceptions and concerns about indiscipline. The report presents the findings from *The National Survey of Teachers in England and Wales* of primary and secondary school teachers.

² Electronic searches on Web of Science and Google Scholar were made using the terms ‘punitive attitudes to school pupils’, ‘punitive attitudes to school punishments’, ‘tough attitudes to school pupils’, ‘punishment of school pupils’, ‘attitudes to school exclusion’, ‘public attitudes to truancy (discipline; poor behaviour; suspension)’; teachers attitudes to school exclusion’ ‘teachers attitudes to school discipline’.

Additionally, one hundred teachers from ten inner-city comprehensive schools were interviewed. The Elton Report was initiated by the Professional Association of Teachers (PAT) due to growing concern regarding poor behaviour in schools. A survey of PAT members' views and experiences of discipline in schools, carried out by the PAT and the Daily Express newspaper, found that respondents believed indiscipline was on the increase (Elton, 1989). Just over six hundred written submissions were received from Local Education Authorities (LEAs), teacher training institutions and teachers. Evidence was also collected from school observations (both in the UK and overseas) and meetings with professionals. The report highlights the following from submitted evidence:

- The 1985 National Association of Schoolmasters/Union of Women Teachers survey noted that 80% respondents thought that violence and disruption had become more frequent in the last 10 years (less than 4% response rate).
- The 1987 PAT survey noted that 94% of teachers thought that indiscipline was on the increase (less than 4% response rate).
- The 1988 National Union of Teachers survey found that 91% of respondents thought indiscipline was worse than 10 years ago (8% response rate).
- The National Opinion Poll, which sampled just under 500 teachers, found that 36% of teachers thought that indiscipline had increased in their schools in comparison to five years earlier, whilst 33% viewed the same amount of indiscipline or less.
- The National Association of Headteachers survey carried out in 15 LEAs (with a 45% response rate) found that a quarter of headteachers thought that there had been a significant increase in disruptive behaviour since 1985.

The National Survey of Teachers in England and Wales consisted of 3,608 teachers and found that the majority of teachers (82% secondary and 81% primary) thought that tougher sanctions for certain types of indiscipline were needed and should be a priority (Elton, 1989). Teachers proposed a wide variety of views regarding the causes of poor behaviour, with parents, the government, teachers, heads, LEAs and broadcasters blamed for exacerbating indiscipline. Fundamental beliefs tended to influence views on the use of punishment in schools, such as punishment being a form of moral retribution or the importance of

children's rights, rather than evidence about what works in schools. Teachers who believed in tough discipline also tended to believe that parents' attitudes were hostile to school values. In contrast, those teachers who did not believe in tough punishments tended to acknowledge the difficult circumstances experienced by parents, such as, marital breakdown and poverty, which may impact on their parenting capacity.

The National Survey of Teachers in England and Wales also found that when questioned about the use of punishment strategies for managing difficult pupils or classes teachers answered as follows:

- Keeping a pupil in detention: 67% used it at least once, 17% said they used it often or quite often, and 15% said it was the most effective strategy they used.
- Removing the pupil temporarily out of the classroom: 61% have used it at least once, 11% used it often or quite often, 13% thought this was the most effective strategy.
- Suspension: 9% of teachers reported this as the most effective strategy they had used, whilst 5% reported it was the 'most ineffective'.

In contrast, non-exclusionary strategies seemed to be more frequently used and were seen as more effective than punishment strategies. Fifty five percent of teachers said they tried to reason with a pupil in the classroom setting on a regular basis, with 21% believing this was the most effective strategy they used. Whilst 46% reasoned with pupils outside the classroom setting on a regular basis, with 32% finding this strategy most effective.

School Pupils' Views on Punishments

Caffyn (1989) and Merrett and Tang (1994) explored school pupils views to school punishments. Caffyn (1989) found that secondary school children felt parental involvement was important in terms of improving behaviour rather than the more traditional forms of punishment. The study surveyed 510 pupils and asked them which two punishments, from a range of options, were likely to encourage them to behave better. Parents being asked to come into school scored the highest (74%), followed by 67% answering being placed on report, and 66% saying a negative letter home. Merrett and Tang (1994) surveyed approximately 1,800 primary school children between ages 8 and 11 exploring their views on

praise, rewards, punishment and reprimands. A letter home and/or being sent to the head teacher was viewed as the most effective punishment to improve behaviour. Neither of these studies explored the use of exclusions as a means of punishment.

Following the initial studies conducted by Elton (1989), Caffyn (1989) and Merrett and Tang (1994), there was no research explicitly exploring attitudes towards indiscipline and punishments until 2012. The National Foundation for Educational Research's (NFER) (2012) survey explored primary and secondary teachers' perceptions of poor behaviour and found that the majority (76%) of teachers felt behaviour was good or very good with a minority (6%) feeling behaviour was poor or very poor. The classroom behaviour management strategies most often used were praising good behaviour (97% primary / 84% secondary), using a robust sanctions system (91% primary / 77% secondary), and using a reward system (91% primary / 72% secondary).

In 2013, The Teacher Voice Omnibus Survey explored teachers' attitudes towards pupil behaviour and found that the majority (77%) of all teachers said that the standard of behaviour was 'good' or 'very good' (85% primary, 68% secondary), with 6% feeling behaviour was poor or very poor (5% primary, 9% secondary) (Weaving et al., 2013). Only 5% of all teachers thought they have insufficient powers to manage pupil behaviour. In terms of removing pupils from the classroom, 46% primary and 12% secondary teachers said that they would use physical means to remove a disruptive pupil from the classroom. Eighty one percent primary and 61% secondary teachers viewed the most common factor in poor behaviour to be a lack of parental support or poor parenting skills. A parental lack of respect for authority and teachers was the second most frequently selected factor (25% primary/18% secondary). Similar trends were found in subsequent Teacher Voice Surveys between 2014 and 2016 in relation to teachers' perceptions of standards of behaviour (Bennett, 2017).

2.3.3. Attitudes Towards School Exclusions

In 1974, the Gallup Poll explored public attitudes towards pupils who fail to comply with school rules by asking, 'What should be done with a high school student who refuses to obey his teachers?' The sample consisted of approximately 2,000 adults (18+) and 250 high school pupils across numerous American states (Gallup, 1974). They found that the more punitive

attitudes were those of parents of school children and high school pupils themselves rather than people who have no children in school. Slightly more than half (57%) of the parents of school children suggested a type of punishment such as expelling the pupil. A similar percentage (59%) opted for a type of rehabilitation such as a change of teacher and/or courses.

In Scotland, Adams (2005) found school exclusions received a high level of support from teachers, with 70% of those surveyed viewing it as positive or very positive in relation to pupil behaviour and learning. Munn and Lloyd (2005) interviewed 66 young people in Scotland and found that many of them felt that they had been unfairly treated by being excluded from school, and that there was a lack of consistency from teachers. Pupils did however tend to accept responsibility for those actions resulting in their exclusion. Sometimes, the young people felt that schools were unreasonable regarding pupil expectations and refused to assume automatic authority of the teacher, which had the potential to lead to aggressive behaviour. Many of the young people described experiencing difficult home circumstances, which resulted in poor emotional management at school. Most of the children valued schooling and were aware of the negative short and long term social and employment repercussions of exclusion.

A YouGov survey in 2011 for the Times Educational Supplement found that support for fixed term and permanent exclusions remained high (Thompson, 2011). When asked whether they thought that *expelling/suspending children was an appropriate form of discipline by teachers*, 84% of parents and 62% of secondary school children were in agreement, whilst 12% of parents and 23% of children were in disagreement. The NFER (2012) Teacher Voice Omnibus Survey of 1,609 teachers found that 90% of primary and 96% of secondary school teachers considered it reasonable for a school to formally exclude pupils for a fixed term for reasons of poor behaviour. This figure decreased to 65% primary and 87% secondary school teachers when considering it reasonable to formally exclude pupils permanently for reasons of poor behaviour. The survey also explored teachers' attitudes to why certain groups of pupils (boys, those receiving free school meals, pupils with Special Educational Needs (SEN), and those from certain ethnic groups) are disproportionately more likely to be excluded from school. The results generally show that the teachers believe some groups of pupils are

disproportionally excluded due to social circumstances and parental attitudes. However, a smaller number of teachers believed other issues were reasons for exclusions, such as, the nature of the curriculum, poverty, financial issues, lack of confidence, and schools failing to be responsive to learners (Smith et al., 2012).

In 2012, the Office for the Children's Commissioner commissioned the NFER to conduct research into inequalities in education and illegal exclusions through focus groups with teachers and group interviews with non-teaching professionals working with schools and/or young people and their families (White et al., 2013). Reasons suggested for school exclusions were persistent disruptive behaviour, bad language, physical assault on pupils or staff, use of or possession of a weapon, drug-related incidents, racist incidents, gang-related incidents, and arson. Teachers also noted that systemic reasons for exclusions were also apparent, such as lack of training and time, lack of support from other services, few role models for some groups, failure to investigate causes of poor behaviour, rigid procedures and systems, and perceptions that some pupils would be more appropriately supported elsewhere. Teachers were found to be both positive and negative about school exclusions (White et al., 2013). Some described relief and viewed exclusion as a positive outcome for both the pupil and the school, whilst some felt guilt, failure and concern for the pupil on reintegrating back into school (White et al., 2013). In some cases, teachers desired stricter and more extensive exclusion policies for the most challenging pupils (White et al., 2013). White et al. (2013) found that following ineffective outcomes of alternative interventions, teachers generally felt that the use of exclusions were justified to protect both teaching and learning but were unlikely to benefit the excluded child or improve their behaviour. The general consensus was that if a permanent exclusion was needed, then it was 'probably too late for that pupil' and tended to be the catalyst for multi-agency input to meet the child's needs (White et al., 2013:4).

2.3.4. The Corporal Punishment of School Children

Grasmick et al. (1992) explored support for corporal punishment in schools through the Oklahoma City Survey in 1989 (n=330 face-to-face interviews of adults). Participants were asked their level of support for corporal punishment use *'if the child talked back to other children; used obscene language; deliberately inflicted injury on another child; skipped school*

without good reason; and, stole something from school or another child'. Fundamentalist Protestants (beta=.134, $p<.05$), being male (beta=.279, $p<.001$) and being older (beta=.217, $p<.001$) were found to be more supportive of corporal punishment, whilst higher educational attainment (beta=-.188, $p<.001$) was found to be related to less support of corporal punishment.

In 2011, YouGov conducted a survey for the Times Educational Supplement consisting of 2,014 parents with children and 530 school children (YouGov, 2011). The survey found that 91% parents and 62% children were in agreement that *Teachers should be allowed to be tougher when it comes to discipline*, with 6% parents and 24% children in disagreement. Forty-nine percent parents and 19% children agreed that *Corporal punishments, such as the cane or slipper, should be reintroduced for very bad behaviour*, whilst 45% parents and 71% children disagreed. Finally, 40% teachers and 14% children were in agreement that *smacking or caning children is an acceptable form of discipline by teachers*, with 53% parents and 77% children in disagreement.

School corporal punishment continues to be legally permitted in nineteen states in the USA (Font and Gershoff, 2017). Using state-level data, Owen and Wagner (2006) found that Evangelical Protestants were associated with the increased use of school corporal punishment (Owen and Wagner, 2006). Whilst a state-wide study of Kentucky counties found no association between religious affiliation and the prevalence or use of corporal punishment (McClure and May, 2008). More recently, Font and Gershoff (2017:410) used multi-level modeling to explore the factors relevant to 'paddling, spanking, or other forms of physical punishment imposed on a student' using data from the U.S. Department of Education Civil Rights Data Collection from the school year 2011-2012. Southern culture and rural states were found to be associated with higher odds of corporal punishment use with a one-point increase in the percent of Southern-born predicting a 3.7 percent increase in the odds of corporal punishment use, and the odds of use in rural counties twice that of metro counties. Religious and political affiliation were also found to be predictive of corporal punishment use with Evangelical Protestants (1-point increase associated with 1.3% increase in odds of corporal punishment use) and Republican voters (1-point increase in voters predicted 5.4% odds of corporal punishment use) increasing the odds of corporal punishment use.

Socio-economic variables were found to increase the odds of the use of corporal punishment with a \$1000 increase in median income predicting a 4.5% decrease in the odds of corporal punishment use and a 1-point increase in percent college-educated predicting a 10.5% decrease in odds.

Corporal punishment in schools was legislated against in the UK in 1986 (see Education Act, 1986) (Gould, 2007) with the use of corporal punishment in state schools becoming illegal in 1987 (Institute of Education, 1989). However, the physical punishment of children by parents continues to be debated in the UK (Brooks, 2017). In October 2019, Scotland became the first country in the UK to make it a criminal offence for parents to smack their children, through the implementation of the Children (Equal Protection from Assault) (Scotland) Bill 2019, abolishing the defence of reasonable chastisement (2019 asp 16). This abolition received strong support from Members of Scottish Parliament with 84 voting in favour and 29 voting against (Brooks, 2019). This move by Scottish Parliament was closely followed by the Welsh Government who approved a move to also ban smacking children in January 2020, which is expected to come into force in 2022 (Morris, 2020). Prior to this decision, a Welsh Government report found that 81% of parents (n=269) of children aged six or under disagreed that *'it is sometimes necessary to smack a naughty child'* increasing from 71% in 2015 (Welsh Government, 2019). When asked whether there should be a complete ban on smacking, 48% of parents agreed whilst 39% disagreed (Welsh Government, 2019).

Parents in England and Northern Ireland continue to be allowed to physically punish or discipline their children as long as it is considered 'reasonable punishment' (Hamzelou, 2017). In 2007, a survey of 1,822 parents conducted by Ipsos MORI on behalf of the Department for Children, Schools and Families found that parental attitudes have changed over time with parents less likely to use smacking than previously, and younger parents more likely to have negative views towards smacking than older parents (Ipsos MORI, 2007). Over half (57%) of parents say they had smacked their child at some point and 52% thought that it was sometimes necessary to smack a 'naughty' child. The majority of parents (59%) agreed that the law should allow them to smack their children, in contrast to 33% disagreeing with this statement (Ipsos MORI, 2007). YouGov (2017) surveyed just over 4,000 UK adults in July 2017

and found that 59% of UK adults thought that smacking should not be banned, 22% thought it should be banned, and 19% did not know (YouGov, 2017).

2.3.5. Summary

The majority of studies to date have explored teachers, parents and pupils' attitudes to various types of school punishment, physical punishments and school exclusions. There is little literature exploring public attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils and the severity of school punishments as proposed by this project. What the literature to date shows is that teachers, parents or the general public, generally support the use of stricter punishments for indiscipline. This is more apparent in South American states where religion, southern culture, rural states, political affiliation and higher income were found to be predictive of corporal punishment use, whilst higher education was found to be related to lower support. The use of physical punishments to discipline children continues to be debated in Britain. Scotland and Wales have banned smacking, whilst England continues to allow its usage. Whilst the majority of parents and children disagreed with corporal punishment use in schools, both groups were in agreement that teachers should be allowed to be tougher towards school indiscipline. Support for the use of school exclusions remains high across all groups surveyed, although questions did not differentiate between temporary and permanent exclusions. Harsher attitudes towards school pupils suggests that people desire tougher discipline measures when children break the rules.

Chapter 2 commenced by reviewing the literature on punitive attitudes towards offenders most relevant to this project. Belief systems appear to be more relevant to understanding punitive attitudes towards offenders than socio-demographic factors and crime related factors. Beliefs that there has been a loss of discipline and respect in society, loss of social cohesion, moral decline, conservative beliefs, right-wing authoritarianism and economic beliefs emerge as relevant factors in understanding punitive attitudes towards offenders. Punitiveness towards lawbreakers suggests that people desire harsher responses to criminal rulebreaking. Chapter 2 then reviewed the literature on public attitudes towards welfare claimants. Whilst there is no literature exploring 'punitiveness' towards welfare claimants as proposed by this project, there is a body of empirical research which has sought to explore attitudes towards welfare and its claimants more generally. Conservative beliefs, beliefs

about welfare claimants and the value of welfare, and deservingness appear to be important factors in understanding attitudes towards welfare claimants. Harsher attitudes towards welfare claimants appears to be related to deservingness, fairness and stigmatising attitudes. Chapter 2 concluded by reviewing the literature most relevant to public attitudes towards school pupils. This group of rulebreakers has received the least amount of attention in empirical research in comparison to lawbreakers and welfare claimants. What the available literature does show is that people generally support the use of stricter punishments for indiscipline. However, this does not appear to extend to the use of physical punishments in Britain. Support for the use of exclusions appears high, but studies did not differentiate between temporary and permanent exclusions. Harsher attitudes towards school pupils suggests that people support tougher discipline measures for school indiscipline.

Part 2 now turns the focus away from literature exploring attitudes towards lawbreakers, welfare claimants and school pupils to explore the long-term trajectories of punitiveness towards the three groups of rulebreakers. This takes the form of considering government policies, political attitudes and public sentiment by first exploring the long-term trajectories towards criminal rulebreakers in Chapter 3.1.

Part Two: Exploring Trends in Punitiveness

Chapter 3.1. The long-term trajectories of punitiveness towards rulebreakers in the criminal justice system: Government policies, political discourse, and public sentiment

3.1.1. Introduction

Part 2 now considers the long-term trends in punitiveness towards the three different groups of rulebreakers through reviewing government policies, political attitudes, and public sentiment. This chapter begins this process by exploring the long-term trends towards lawbreakers. Chapter 3.2. then turns to welfare claimants, before Chapter 3.3. concludes this section by exploring the long-term trends towards school pupils.

Political discourse and policies within the criminal justice system over the last forty years demonstrate an increasing trend of punitiveness (Newburn, 2007; Hay and Farrall, 2014). This 'punitive turn' is not exclusive to Britain but is also evident in many liberal democracies (Newburn, 2007: 425). 'Law and order', that is 'the means by which governments seek to control crime and maintain public order through enforcement of the criminal law' (Savage, 1990:89), began its prominence within political discourse in the 1980s when the Conservative Party gained power (Reiner, 2000:73). Prior to this, law and order had not been a feature of election campaigns (Downes and Morgan, 1997). Whilst rhetoric towards crime was punitive at this time (Farrall et al., 2016), criminal justice legislation did not reflect this punitive approach (Hay and Farrall, 2014). It was subsequent criminal justice policies, which were implemented from the early 1990s that have resulted in the 'tough on crime' agenda being embedded in political thinking (Hay and Farrall, 2014:20). From the early 1990s, both the Conservative and Labour Parties made significant efforts to be seen to be 'tough on crime' (Newburn, 2007). This type of discourse endures and has been used by both the Labour Party and Conservative government whilst elected making frequent statements about being tough on crime (Newburn, 2007; Annison, 2018). An increase in punitive penal policies since the early 1990s has led to an increase in the use of punishment, in terms of imprisonment and in the community, with an escalation in crime-orientated legislation and the rise in the prison

population (Newburn, 2007). This trend of an increasing prison population has endured, and over the past 30 years it has risen by 82% in England and Wales (Prison Reform Trust, 2017) and 60% since 1990 in Scotland (Sturge, 2019). This chapter begins by considering the increase in prison population and recorded crime rates. Key policies attributing to an increase in punitiveness will then be reviewed before moving on to discuss trends in political discourse towards 'law and order'. This chapter concludes by analysing trends in public attitudes towards lawbreakers using questions fielded by the British Social Attitudes survey.

3.1.2. The Prison Population and Recorded Crime Rates

The adult prison population in England and Wales quadrupled in size between 1900 and 2018, with half of this increase occurring since 1990 (Sturge, 2019). In Scotland, the adult prison population almost doubled in size during the same period with a 60% rise since 1990 (Sturge, 2019). By the early 1980s the prison population had reached 40,000 prisoners, this was the highest figures seen in England and Wales at the time and continued to rise to 50,000 by the end of the decade (Newburn, 2007). During this period, the Conservative government introduced a range of measures to curtail overcrowding and limit the prison population by the introduction of time restrictions for cases brought to trial and advice to sentencers on restricting those remanded in custody (Newburn, 2007). These measures appeared to stabilise the prison population between 1987 until 1991, at which point it began to rise again (Newburn, 2007). Between 1993 and 2005 the prison population increased by 69% in England and Wales (Newburn 2007) and in March 2020 stood at just under 84,000 (Home Office, 2020). Scotland followed this trend with a prison population increase from just under 5,000 in 1980 to approximately 8,000 prisoners in 2010 (Scottish Government, 2011). In March 2020, the prison population in Scotland also remains at relatively high levels with just over 8,000 prisoners (Scottish Prison Service, 2020).

From 1945 until the late 1970s, the post-war Keynesian democratic consensus of successive governments shared a commitment to low inflation, high employment and economic growth (Jackson, 2014). Broadly accepted shared goals of core entitlements to receive mainstream public services based on Keynesianism prevailed throughout this period (Downes and Morgan, 2012). The main political parties prioritised the rebuilding of the economy and constructing the welfare state and as such crime and the criminal justice system did not

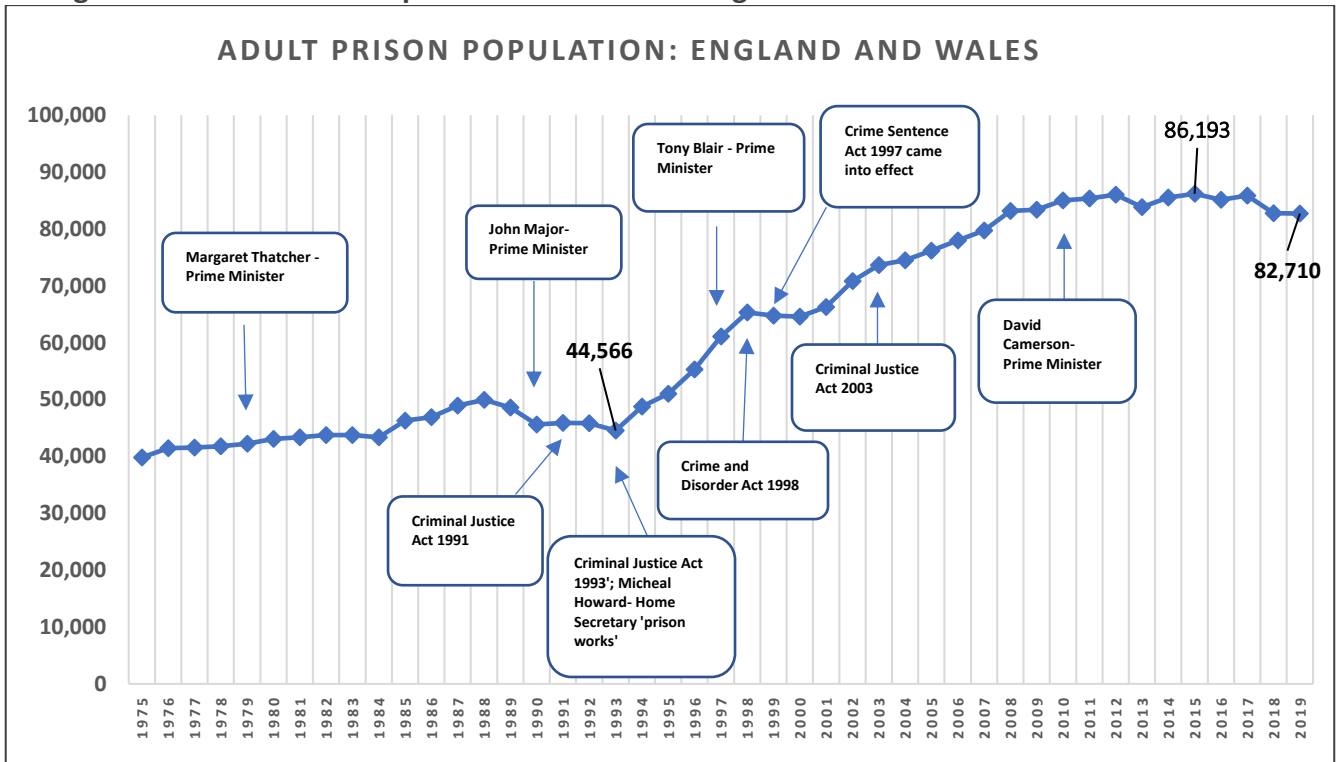
feature in elections between 1945 and 1959 (Downes and Morgan, 2012). So broad was the agreement around law and order policy during this time, with the possible exception of support or opposition to capital punishment, that it was barely a political issue at all (Savage, 1990). During the 1960s recorded crime rates had begun to rise and the topic began to feature in manifesto statements (Downes and Morgan, 2012). By the 1970s however the Conservative Party began to attribute the worsening crime figures to the Labour Party's policies whilst in government (Downes and Morgan, 2012). By the mid-1970s, the rise of the prison population in England was causing concern amongst politicians (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). However, a broad liberal-progressive consensus prevailed with the main desire to reduce the prison population (Jennings et al., 2017a). This concern resulted in both the Conservative and Labour governments in the 1970s responding pragmatically by attempting to restrain the prison population through increasing the provision of non-custodial sentences, increasing the number of prisoners released on parole, and encouraging sentencers to use custody for shorter periods and less extensively (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). Whilst law and order received political prominence by Margaret Thatcher's discourse during the 1979 election campaign, it did not receive the same attention in legislation once she became Prime Minister (Farrall and Jennings, 2014). 'Law and order', however, was reflected in the discourse used by Margaret Thatcher towards the miners (Steber, 2017) and the police were given any resources necessary to maintain law and order (Wallington, 1985). The policy goal of keeping offenders (particularly young offenders) out of prison broadly prevailed until the early 1990s (Jennings et al., 2017b). Acts of Parliament between 1982 and 1991 had an approach that decreased punitiveness in some respects and increased punitiveness in others, for instance limiting the use of imprisonment but increasing post-prison release and community controls as seen in the 1982 Criminal Justice Act (Farrall et al., 2016). The 1980, 1982 and 1988 Criminal Justice Acts attempted to restrict the use of imprisonment and created alternatives to custody (Farrall et al., 2016; Savage, 1990), whilst the 1985 Prosecution of Offences Act sought to reduce the number of remand prisoners (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). It was not until after the 1991 Criminal Justice Act that legislation took a punitive turn away from penal welfarism to favouring harsher sentences (Newburn, 2007; Farrall et al., 2016). Prominent legislative changes occurred in November 1990, when John Major became Prime Minister, and were largely due to the unexpected rise in crime in

1989-1992 (Farrall and Jennings, 2014). Additionally, the appointment of Michael Howard as Home Secretary in 1993, who held more punitive preferences, marked a break from the Home Office's previous liberal approach to crime (Jennings et al., 2017a).

Between 1980 and the early 1990s the recorded crime rate in Britain increased substantially, peaking at approximately 110 crimes per 1,000 head of population in 1992, and remained at historical high levels until the early 2000s when it started to decrease (Jennings et al., 2017a). Despite the fall in crime during this period the prison population remained at high levels (Home Office, 2019a). The recorded crime rate started to increase again from 2015/16, rising from approximately 3,840,000 recorded crimes to just over five million recorded crimes in 2018/19 (see Figure 3.2.) (Home Office, 2019b). The current prison population rate in England and Wales is 140 per 100,000 people (see Figure 3.1.) and 143 per 100,000 in Scotland in September 2018 (Walmsley, 2018). Jennings et al. (2017a) suggest that public punitiveness increased in tandem with crime concerns, encouraging politicians and policy makers to increase the incarceration rate. Moreover, the Government is currently planning to create 10,000 new prison places as part of its 'Prison Estate Transformation Programme' in response to projected rises in the prison population (Beard, 2019).

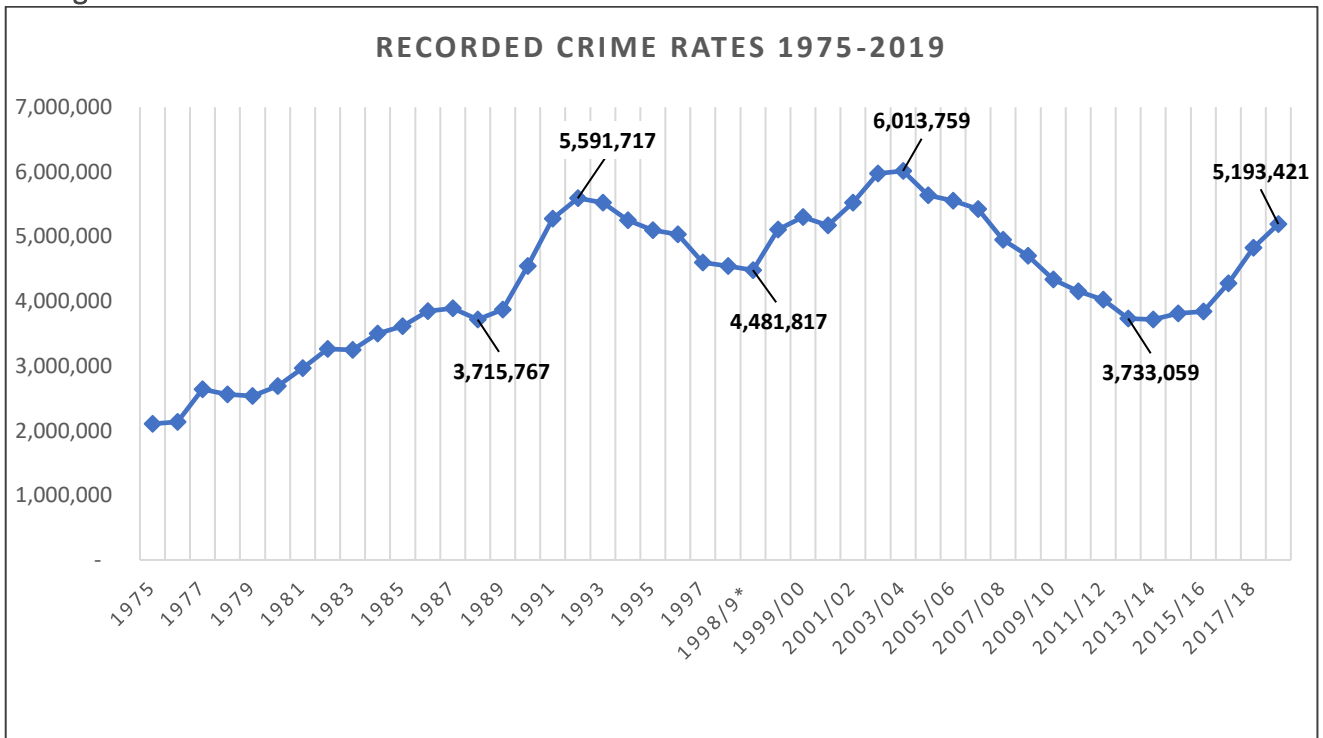
Figure 3.1. shows the prison population since 1975 and key events that have occurred during that time. Figure 3.2. shows recorded crime rates during the same period. The figures show that as recorded crime rates reached a peak in 1992, the combination of Michael Howard becoming Home Secretary pursuing a prison works approach and the Criminal Justice Act 1993, the prison population began to increase markedly. Subsequent Acts have assisted in sentencing more offenders to prison for longer periods of time. Despite the significant undulations of the recorded crime rate, this prison population has continued to rise and remains high today.

Figure 3.1. Adult Prison Population since 1975 in England and Wales



Source: Cavadino and Dignan (2006); HM Prison and Probation Service (2019)

Figure 3.2. Recorded Crime Rates 1975-2019



Source: Home Office (2002); Home Office (2015); Home Office (2019)

3.1.3. History of Responses to Lawbreakers: key policies relating to increased punitiveness

The Criminal Justice Act 1982

The 1982 Act signalled a move away from the welfare approach of previous governments (Savage, 1990). Whilst the 1982 Act introduced limits to the use of imprisonment and decreases in the actual levels of imprisonment were observed, the Act also increased the use of post-prison release and community controls (Farrall et al., 2016). Concerns at this time about the number of young offenders in custody lead to the strengthening of non-custodial provisions for young offenders and limiting the use of custody by the 1982 Act (Farrall et al., 2016). The Act aimed to reduce the number of juveniles in custody and asked sentencers to only impose a custodial sentence should alternatives be deemed inappropriate (Newburn, 2003). However, the Home Secretary, Willie Whitelaw, adopted a 'get tough' stance in his House of Commons statements (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007:372) and referred to a 'short, sharp, shock' response to young offenders (Farrall et al., 2016). The Act also moved towards individual responsibility of the offenders and their parents away from a treatment approach (Farrall et al., 2016). Night Restriction Orders and the Charge and Control condition were introduced allowing sentencers more controlling powers (Burney, 1985). Smith (2003:8) suggests that these Orders heightened 'the punitive aspects of intervention'.

The Police and Criminal Evidence Act (PACE) 1984

PACE was introduced to provide greater regulation to the police officer and arrestee interaction within police custody (Maguire, 1988) and is considered important in the protection of the rights of arrestees (Farrall et al., 2016). The Act proposed safeguarding measures for suspects during detention and introduced clear guidelines about the length of time suspects were able to be detained without charge (Skinns, 2010). Detainees were given statutory rights to access legal advice as soon as is practical following their request (Skinns, 2010). PACE established the power of detention in police custody without charge for up to 24 hours for non-serious offences and up to 96 hours for serious offences under exceptional circumstances (Savage, 1990). The length of time suspects could be held under exceptional circumstances without charge received criticism as this decision was left to police discretion (Maguire, 1988). However, the introduction of the timeframe aims to limit suspects spending

unnecessary time in police detention (Skinns, 2011). However, critics have argued that police practice and powers have been facilitated by PACE (Skinns, 2011). The Act created new national powers of stop and search and enabled police to search premises and conduct body searches (Savage, 1990). Whilst there are criticisms of PACE, it is still considered important in providing a legal framework (Skinns, 2011).

The Criminal Justice Act 1988

The 1988 Act continued to attempt to strengthen the powers of law enforcement (Savage, 1990). The Act gave the Attorney General the power to refer cases deemed to be overly lenient to the Court of Appeal to consider increasing the sentence if it so decides (Savage, 1990). The Act also increased maximum sentences for cruelty to children, corruption and firearm offences whilst also limiting the powers of the courts to pass custodial sentences to young offenders (Savage, 1990).

Whilst many of the reforms in the 1980s attempted to strengthen police powers and the prosecution process, community-based approaches to crime control were also a central feature of criminal justice policy throughout the 1980s (Savage, 1990). The 1988 Green Paper, *Punishment, Custody and the Community*, proposed the introduction of a community sentence whereby various conditions could be added to the Order should they be relevant to 'treating' the offender and were aimed at limiting the numbers being imprisoned (Mair et al., 2007:10). The Green Paper emphasised that community-based sanctions should not be seen as a 'soft' approach to crime and as such community disposals were to be onerous (Savage, 1990). The subsequent 1990 White Paper, *Crime, Justice and Protecting the Public: The Government's Proposals for Legislation*, continued to stress the appropriateness of punishment in the community (Savage, 1990) noting that prison 'can be an expensive way of making bad people worse' (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007:66). Thus, non-custodial measures were to take the form of punishment; focussing on punishing offenders rather than rehabilitation or reparation (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007).

The Criminal Justice Act 1991

The 1991 Act followed the 1988 Green Paper and the 1990 White Paper, which both contained statements about the ineffectiveness of imprisonment (Cavadino and Dignan,

2007). The 1991 Act aimed to divert less serious offenders away from custodial sentences to serve their punishment in the community, whereas violent and sexual offenders were to be sentenced more harshly (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). Community sentences were made more onerous in order to encourage sentencers to only use custodial sentences in the more serious of cases (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). The 1991 Act also introduced suspended sentences allowing sentencers to delay the imposition of immediate custody if the threshold for custody had been met, but a suspension could be justified (Newburn, 2003). This strategy appeared to be effective following the implementation of the Criminal Justice Act 1991 in October 1992 with a decrease in the prison population from 45,835 in September 1992 to 40,606 in December 1992 (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007).

The Criminal Justice Act 1993

There was a distinct change in penal policy between the Criminal Justice Act 1991 and the Criminal Justice Act 1993; one that shifted from the idea that 'imprisonment is not the most effective punishment for most crime' to the one that advocated 'prison works' (Newburn, 2003: 437). John Major (replacing Margaret Thatcher as Prime Minister in 1990) was now faced with economic challenges, a backlash from the judiciary and the media that the 1991 Criminal Justice Act was soft, the public horror of the murder of two-year old James Bulger by two ten-year olds in February 1993 (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007), and the death by shooting of a 14 year old boy, Benji Stanley, in January 1993 (Jacobson and Hough, 2018). The murders received intense media coverage which portrayed crime as being out of control and the 1991 Act criticised for being soft and ineffective (Jacobson and Hough, 2018). The Conservative Party Manifesto for the 1992 General Election noted,

'...the challenge for the 1990s is to step up the fight against lawlessness and violence, so that our citizens can live free from fear. We must continue to ensure that the sentence fits the crime - with long sentences for dangerous criminals, and fines and a tougher regime for punishment outside prison available as an alternative for less serious crime.'
(Conservative Party Manifesto, 1992).

Michael Howard, a supporter of law and order rhetoric and ideology, was appointed Home Secretary in May 1993 and pursued a punitive and 'prison works' approach (Cavadino and

Dignan, 2007:67). At the Conservative Party Conference in October 1993, it became apparent that reducing the prison population was no longer the objective (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). Michael Howard claimed that 'prison works' through deterrence and public protection and stated that he did not 'flinch' from the fact that more people may go to prison as a result of the reforms (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007: 67). The law and order rhetoric had an almost immediate effect on the prison population with sentencers responding to the punitive discourse of the government at the time (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). The prison population rose from 44,566 in 1993 to 61,114 in 1997 when Labour were elected, despite the fact that the numbers of offenders before the courts had declined (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007).

The Criminal Justice Act 1993 saw the reversal of some of the key measures introduced by the Criminal Justice Act 1991 (Newburn, 2007). Most notable was the criteria used to justify the use of custody and the role of previous convictions in the sentencing of offenders, which were now allowed to be taken into account by the courts (Newburn, 2007). Additionally, the Criminal Justice Act 1993 introduced measures to increase the lengths of sentences and the use of imprisonment, which saw increases in levels of imprisonment for both adult and youth offenders (Newburn, 2007). Following the enactment of the 1993 Act, there was a sharp increase in the prison population (see Figure 3.1) (Newburn, 2007).

The Criminal Justice and Public Order Act 1994

The Act introduced changes to the use of bail, which prohibited its use for those charged with rape or attempted rape, attempted murder, murder, or manslaughter to anyone with such a previous offence (Ashworth, 1995). Changes in the laws of evidence resulted in attaining convictions more easily, erosion to the right to silence and increased periods of custody for young offenders were also introduced (Faulkner, 2001). The Act also increased the stop and search powers of the police and allowed juries to infer guilt from the silence of a suspect (Sanders et al., 2010). The Act reduced the age at which young offenders could be detained after charge from fifteen to twelve and allowed offenders aged between ten and fourteen to be given long term detentions for serious crimes (Ashworth, 1995). Additionally, courts were allowed to impose a custodial sentence without a pre-sentence report (Ashworth, 1995).

The Crime Sentences Act 1997

The Crime Sentences Act 1997 introduced mandatory sentences and saw the reversal of earlier attempts to reduce the prison population (Faulkner, 2001:126). With the intention of increasing punishments and making sentences harsher, the 1997 Act made provisions for a 'three strikes and you're out' American-style sentence for repeat offenders for certain offence categories (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). The Act came into effect in 1999 under the Labour government and introduced a minimum three-year sentence for third time domestic burglary, a minimum seven-year prison sentence for third-time trafficking in Class A drugs, and an automatic life sentences for a second serious sexual or violent offence (Ministry of Justice, 2013).

'Tough on crime and tough on the causes of crime'

New Labour came to power led by Tony Blair in May 1997 (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). Blair made significant efforts to change Labour's public image from one that was 'soft on crime' to one that was 'tough on crime and tough on the causes of crime' (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007:68). This followed the success of Clinton's 'very tough on crime' (quoted in Rentoul, 1997:280) approach in the US (Beckett and Western, 2000). This slogan sought to continue to attach the Labour Party to its traditional view of the link between crime and social causes, but it was also designed to appeal to populist sentiments by portraying the impression that Labour would deal harshly with offenders (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). Blair highlighted personal responsibility and punishment but underplayed the links between crime and social and economic factors to reclaim the debates around crime (Driver and Martell, 1998, 2002). There was a shift towards a managerial, evidence-based approach to criminal justice, whilst also incorporating a 'zero-tolerance' approach (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007:69). In 1997, when Labour was elected, 93,100 offenders were sentenced to immediate custody whilst 140,000 were sentenced to community penalties (Windlesham, 2001). The following year saw an increase for both custody and community penalties with 100,600 offenders sentenced to immediate custody and 149,400 sentenced to community penalties (Windlesham, 2001). The average prison population reached 65,298 increasing 47 percent from 1993 (Windlesham, 2001). Primarily the increase in the imprisonment rate was due to an increase in the proportion of offenders sent to prison and increases in sentence lengths (Windlesham, 2001).

The Crime and Disorder Act 1998

New Labour prioritised reform of the English youth justice system in its first two years in office (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). The 1998 Act established the Youth Justice Board and Youth Offending Teams to manage young offenders (Byrne and Brooks, 2015). A key feature of New Labour's policy was early intervention; this targeted those considered most at risk of offending, which widened the net and drew more young people into the criminal justice system than ever before (Byrne and Brooks, 2015). Both juvenile prison rates and remand rates escalated (Solomon and Allen, 2009; Farrall et al., 2016). Antisocial Behaviour Orders (ASBOs) were also introduced for young offenders by the 1998 Act (Farrall et al., 2016), which also blurred the boundaries of criminal and civil law (Crawford, 2003). ASBOs are a civil order that can lead to a criminal conviction should the ASBO be breached (Newburn, 2007) aiming to stop the anti-social behaviour before it escalated and to tackle the root causes of their behaviour (Home Office, 2013).

The 1998 Act also increased courts' powers to extend the post-release supervision period of a custodial sentence for someone who had committed a sexual or violent offence in order to prevent reoffending and for the purposes of rehabilitation (Farrall et al., 2016). Home Detention Curfews were introduced in the Act and was New Labour's one major contribution to restrain prison numbers (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). This led to a slight reduction in the prison population from 65,298 in 1998 to 64,602 in 2000, before continuing to rise again (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007).

The Criminal Justice and Court Services Act 2000

New Labour introduced, for the first time, legislation that linked the social security system, through the Child Support, Pensions, and Social Security Act (CSPSSA) 2000, and criminal law (Larkin, 2007). Section 53 of the Criminal Justice and Court Services Act 2000 legislated that should an offender breach a Community Order the Department for Work and Pensions should be notified (Larkin, 2007). Section 62 of the CSPSSA gave powers to the Department for Work and Pensions to withhold means-tested or contributory benefits for up to 26 weeks should a court deem that an offender had failed to comply with their community order, despite the reasons of the breach of the order not being related to the social security agreement (Larkin, 2007).

The Anti-Social Behaviour Act 2003

The Anti-Social Behaviour Act 2003 extended the powers of ASBOs to constrain tenants, parents and groups gathering in specified areas (Burney, 2005). This enabled interventions to take place in private spaces as well public spaces (Crawford, 2003). The Anti-Social Behaviour Act was repealed by the Anti-Social Behaviour, Crime and Policing Act (2014), which legislated for the ASBO to be replaced by the Criminal Behaviour Order and an injunction to prevent nuisance and annoyance. The ASBO was deemed to be failing as breach rates were high and the number being issued had been steadily decreasing since 2005 (Home Office, 2013).

The Criminal Justice Act 2003

The Review of Criminal Courts in England and Wales under Lord Justice Auld and the Review of Sentencing Framework under John Halliday were set up by the then Home Secretary Jack Straw aiming to 'rebalance' the criminal justice system in favour of victims and witnesses (Newburn, 2007:442). The 2003 Act contained many of the recommendations from the reviews, such as the introduction of new sentences: 'custody minus', a suspended custodial sentence to be activated should the offender breach the community element of the sentence; intermittent custody, a custodial sentence served in short periods allowing offenders to continue to work; and, 'custody plus', a custodial sentence less than twelve months, which combined a custodial terms of between two weeks and three months and a licence period of at least six months (Newburn, 2007). The 2003 Act also introduced a new Community Order to replace all other existing community sentences and revived the Suspended Sentence Order, both attempting to provide robust alternatives to the use of short-term prison sentences (Jacobson and Hough, 2018). Whilst both these Orders were used extensively in the years following the 1993 Act the prison population continued to be unaffected and continued to rise (Jacobson and Hough, 2003). In addition to the increase in prison sentences, those sentenced to community disposals supervised by The Probation Service also saw a large increase by 30 percent between 1993 and 2003 (Newburn, 2007).

The Coalition Government

The 2010 Green Paper, *Breaking the Cycle*, published under the Conservative-Liberal Democrat Coalition government, combined the traditionally punitive phrases of 'hard',

‘challenging’ work in prisons, ‘tougher’ curfew requirements, more ‘demanding’ community payback schemes with intended restraint aiming to curb the number of young offenders in custody and the use of Indeterminate sentences for Public Protection (IPPs) (Downes and Morgan, 2012: 192).

This period has not been characterised by numerous tough penal initiatives, but it has continued to observe the tough penal rhetoric used throughout the previous two decades (Jacobson and Hough, 2018). As Justice Secretary at the start of the coalition government in 2010, Ken Clarke abolished IPPs, introduced by David Blunkett, blaming them for contributing to the significant rise in prison population since he was Home Secretary (Jacobson and Hough, 2018). Although, large numbers of prisoners continue to serve IPP sentences considered to be ‘grossly disproportionate’ (Jacobson and Hough, 2018:181). Ken Clarke was replaced by Chris Grayling in 2012 who refrained from making significant changes to the sentencing framework, but who adopted a much tougher tone to penal policy (Jacobson and Hough, 2018). The notable legislative changes Chris Grayling implemented include extending the minimum length of extended sentences for dangerous offenders through the Offender Rehabilitation Act 2014 and minimum sentences for a second offence involving an offensive weapon by the Criminal Justice and Courts Act 2015 (Annison, 2018). Additionally, the Incentives and Earned Privileges (IEP) Scheme was toughened (Annison, 2018) and prisoners’ access to books was reduced before this decision was later reversed by Michael Gove on becoming Justice Secretary (Jacobson and Hough, 2018). Generally, however, Chris Grayling focussed his attentions on privatising elements of the probation and prison service (Jacobson and Hough, 2018). The prison population has remained at historical high levels despite recorded crime rates continuing to fall (Jacobson and Hough, 2018), although recorded crime rates have been rising again since 2015/16 (see Figures 3.1. and 3.2).

3.1.4. Political Discourse: a trend of rising punitiveness

Being ‘tough’ on crime was referred to by the Conservative Party in their 1964 election manifesto (Downes and Morgan, 2002), however it was during the 1979 election campaign that ‘law and order’ gained political prominence (Farrall and Jennings, 2016). Margaret Thatcher made reference to the country’s desire for ‘less tax and more law and order’ (Savage, 1990:89). In her final election broadcast in 1979, she referred to ‘feeling safe in the

streets' (Riddell, 1985:193). Subsequently, in 1988 Thatcher blamed social workers for creating 'a fog of excuses' for offenders (Riddell, 1989:171). This marked the ramping up of a political discourse which continues today. This discourse continued with Tony Blair, leader of the Labour party, as Prime Minister emphasising the need to be 'tough on crime and tough on the causes of crime'. Official crime statistics showed an increase of 3.8 percent in the number of police recorded crimes preceding the twelve months prior to March 2000 (Windlesham, 2001). In a memorandum Blair sent to his policy advisers in March 2000, he wrote, 'We should think now of an initiative...something tough, with immediate bite which sends a message through the system' (Windlesham, 2001:276). At the Labour Party Conference, Blair affirmed, 'By acknowledging duty of care, we earn the right to be tough on crime' (Windlesham, 2001).

This punitiveness has continued to be observed from 2010 onwards with governmental responses to crime in England and Wales centralising punishment, which emphasised a 'tough' approach to crime, 'tough punishments', 'tough discipline for prisoners', and 'tougher community sentences' (Ministry of Justice, 2010:9). Despite this ubiquitous discourse, law and order issues barely featured in political television debates preceding the general election in 2010 (Downes and Morgan, 2012). Customary references were made to law and order in the manifestos, but it was not prominent throughout the election campaign (Downes and Morgan, 2012). On appointment as Justice Secretary in 2010, Kenneth Clarke was clear in his intention to impede the populist discourse that had been prevalent since the early 1990s (Annison, 2018). This change was evidenced by some of the legislative changes made initially by the Coalition government, such as the abolition of the Imprisonment for Public Protection (IPP) sentences and limitations to custodial demand legislated for by the Legal Aid, Sentencing and Punishment of Offenders Act 2012 (Annison, 2018). However, the tone and policy emphasis were set to change again with a cabinet reshuffle in 2012, which replaced Ken Clarke with Chris Grayling, who was placed to 'toughen up' on crime (Annison, 2018). 'Tough' rhetoric was a frequent occurrence (Annison, 2018). At the Conservative Party Conference in October 2012, Chris Grayling set out his intention to be a 'tough Justice Secretary' to 'punish offenders properly' (Grayling, 2012).

More recently, prior the 2019 general election, home secretary Priti Patel commented that she wanted criminals to 'literally feel terror' at the idea of breaking the law (BBC, 2019). The Conservative and Unionist Party Manifesto (2019:18) stated,

'We will introduce tougher sentencing for the worst offenders and end automatic release from prisons for serious crimes. For child murderers there will be life imprisonment without parole'.

Priti Patel also stated that her focus was on 'restating our commitment to law and order' (Gayle, 2019). In 2011, some forty years since the abolition of capital punishment, Priti Patel had commented on her support for the 'reintroduction of capital punishment to serve as a deterrent' (BBC, 2019). Capital punishment was abolished under the terms of the Murder (Abolition of Death Penalty) Act 1965. Hanging was initially suspended for a five-year period and was voted on again in 1969 with 343 votes in favour of abolition (185 against) permanently abolishing the death penalty (BBC, 2005). The death penalty was retained for treason and piracy with violence until 1998, when it was abolished completely (BBC, 2005). Capital punishment continued to be debated in the House of Commons in the two decades following its abolition in 1969, with fourteen motions to restore capital punishment defeated with substantial majorities (Windlesham, 1993).

In an article written in the Daily Mail by the Prime Minister Boris Johnson (Johnson, 2019) wrote,

'We need to come down hard on crime. That means coming down hard on criminals. As Home Secretary Priti Patel has rightly said, we need to reverse the balance of fear.'

He continued,

'...first of all exploding any sense that the law is weak, or that criminals can get away with it. When the police catch a violent criminal, it is vital they get the sentence they deserve.'

Johnson wrote these comments in the same article in which he detailed the government's intention to expand the prison estate by 10,000 spaces and to increase police stop and search powers (Johnson, 2019). Johnson's comments here are vague, allow his words to be

interpreted as people so wish and do not push back against the punitive rhetoric on crime. Lacey (2008:71) suggests that being ‘tough on crime’ is attractive to politicians as it allows them to appear to resolve crime through a straightforward ‘tough’ criminal policy (Lacey 2008: 71). In contrast, the Labour party manifesto in 2019 did not reflect the same tone as that of the New Labour era under Tony Blair (Labour Party Manifesto, 2019). Instead it presented a holistic approach to responding to criminal behaviour and noted the spending cuts of the Conservative government as causing issues with policing and local communities (Labour Party Manifesto, 2019).

3.1.5. Trends in Public Opinion Towards Lawbreakers

The British Social Attitudes Survey has tracked attitudes towards lawbreakers since 1986, posing two questions:

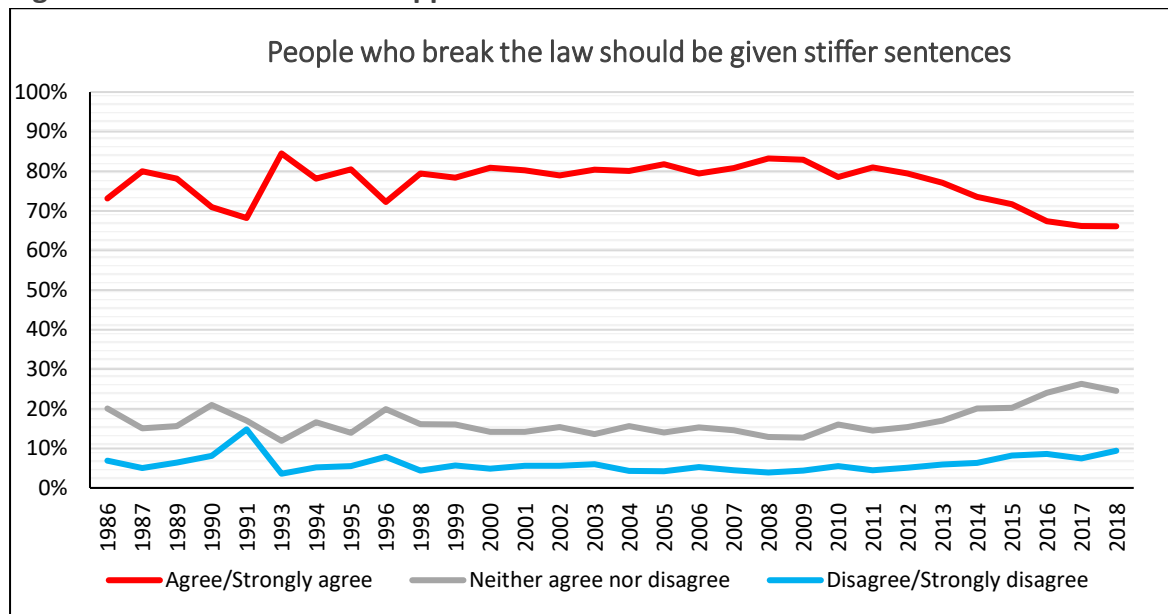
- *People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences.*
- *For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence.*

This section will analyse these questions to assess trends in public attitudes towards lawbreakers over time.

People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences

In 1983, 73% of respondents were in agreement (32% strongly agreed and 43% agreed) that *people who break the law should be given stiffer sentences*, reducing to 66% in agreement (20% strongly agreed and 46% agreed) in 2018 (Figure 3.3.) Disagreement with this statement has remained relatively stable over time, and it is the neither agree nor disagree category that has increased as those who agree have decreased (Figure 3.3.). Jennings et al. (2017a) point to the murder of two-year old James Bulger in February 1993 by two 10-year old boys and the subsequent extensive media coverage, which led to a moral panic about child delinquency and wider concerns about the loss of traditional values, for the increase in strong support of the death penalty at that time (see Figure 3.5.). Public concern rose sharply, as did the prison population at a time when recorded crime rates were starting to fall (Green, 2008). This is also seen in response to a sharp increase in support for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers in 1993, as shown in Figure 3.3. (The question was not asked in 1992). Additionally, there were also concerns about crime at this time with recorded crime rates reaching a peak in 1992/1993 (see Figure 3.2.).

Figure 3.3. Public attitudes: Support for stiffer sentences



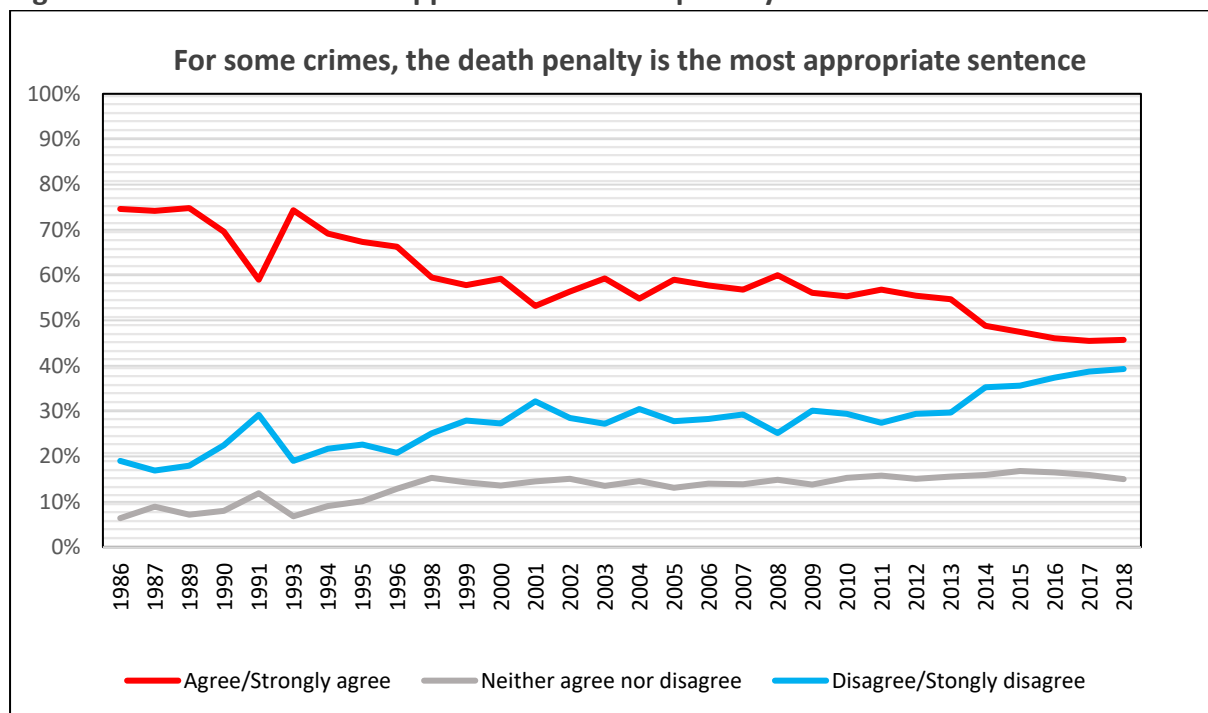
Source: BSAS Data 1986 – 2018

Looking at this question in more detail, Figure 3.4. below uses conditional formatting to colour code the mean score per age for each year of interview between 1986 and 2018. The more punitive scores are redder, yellow shows middle values and greener colours show less punitive responses. Although it is worth highlighting that the greener shades do not mean that these scores are necessarily lenient (in disagreement) responses, but that they are less punitive in comparison to the other scores. The highest value (least punitive mean score) is 2.87 and the lowest value (the most punitive mean score) is 1.20. These scores range from 1 (Strongly agree) to 5 (Strongly disagree). This analysis appears to show that until 1991 younger age groups were less punitive than older age groups illustrated by the green and yellow for younger age groups, whilst higher age shows more red shading illustrating more punitive responses (Figure 3.4.). However, over time younger age groups appear to have become more punitive than in the 1980s with the distribution of red (more punitive attitudes) being more evenly spread across the ages, although older people do still appear to be more punitive (shown by more prevalent red shading in the higher age groups). From 2013 onwards all ages appear to have become less punitive, shown by the increasing range of green shading for all age groups, but especially amongst the youngest. As noted in relation to Figure 3.3. above, there is also an increase in support for stiffer sentences in 1993 seen by the increase in red shading across all ages groups in Figure 3.4.

For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence

Support for the death penalty has reduced more substantially over time than support for stiffer sentences. In 1986, 75% were in agreement (33% strongly agreed and 41% agreed) that *for some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence* compared to 46% in agreement (21% strongly agreed and 25% agreed) in 2018 (BSA, 2019). Unlike support for stiffer sentences, disagreement with this statement has increased more substantially (by 20%) than those who neither agree nor disagree (increase of around 10%). In 1986, 19% disagreed with this statement (10% disagreed and 9% strongly disagreed), whilst in 2018 39% were in disagreement (20% disagreed and 19% strongly disagreed) (Figure 3.5.).

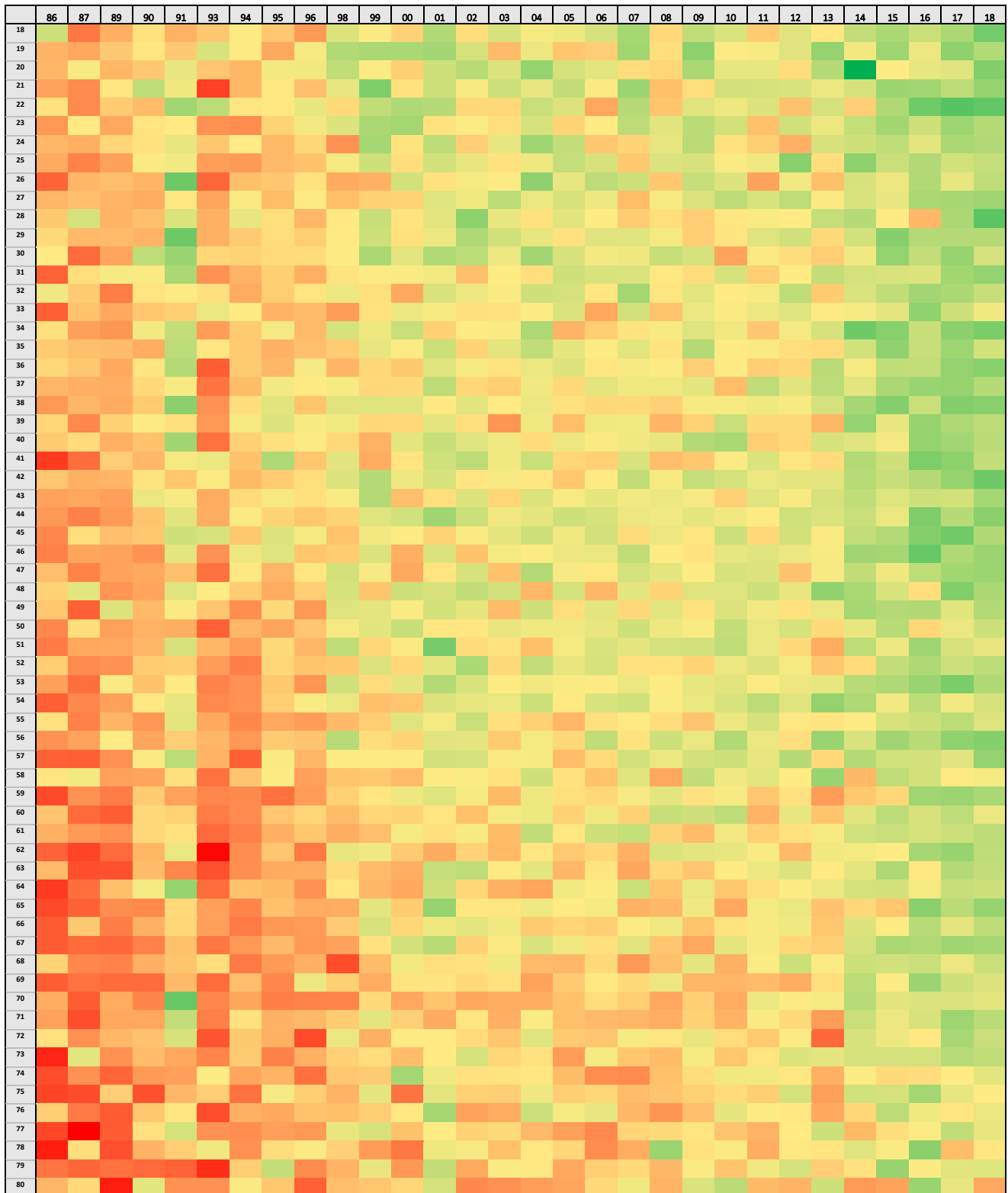
Figure 3.5. Public attitudes: Support for the death penalty



Source: BSAS 1986 - 2018

By 1991, those who strongly agreed that the death penalty is appropriate for some crimes had decreased to 25 percent from 41 percent in 1986, followed by a sharp increase in 1993 to 45 percent (The question was not asked in 1992). As noted previously, this points to the effects of the murder of James Bulger in 1993 (Jennings et al., 2017a) and to the concerns about crime more generally as the recorded crime rates reached a peak in 1992/1993 (see Figure 3.2.)

Figure 3.6. Conditional Formatting: Support for the death penalty, 1986 to 2018 by age



Source: British Social Attitudes 1986 - 2018

Figure 3.6. again uses conditional formatting to colour code the mean score per age for each year of interview between 1986 and 2018 in response to support for the death penalty. The more punitive scores shown as red, yellow showing middle values and green shows less punitive responses. Again, the greener shades do not mean that these scores are necessarily lenient (in disagreement) responses, but that they are less punitive in comparison to the other mean scores. These scores ranged from 1 (Strongly agree) to 5 (Strongly disagree). The highest value (least punitive mean score) is 4.00 and the lowest value (the most punitive mean score) is 1.17. Whilst older age groups appear to be generally more punitive, until 1991 support for the death penalty appears to be prevalent across all ages. Post 1993, punitive sentiment appears to generally increase with age, although over time support for the death penalty appears to have decreased for all age groups. This is particularly prevalent since 2013, shown by the influx of green colours for all age groups, with the exception of the very old.

3.1.6. Summary

This chapter began with reviewing the trends in the prison population over time and governmental responses to it. In the 1970s, the prison population began to cause concerns. Despite this concern, there was an attempt to restrain the prison population through progressive measures. This approach generally prevailed until the early 1990s, when legislation took a punitive turn. At this time the prison population began to increase and remains at high levels today. Trends in punitive discourse by prominent figures were then considered. Punitive discourse was ramped up in the 1979 election campaign, despite subsequent legislation not employing the same tone. This discourse appears to have set the trend for subsequent political leaders to continue with a tough on crime discourse, which endures today. This punitiveness is channelled through policies, which have resulted in more punishment and stricter sanctions. Finally, trends in public attitudes towards lawbreakers using British Social Attitudes survey questions dating back to the early 1980s were presented. Analysis shows that support for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers remains high, although this has reduced substantially in recent years. Younger age groups appeared to be more punitive than they were in the late 1980s until around 2016, when punitive attitudes began to decrease. Whilst support for the death penalty appears to have decreased for all age groups

over time. The next subchapter will explore the long-term trajectories towards rulebreakers in the welfare system.

Chapter 3.2. The long-term trajectories of punitiveness towards rulebreakers in the welfare system: Government policies, political discourse, and public sentiment

3.2.1. Introduction

The harsh treatment of economically disadvantaged people has a lengthy history in Britain (Golding and Middleton, 1982). This can be traced back to 14th century laws aimed at punishing undeserving vagrants, the 16th century branding of those deemed as the ‘undeserving poor’ and the workhouses of the 19th century (Baumberg et al., 2012; Golding and Middleton, 1982). Dealing with economically disadvantaged people has always been a core issue for governments, and before them, the church and feudal authorities (Golding and Middleton, 1982). Punishment, in various forms, has been intrinsic to how authority has responded to the unemployed since the early sixteenth century (Chambliss, 1964). The division established in current social policy between the ‘undeserving’ and ‘deserving’ poor (Taylor-Gooby, 2013) can be traced back to the early vagrancy acts (Golding and Middleton, 1982:9). This division also has a well-established history in political discourse, which became more prominent in the 1980s (Hill and Walker, 2014; Andrews and Jacob, 1990). Throughout the majority of the 20th century, social policy emphasized protecting working-class families (Deeming, 2015). Welfare reforms implemented by the Labour government following the Beveridge Report were underpinned by Keynesian principles. Policies aimed to manage the economy through enabling full employment, relying on revenues from income taxation and national insurance contributions largely financed by the working population (Deeming, 2015). In the late 1970s and early 1980s there was a shift away from the Keynesian Welfare State to placing the market before state and society (Deeming, 2015). Policies moved away from protecting incomes in favour of welfare conditionality and promoting employability and readiness for work (Deeming, 2015). Trends in public attitudes, measured by the British Social Attitudes Survey (BSAS) since the early 1980s, also appear to have hardened over time with the general public being less supportive of welfare claimants than they were in the 1980s, although this trend seems to have shifted in the last few years. This chapter considers historical and contemporary responses to the unemployed by reviewing government policies, political discourse and trends in public attitudes since the 1980s, suggesting that these areas have become increasingly more punitive towards welfare claimants over time.

3.2.2. History of Responses to the Disadvantaged: A Summary

The 16th Century

Golding and Middleton (1982:9) suggest that the contemporary notion that criminality is 'inherent in having no evident employment' originated in the vagrancy laws of the early sixteenth century. This period also saw the introduction of increased punishments for certain behaviours whereby whippings, pillorying and execution became embedded in social policy (Golding and Middleton, 1982).

The 1530 Vagabonds Act introduced the punishment of being 'tied to the end of a cart naked, and to be beaten with whips...till his body be bloody by reason of such whippings' should a person be able to work, but is found 'idle', begging or homeless, and 'can give no reckoning how he lawfully gets his money' (Chambliss, 1964:71). The 1530 Act also introduced legislation suggesting deceit and unemployment and homelessness were connected stating 'idle persons' using 'subtle crafty and unlawful games' is punishable by a two-day whipping tied to a cart naked, in the nearest market town (Chambliss, 1964:72). Five years later, the punishment of execution was introduced for the crime of vagrancy (Chambliss, 1964). These types of physical punishments continued until they were abolished in the 19th Century (Lambert, 2016). The 1530 Act also embedded the idea of 'wilful poverty' in legislation and was to set the scene for many centuries to come (Golding and Middleton, 1982:9). The Vagabonds Act 1547 punished homelessness and begging by the branding of a 'V' (vagabond) on the person's chest with a hot iron followed by two years of slavery to the person who found him (Chambliss, 1964). If the person subsequently ran away, they were branded with a letter 'S' (slave) on their forehead and enslaved forever (Chambliss, 1964). Legislation in 1553 further distinguished between different forms of poverty by introducing the categories of the 'impotent' (sick, aged, orphans), 'casualties' (war-wounded) and the 'thriftless' (homeless and the 'idle') (Golding and Middleton, 1982:10).

The Poor Law 1597, amended in 1601, established the first mandatory system of publicly financed poor relief in England and Wales (Brundage, 2002). The Poor Law 1601 asserted the need for housing for both 'poor impotent people' and the able-bodied unemployed, which led to the later development of poorhouses and workhouses in the seventeenth century (Brundage, 2002:11). The Poor Laws established the dual task of assisting the 'deserving'

disabled poor and forcing the able-bodied to seek work (Lindert, 1994). Shelter and sustenance were offered by parish workhouses to those deemed deserving, whilst the able-bodied were subject to a 'punishing regime' (Lindert, 1994:381). The Poor Law Act 1601 consolidated the aims of 'work discipline, deterrence and classification' formed during this period (Golding and Middleton, 1982:11) and continue to be evident in social policy regarding the unemployed.

1700s – 1800s

The Workhouse Test Act 1723 legislated for local parishes to build workhouses and to deny further sustenance should unemployed people refuse to enter (Brundage, 2002). The Gilbert's Act 1782 allowed parishes to build separate houses to care for the elderly and children, and to provide support to the able-bodied poor outside the workhouse (Daunton, 1995). By 1802, 3,765 parishes in England and Wales (excluding London) used workhouses to accommodate approximately 83,000 relief recipients (Daunton, 1995). Members of the Poor Law Commission, whose report led to the Poor Law Amendment Act in 1834, asserted that the current system encouraged laziness and led to 'a universal system of pauperism' (Harris, 2003:222).

The regulation of begging and rough sleeping was a primary concern of the 1824 Vagrancy Act (sections 3 and 4) (Lawrence, 2017). Should a person be found begging or rough sleeping without visible means of subsistence they could be arrested and charged (Lawrence, 2017). These elements of the 1824 Act continue to be in use today (in an amended form) in England and Wales, having been repealed in Scotland and Northern Ireland, demonstrating a prevailing negative attitude and response to disadvantaged groups of people (Waugh and Pidd, 2014). A freedom of information request shows that in 2013-14, 2,771 cases were brought before the magistrates' court under section 3 of the Vagrancy Act 1824 (Waugh and Pidd, 2014). Whilst prosecutions have more than halved since 2014, 1,320 people were prosecuted under the Vagrancy Act in 2018 (Downie, 2019). Section 3 and 4 of the 1824 Act in their current form are shown in the table 3.1. below.

Table 3.1. The Vagrancy Act 1824

The Vagrancy Act 1824	How can it be used to tackle rough sleeping and associated activity	Penalty/Sanction
Section 4	Prohibits ‘wandering abroad and lodging in any barn or outhouse, or in any deserted or unoccupied building, or in the open air, or under a tent, or in any cart or wagon, and not giving a good account of himself’.	Arrest/Maximum penalty - fine
	People can be arrested if there is a shelter nearby that can be accessed or if they have been offered a shelter and still sleep on the street.	Arrest/Maximum penalty - fine
Section 3	Begging and persistent begging are prohibited through the Act: ‘Every person wandering abroad, or placing himself or herself in any public place, street, highway, court, or passage, to beg or gather alms’.	Arrest/Maximum penalty - fine

Source: Adapted from Sanders and Albanese (2017:4)

The Poor Law Amendment Act 1834

The 1834 Act placed the workhouse at the centre of the response to the poor, intending for a harsh environment to deter people from seeking relief, and should they do so, force them to seek employment in the open labour market as soon as possible (Gregory, 2008). Stigma was also central to the policy, engendering the belief that poverty was a choice, predominantly self-inflicted, and reflected a failing moral character (Gregory, 2008). This belief resulted in only those deemed as ‘impotent’ truly deserving of assistance outside of the workhouse (Gregory, 2008). The 1834 Act also aimed to incentivise people to find work by establishing Poor Relief to be set at an earnings level lower than those of industrial workers in the lowest class (Timmins, 2017). Attitudes towards poverty at this time that suggest the individual was at fault for their circumstances and as such should be punished are still evident today (Timmins, 2017). The 1834 Act did not apply to Scotland (Paterson, 1976). Under the Act of Union in 1707 Scotland retained its separate judicial system, requiring separate clauses or separate Scottish Acts to apply legal and/or administrative procedures (Paterson, 1976). Neither action was taken in 1834 (Paterson, 1976). An inquiry into the relief system in Scotland led to a Royal Commission report in 1844, which criticized the prevailing relief

system in Scotland for being irregularly distributed and inadequate in amount (Paterson, 1976). The 1845 Poor Law Scotland Act was the result of the Royal Commission report which gave powers to individual parishes responsible for the poor to decide how they both financed and managed the disadvantaged (Paterson, 1976). The Act specified that adequate and sufficient poor relief was to be provided for 'paupers', but lack of a definition for this term resulted in previous criteria being applied (Paterson, 1976). This Act provided improved relief introducing a local rating system provided on a more regular basis for the poor and their families (Paterson, 1976).

Further punitive responses towards the poor continued throughout the 18th Century (Brundage, 2002). The Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order 1844 stipulated that the able-bodied were not to receive outdoor relief unless some work had been carried out (Brundage, 2002). Additionally, a minimum of one-third of this relief would be paid via means such as bread or food tickets (Brundage, 2002). Relief was generally viewed by those in power as needing to be curtailed for both the 'moral health' and 'fiscal integrity' of communities (Brundage, 2002). The stigmatization of relief was deemed central to this end (Brundage, 2002). The economic crisis of the 1860s led to the Union Chargeability Act (1865), which improved finances allowing more modern workhouses to be built and more care for those deemed as needy, such as the elderly (Crocker, 1987). In 1870, the central Poor Law authority announced a policy to be strictly enforced, which recommended suspending outdoor relief to the able-bodied marking a change in Poor Law practice (Crocker, 1987).

1900 to World War II

The National Insurance Act 1911 is estimated to have reduced the number of those previously deemed as 'paupers' from 916,377 in 1910 to 748,019 in 1913 allowing for financial support through sickness benefits and pensions (Brundage, 2002:143). However, the majority of the disadvantaged remained outside its assistance, and those in the contributing lower classes paid effectively higher taxes than those in the middle class (Brundage, 2002). The Relief Regulation Order 1911 continued to prohibit outdoor relief to the able-bodied (Brundage, 2002). Despite this reform, in 1912 the number of workhouse residents had reached an all-time high of 280,000, which dropped sharply with the onset of World War 1, to rise again following the end of the war (Brundage, 2002). By 1926, the number of those

receiving poor relief had increased to 2.5 million (Brundage, 2002). Increasing unemployment followed by The Great Depression starting in 1929 led to insurance benefits being cut and the introduction of a strict household means-tested benefit (Timmins, 2017). Unemployment became the central concern during the inter-war years (Timmins, 2017).

World War II to 1979

In 1942, the wartime coalition government published the 'Social Insurance and Allied Services' report, written by Sir William Beveridge, an economist and expert on unemployment issues (National Archives, 2018). This document formed the basis of the UK's welfare state (Buchanan, 2017), implementing a 'cradle to grave' national insurance system of weekly contributions (Holborn, 2017). This system aimed to place the state in a responsible role ensuring that the poor conditions experienced during the post-war depression would be avoided in the future (Holborn, 2017). Welfare reforms implemented by the Labour government following the Beveridge Report included family allowances (1945), the scheme for social security insurance (1946) and assistance (1948) aiming to protect workers from the risks of unemployment, and the National Health Service (1946) (Deeming, 2015). These reforms were underpinned by Keynesian principles for the government to manage the economy effectively through policy enabling full employment (Deeming, 2015). Thus, the Keynesian Welfare State was to provide security, which relied on revenues from income taxation and national insurance contributions largely financed by the working population (Deeming, 2015). The Beveridgean welfare state therefore was entirely dependent upon the unemployed actively seeking and returning to work (Deeming, 2015). The Beveridge social security system also aimed to encourage work and reduce the view that welfare benefits were 'easy handouts' (Hill and Walker, 2014). By introducing entitlements to benefits based on claimants' work records, the Beveridge system continued to make the distinction between the 'undeserving' and 'deserving' poor (Taylor-Gooby, 2013). By the late 1960s however, core debates that endure today about the affordability and the effect of the welfare state had become established (Timmins, 2017). Poor economic growth, a growing population, an anti-personal taxation stance, an increasing expenditure and rising unemployment culminated in these arguments being brought to the fore (Timmins, 2017).

Welfare Changes in the 1980s

A political backlash emerged in the late 1970s and early 1980s against state intervention in the market with a shift away from the Keynesian Welfare State to placing the market before state and society (Deeming, 2015). This ideological perspective of neo-liberalism aimed to reduce the role of the state, promote individual responsibility and increase the freedom of the market (Walker, 2014). From the 1980s onwards, the neo-liberal turn aimed to place greater emphasis on individuals, which focussed on changing the behaviour of the unemployed (Jeffery et al., 2018). Neo-liberalism was embraced by many western democracies, particularly the USA and UK, emerging from the economic situation in the 1970s of high unemployment, high inflation and slow economic growth (Harvey, 2005). The receipt of social security in Britain has almost always been dependent upon some sort of 'socially acceptable' behaviour (Larkin, 2007:299). Being involuntary unemployed and available for work has always been a condition of receiving benefits, however, the extent of conditionality accompanied with the severity of sanctions for non-compliance have increased significantly since the 1980s (Watts et al., 2014.; Deeming, 2015). Between 1979 and 1997 the Conservative government undertook a series of welfare reviews, which led to the implementation of a 'stricter benefit regime' from the late 1980s (Watts et al., 2014). The maximum penalty introduced in 1911 for non-compliance was six weeks, which lasted until 1986 when it was increased initially to 13 weeks, and subsequently 26 weeks in 1988 (Fletcher and Wright, 2017). Policies moved away from protecting incomes in favour of welfare conditionality and activation attempting to enforce work for all (Deeming, 2015). New training programmes and strategies were devised to increase job-readiness to gain employment and to promote employability (Deeming, 2015). This approach was also accompanied by the welfare goal of reducing unemployment and tackling the wider culture problem of 'worklessness' (Deeming, 2015:864).

Social Security Act 1980

The Social Security Act (No. 1) 1980 made changes to uprating obligations and the supplementary benefit scheme (Mesher, 1981). The obligation for uprating longer-term benefits in line with earnings or prices, whichever was better, was removed and were now only increased in line with prices (Mesher, 1981). The Social Security Act 1980 (No.2) implemented cuts to benefits in combination with incentives to work (Mesher, 1981). The

Social Security Act (No.2, Section 1) changed the uprating obligations further; short-term benefits (for example, sickness and unemployment) and long-term disability benefit could now be uprated up to 5 percentage points less than was otherwise required (Mesher, 1981). Consequently, in 1980 when inflation was estimated at 16.5%, uprating was at 11.5% indicating a clear cut to these benefits (Mesher, 1981). The Act also increased the number of incapacitated days to four before entitlements to sickness benefit could be gained (Mesher, 1981).

The Social Security Acts of 1986, 1988 and 1989

A series of reviews of social security provision were overseen between 1984 and 1986 by the then Secretary for State for Social Services, Rt Hon Sir Norman Fowler MP (Select Committee, 1997). Many changes contained in the Social Security Act 1986 were influenced by the Fowler Reviews such as the replacement of Supplementary Benefit by Income Support, the introduction of the Social Fund, alignment of the rules across means tested benefits, and Housing Benefit reforms (Select Committee, 1997). The 1986 Act made significant changes to means-tested benefits aiming to target those in 'genuine need', to control spending, to provide a simpler structure, to target benefits towards families with children and to improve incentives to work (Joseph Rowntree Foundation, 1994). The main changes also included a more generous Family Credit replacing Family Income Supplement for low waged working families and students aged 16 to 18 losing benefit entitlements altogether (Joseph Rowntree Foundation, 1994). Students were also excluded from claiming benefits during short holidays (National Archives, 2012). Income Support, compared to Supplementary Benefits, gave higher levels of support to older people, sick people and children, but reduced support to unemployed people (Joseph Rowntree Foundation, 1994). Those without children and the unemployed lost the most from the changes (Joseph Rowntree Foundation, 1994). The Social Security Act 1988 aimed to reduce the overall costs of social security (Farrall and Jennings, 2014). Whilst the 1989 Social Security Act aimed to incorporate a more robust testing system for those 'actively seeking work' (Atkinson and Lupton, 1990).

Jobseekers Act 1995

The 1995 Act introduced Jobseekers Allowance (JSA), which has been described as 'a defining moment in welfare state history' (Timmins, 2017:528). The unemployed were now

'jobseekers' rather than unemployed and were required to sign a 'jobseekers agreement' outlining what they would do to seek work (Timmins, 2017). The monitoring of job-seeking behaviour of unemployed recipients was intensified through JSA (Watts et al., 2014). Claimants were expected to demonstrate their work seeking activity from phone calls to job applications, and should they fail to do so they would lose their benefits (Timmins, 2017). Eligibility criteria to claim unemployment benefits were made tighter and a system of rules and penalties were introduced (Fletcher and Wright, 2017). The JSA monitoring and sanctions introduced by the Conservative government were continued by the 1997 Labour government (Watts et al., 2014).

Labour Government 1997 - 2010

The New Labour government accepted the reforms of the previous Conservative government and subsequently intensified 'responsibilisation' through further legislation (Larkin, 2007:300). It has always been seen as the responsibility of unemployed claimants to actively seek work; however, this intensified and extended to other groups during the late 1990s (Hills, 2001). Contractualism, that is work-related benefits are received upon meeting certain responsibilities and obligations, is criticized for being ineffective in terms of employment prospects but also undermine the status of the unemployed (Sage, 2012). The 'New Deal' policies, introduced by Labour in 1998, departed from the traditional role of social security redistributing provisions to support those without work and emphasized labour market participation and mandatory work-related activities (Deeming, 2015).

New Labour's 'New Deal' programmes aimed to increase long-term employability for young people, lone parents and disabled people and consisted of mandatory advice, employment, and training programmes (Finn, 2000). Extensions of New Labour's 'New Deal' programmes included sanctions for non-compliance, which extended the responsibilities for benefit claimants (Hills, 2001). If a young person rejected a New Deal employment option without a good reason they were subjected to sanctions (Finn, 2000). A first refusal resulted in a two-week benefit sanction, a second refusal resulted in a four-week sanction and a third refusal could result in a loss of benefit for up to six months (Finn, 2000). In 2001, lone parents on Income Support were expected to attend compulsory work-focused interviews (Watts et al., 2014). Under the original 'New Deal for Lone Parents' programme it was voluntary to

attend advice interviews (Hills, 2001). However, in 2001 this interview became compulsory for lone parents with children over five years old, with sanctions cut by around £10 per week if they failed to attend, although it was not compulsory to take a job (Hills, 2001). Jobcentre Plus, which replaced Jobseeker's Allowance announced prior to the 2001 election, demonstrated the trend of Blair's government to continue to increase the responsibilities of the unemployed and inactive benefit claimants by providing a work-focussed response to all benefits (Brewer et al., 2002). Working Families Tax Credits were also introduced in 2003 denoting the very low wages of some people, such that they can claim their tax back to have an effective living wage for a family (Brewer, 2003).

New Labour introduced, for the first time, legislation that linked the social security system and criminal law (Larkin 2007). Section 62 of the Child Support, Pensions, and Social Security Act (CSPSSA) 2000 gave powers to the Department for Work and Pensions through the Criminal Justice and Court Services Act 2000 to withhold means-tested or contributory benefits for up to 26 weeks should a court deem that an offender had failed to comply with their community order, despite the reasons of the breach of the order being unrelated to the social security agreement (Larkin, 2007). Larkin (2007) suggests that this 'dual punishment' targets those members of society who are most in need of state assistance in the first instance and may result in further offending. The New Labour government also continued to implement conditions and measures to monitor welfare recipients (Watts et al., 2014).

The 2006 Green Paper, *A New Deal for Welfare: empowering people to work*, noted that the 'existing system encouraged the poverty trap of welfare dependency' and focused on Incapacity Benefit claimants, older people and lone parents (Cole, 2015). In 2007, Lord Freud produced an independent report of the welfare-to-work programme and placed increased responsibility on claimants to find work underpinned by conditionality and sanctions (Cole, 2015). This was framed in the 2008 White Paper, *Raising Expectations and Increasing Support: reforming welfare for the future* (Cole, 2015). New Labour also retained the Jobseekers' Act 1995, which introduced the 'jobseeker's agreement' requiring those in receipt of JSA to demonstrate taking appropriate steps to seek paid employment and act upon any reasonable direction made by the Jobcentre (Larkin, 2007). The Jobseekers' Act 1995 also provides a set of sanctions for those deemed to have breached their agreement

(Larkin, 2007). In 2008, Lone Parent Obligations were implemented, which generally treats lone parents deemed able to work the same as JSA claimants, with some flexibility recognising the responsibilities of caring for a child (Watts et al., 2014). The Welfare Reform Act 2007 introduced Employment Support Allowance (ESA) replacing Incapacity Benefit and Income Support (only for sick and disabled people) in 2008, which embraced conditionality and sanctions for those assessed as capable of work-related activities (Welfare Reform Act, 2007; Watts et al., 2014).

Conservative-Liberal Democrat Coalition Government, 2010 - 2015

Reform of the welfare state, and the concern to reduce public spending on certain welfare benefits, was central to the Coalition government's programme from 2010 onwards (Cole, 2015). These welfare reforms expanded and intensified behavioural conditionality (Jeffery et al., 2018). Jeffery et al. (2018:798) argue that these reforms 'represent a ratcheting-up of the level of punitiveness'. Deeming (2015:864) also describes the coalition government's 'Work Programme' as 'punitive'. The coalition government's focus on overhauling the welfare system can be traced back to reports and reviews between 2006 and 2008 of the New Labour government (Cole, 2015). The Coalition government published the White Paper, *Universal Credit: welfare that works*, which set out their 'commitment to overhaul the benefit system to promote work and personal responsibility' (Cole, 2015).

The Intensification in the Use of Sanctions

In 2008, Chris Grayling, the Shadow Work and Pensions Secretary, and David Cameron, Leader of the Conservative Party, announced the Conservative Party's welfare policy (Haddon, 2012). The focus of the policy was placed on expanding payment by results for private and voluntary sector welfare-to-work programmes, increasing conditionality for benefits, and more rigorous claimant assessments (Haddon, 2012). The Coalition Agreement in 2010 between the Conservative Party and the Liberal Democrats committed to invest in the simplification of the benefits system 'in order to improve incentives to work' (DWP, 2010:6). At that time, a wide range of benefits were delivered by different departments and the new system intended to integrate these together (DWP, 2010). Income Support, Jobseekers Allowance and Employment Support Allowance were delivered through Jobcentre Plus; Housing Benefit and Council Tax Benefit were delivered by Local Authorities; Disability

Living Allowance and Carer's Allowance by the Pension, Disability and Carers Service; and, Working Tax Credit, supporting certain low-paid workers and makes provision for childcare, were paid by HM Revenue & Customs (DWP, 2010). In 2010, Iain Duncan Smith, the Secretary of State for Work and Pensions, announced the introduction of Universal Credit (UC) under the Coalition government highlighting the need to reform the welfare system as previous governments had,

'stood by as economic growth bypassed the worst off and welfare dependency took root in communities up and down the country, breeding hopelessness and intergenerational poverty' (Duncan Smith, Gov.uk, 2010:1).

Duncan Smith also noted that '*we are developing sanctions for those who refuse to play by the rules*' (DWP, 2010). UC, legislated for in The Welfare Reform Act 2012, was first introduced in the North West of England in 2013, and gradually expanded nationally from 2014 onwards (Taylor-Gooby and Taylor, 2015). UC was introduced as an 'integrated working-age credit' providing 'a basic allowance with additional elements for children, disability, housing and caring' aiming to support those in and out of work (DWP, 2010:3). Those who are deemed 'work shy' or lack adequate 'work ethic' now face 'Mandatory Work Activity' (Deeming, 2015).

Since 1996, welfare reform has been pursued by all three major political parties (Fletcher and Wright, 2017). Welfare conditionality has intensified over time taking a more punitive turn in 2012 with the introduction of harsh sanctions and minimal mandatory support (Fletcher and Wright, 2017). Conditionality is defined in the *Universal Credit White Paper 2010* (DWP, 2010:24) as,

'Individuals who are able to look for or prepare for work should be required to do so as a condition of receiving benefit, and those who fail to meet their responsibilities should face a financial sanction.'

Conditionality, supported by sanctions, has featured in the British welfare system since the late 1980s (Reeve, 2017). In 2010, the Coalition government implemented plans set in

motion by the previous Labour government for welfare system reform placing conditionality and individual responsibility at its centre (Reeve, 2017). The Coalition government increased conditionality and sanctions through the use of fixed length sanctions, varied length sanctions and entitlement sanctions (Watts et al., 2014). Eligibility for state support requires claimants to comply with certain forms of conditions, which require them to behave in a certain way in order to receive welfare goods (Watts et al., 2014; Reeve, 2017). Behavioural conditions are integral to Universal Credit and are generally enforced through the use of sanctions that may reduce, suspend or cease access to benefits (Watts et al., 2014).

In 2012, the maximum sanction increased to the complete withdrawal of benefits for three years for 'high level non-compliance', and the 'Work-Related Activity Group' (WRAG) of Employment Support Allowance (ESA) claimants faced an open-ended sanction of complete loss of benefits (Watts et al., 2014). The Department for Work and Pensions (DWP) acknowledges the central role that conditionality plays in the current welfare system, noting that UC intends to provide a 'clear financial incentive...backed up by a strong system of conditionality' with unemployed people required 'to take all reasonable steps to find and move into employment' (DWP, 2010:4). 'Strengthened conditionality' supports a system of financial sanctions generating 'greater incentives for people to meet their responsibilities' (DWP, 2010:4). The 'full service' rollout of UC, which involves transferring those receiving existing benefits onto UC, was expected to be complete by the end of 2018 (Webster, 2017).

Universal Credit Conditions and Requirements

The core structure of UC consists of 'Responsibilities', 'Commitments', 'Sanctions', 'Fulltime Work Search', 'Conditionality' and 'Opening up work and Taper' (DWP, 2018a). Recipient's *responsibilities* entail completing work-search activities for up to 35 hours per week, completing a bespoke *Commitment* with a work coach, paying their own rent, financial management and budgeting, and if a claimant is working part-time and able to earn more than they are expected to seek additional work and increase their earnings. As noted in the *Universal Credit White Paper 2010* (DWP, 2010:24) 'requirements will be placed on some individuals and will introduce tougher sanctions to ensure recipients meet their responsibilities'.

The claimant *Commitment* should be devised with the work coach which states what the claimant has agreed to do in preparation of work, in seeking work, or in order to increase earnings (DWP, 2010). Claimants can be sanctioned if they fail to meet one or more of the responsibilities stated in their commitment; this can result in UC payments being reduced for a set period, increasing the more times that requirements are not met (DWP, 2010). The *Commitment*, an increase in terms of conditionality on the Job Seeker's Agreement introduced in 1995, includes details of the claimant's work availability and work-seeking activity (Jeffery et al, 2018).

A claimant is allocated to one of the following four conditionality groups dependent on the circumstances and capabilities of the claimant: *All work-related requirements* where claimants are to take all reasonable action to prepare for, secure, be available for work or for better paid work; *Work-focused-interview and work-preparation requirements only* where claimants are expected to undertake actions to increase likelihood of obtaining paid work, more paid work or better paid work, prepare for work and partake in work focused interviews; *Work focused Interviews requirements only* in which claimants are expected to start work in the future, attend periodic interviews at the Job Centre to plan for work; or the *No work-related activity requirement* (DWP, 2018a). Once a claimant is allocated to one of the conditionality groups, they are allocated to one of six Labour Market Regimes: *Intensive Work Search Regime* is for claimants who are not working and those working but earning very low amounts who are expected to take intensive action to secure work or work more; *Light Touch Regime* apply to those earning but assessed as needing to earn more; *Work Preparation Regime* concerns those who are expected to work in the future but not currently; *Work-Focused Interviews* apply to those expected to work in the future but are currently carers; *No Work-Related Requirements Regime* apply to those not expected to work at present, such as those who are too sick, responsible carer or have children under 1; and the *Working Enough Regime* (Data Parliament, 2017).

Benefit claimants can be subject to four sanction levels should they 'fail to meet their responsibilities' ranging from Lowest Level to Higher Level (DWP, 2010:24). Until November 2019, the 'Higher Level' sanctioned recipients for three months for their first sanction escalating to three years by their third sanction (DWP, 2018a). In November 2019, the

Department for Work and Pensions reduced the length of higher-level sanctions amending the Jobseeker's Allowance Regulations 1996, the Universal Credit Regulations 2013 and the Jobseeker's Allowance Regulations 2013 to a maximum length of 182 days or 26 weeks (DWP, 2019). The DWP (2019) acknowledged that the significant negative consequences of disengagement from employment support and increased financial hardship for claimants subject to three-year sanctions outweighed any the potential incentives (DWP, 2019). However, Webster (2019) notes that this change will only affect a very small number of claimants as the number of claimants receiving higher-level sanctions is possibly in the hundreds. Whereas those having their benefits removed for longer than six months is much larger as some sanctions apply until compliance and are subsequently followed by a fixed period sanction (Webster, 2019). There were 26,574 UC claimants affected by these long sanctions between November 2016 and August 2019, 6,197 for JSA over six years from April 2013 to March 2019, and 6,740 for ESA from June 2013 to March 2019 (Webster, 2019). 'Medium level' sanctions range from 28 days to three months, 'Low Level' sanctions can last until the claimant does the sanctioned activity or time-limited sanctions range from seven days to 28 days, and the 'Lowest Level' sanction last until the claimant takes part in the sanctionable activity (DWP, 2018a). Sanctions can be implemented for a failure to comply with their 'responsibilities' ranging from a failure to apply for a particular job when told to do so, refusal of a job offer, a failure to take all reasonable actions to find paid work/increase earnings or a failure to be available for work or attend interviews (DWP, 2018a). On receiving a sanction, recipients are eligible to apply for a hardship grant should they be unable to pay for rent, heating, food and/or hygiene on condition that they carry out the activity for which they have been sanctioned (DWP, 2018a). Additionally, they must prove they have done everything reasonable to look for work in the seven days preceding the sanction and show that they have tried to find money from somewhere else first (DWP, 2018a). Hardship grants are repaid through UC payments resulting in lower UC payments until the hardship payment is repaid (DWP, 2018a).

In July 2019, 1.9 million claimants were exposed to the risk of sanctions split between Universal Credit, Jobseekers Allowance, Employment Support Allowance and Income Support (Webster, 2019). The severity of the benefit sanctions regime increased significantly under the Coalition government (Webster, 2014). In the twelve months to July 2019 there were a

total of 210,000 sanctions (before challenges) on all benefits comprising of 195,000 UC sanctions, 9,000 JSA sanctions, 8,000 ESA sanctions and 5,700 IS sanctions, with UC sanctions accounting for 92.5% of all sanctions (Webster, 2019). This is greatly reduced from the peak of 1,113,000 sanctions (before challenges) reached in 2013 (Webster, 2019). Homeless Link, a national charity in England, indicates that benefit sanctions and subsequent financial hardship has resulted in some individuals using food banks more frequently, which may have also increased begging (Waugh and Pidd, 2014). Wickham et al. (2020) examined the impact of Universal Credit on 52,187 individuals of working age (16-64 years old) in England, Scotland and Wales between 2009 and 2018 using longitudinal survey data from the Understanding Society UK Longitudinal Household Panel Study. They found that psychological distress increased following the introduction of Universal Credit by 6.57 percentage points relative to the comparison group. Food bank use has grown dramatically over the past fifteen years (Trussell Trust, 2020). In 2005/6 around 3,000 people received three-day emergency food supplies, by 2010/11 this had risen to just over 61,000, by 2013-14 around 900,000 people received food, which peaked at 1,583,668 people in 2018/19 (Trussell Trust, 2020). A 2017 report found that the main drivers for food bank use to be benefit delays (2 in 5 people awaiting a payment and around a third of delays were for Employment Support Allowance recipients), sharp rises in housing costs or food expenses, and low income or loss of income (Loopstra and Lalor, 2017).

The Work and Pensions Committee (2018:3) noted that the Welfare Reform Act 2012 'have made sanctions longer, more severe and applicable to more people than ever before'. For some people, the current welfare system dominated by conditionality and sanctions, has resulted in increased poverty, destitution and 'survival crime' (Welfare Conditionality Project, 2018:18). Some claimants, particularly those with additional vulnerabilities, such as drug and alcohol dependencies and homelessness, withdraw from the welfare system all together (Welfare Conditionality Project, 2018). A five-year study followed 481 social security recipients over a two-year period in England and Scotland found that there was little evidence that welfare conditionality increased motivation to prepare for or enter paid employment (Welfare Conditionality Project, 2018). Some recipients became destitute, resorted to survival crime and experienced ill health, and sanctions frequently resulted in negative personal, financial and health consequences (Welfare Conditionality Project, 2018).

Conditionality and Criminalisation

Fletcher and Wright (2017:3) draw on Wacquant's (2009) observations of the American welfare system and its emergence of a neo-liberal state that prioritises corporations and the wealthy and is coercive and authoritarian towards those in poverty. Wacquant (2009) argues that welfare policies are 'informed by the same behaviourist philosophy' as penal policy incorporating 'deterrence, surveillance and graduated sanctions in order to modify behaviour' (Fletcher and Wright, 2017:4). Fletcher and Wright suggest that Wacquant's (2009) argument that supervision and correction within the US welfare system criminalises claimants also applies to the British system with the introduction of the UC Claimant Commitment, coercive self-help, the lack of support, and the Universal Jobmatch System. Additionally, they argue that 'coercive behaviouralism' in Britain can be traced back to the high levels of unemployment in the 1980s leading the Conservative government reviewing the welfare system and implementing a more punitive benefit regime (p5). The JSA Agreement introduced 'behavioural conditionality' whereby claimants had to negotiate a mandatory back-to-work plan with an advisor, along with completing mandatory Jobsearch activities and diaries documenting all jobsearch activities (Fletcher and Wright, 2017:5). Fletcher and Wright suggest that since the introduction of JSA the 'surveillance and correction' of benefit claimants has increased significantly (p8). The Claimant Commitment, replacing JSA Agreements in 2013-14 for out-of-work UC, JSA and ESA-WRAG claimants, expects claimants to document back to work plans, which can be used to sanction claimants should they not comply with any elements of the plan (Fletcher and Wright, 2017). 'Discretionary authority' by the work advisor allows for 'variable coercion' due to the claimant being instructed or sanctioned by the advisor (Fletcher and Wright, 2017:9). The Universal Jobmatch System allows work coaches to monitor online activity, such as what jobs they have applied for, and can sanction claimants as a result of information obtained via this surveillance (Fletcher and Wright, 2017). Fletcher and Wright also argue that deterrence is evident in Discretionary Mandatory Work Activity, introduced in 2011 and part of UC, on the basis of 'a month's full time activity can be a real deterrent for some people who are either not trying or who are gaming the system' (Grayling quoted in Fletcher and Wright, 2017). There are also noticeable parallels between the use of 'requirements' for both offenders (NOMS, 2015) and UC claimants (DWP, 2018a). Offenders are sentenced to a range of 'requirements' dependent on their identified criminogenic needs (NOMS, 2015), whilst UC

claimants are allocated to 'requirement groups' dependent on their circumstances (DWP, 2018a). Failure to comply with the requirements in both cases results in breach action being taken (NOMS, 2015) or sanctioning (DWP, 2018a). Additionally, both systems contain specific frameworks; under UC, a claimant is allocated to a Labour Market Regime whereby claimants are expected to meet certain responsibilities (Data Parliament, 2017), whilst a tiering framework is applied to offenders dependent on their risk level (National Probation Service, n.d.). Fraser (1989:45) points to Foucault's observation of 'normalising-disciplinary power', which 'operates quietly' but 'continuously, penetratingly and ubiquitously' and is 'dispersed throughout the entire social body'.

3.2.3. Political Discourse

From the mid-1970s, the term 'scrounger' grew to symbolize moral degeneration (Mesher, 1981). Hill and Walker (2014:97) argue that between 1979 and 1991, the Conservative government expanded this division through a 'rhetorical onslaught' aimed at welfare recipients accompanied with increasingly intensive measures enacted in the welfare system. Rhetoric sustained towards welfare and its recipients throughout this period consisted of arguments that poverty was not problematic, and that people must take more responsibility to help themselves (Hill and Walker, 2014).

The discourse used by the Conservative government in the 1980s has similarities with the social values expressed in Victorian Poor Law, which strongly supported personal responsibility (Andrews and Jacob, 1990). On coming into office, the 1979 Conservative government had clear intentions to reduce public expenditure and state intervention (Andrews and Jacob, 1990),

'I came to office with one deliberate intent: to change Britain from a dependent to a self-reliant society; from a give-it-to-me nation; a get-up-and-go instead of a sit-back-and-wait-for-it Britain'. (Margaret Thatcher, speech to the Small Businesses Bureau, 1984, in Andrews and Jacob, 1990:3).

'Welfare benefits, distributed with little or no consideration of their effects on behaviour, encouraged illegitimacy, facilitated the breakdown of families, and

replaced incentives favouring work and self-reliance with perverse encouragement for idleness and cheating' (Margaret Thatcher in *Woman's Own*, 31 October 1987, in Hill and Walker, 2014:97)

The Conservative government of the 1980s blamed welfare for encouraging idleness and discouraging private savings and thrift (Andrews and Jacob, 1990). This attitude was emphasized in the 1979 Conservative manifesto with phrases such as 'restoring the will to work', 'restore incentives so that hard work pays', 'concentrating welfare services...on those in real need' and 'act more vigorously against fraud and abuse' (Conservative Party Manifesto, 1979). As unemployment rose from 1.5 to 3 million during the first two years of the Conservative government's period in office so did the hostility towards 'scroungers' and 'handouts' (Andrews and Jacob, 1990:5). Phrases such as 'in genuine need' were common, as was the idea that the explanation for unemployment was individualistic (Walker, 1993, in Hill and Walker, 2014:93). Unfavourable statements directed towards welfare and its recipients, such as the idea that welfare was 'encouragement for idleness and cheating' maintained hostility towards welfare (Hill and Walker, 2014:97).

This type of discourse did not end with a change of Government, however. On becoming Prime Minister in 1997 Tony Blair, the leader of the Labour Party, declared that the welfare state was 'associated with fraud, abuse, laziness, a dependency culture, and social irresponsibility encouraged by welfare dependency' (Bove, 2014: 114). In 2000, following the 1998 Green Paper, *Beating Fraud Is Everyone's Business*, a national campaign against benefit fraud was launched, 'Targeting Benefit Fraud: Everyone's Business', using television and posters to promote this message (Bove, 2014). At the time the campaign was the most expensive campaign ever costing £4.8 million in its first phase and £27.3 million between 2006 and 2009 (Bove, 2014). It appeared on television, in newspapers, posters, radio and ATM screens as well as appearing in Spain, the Costa del Sol and the Canary Islands with whistle blowers' hotlines being opened (Bove, 2014).

In reference to Labour's New Deal policies, Tony Blair pronounced in 1999 that welfare should be 'a hand up, not a hand out' (Green, 2014). Blair (1997) commented that 'Behind

the statistics lie households where three generations have never had a job'. New Labour's HM Treasury Pre-budget Report (2002 in MacDonald et al., 2014) noted that,

'Rising concentrations of worklessness...is no longer the exception, but the norm. Households that have experienced generations of unemployment often develop a cultural expectation of worklessness'.

More recently in 2011, Iain Duncan Smith (previous UK Minister for Work and Pensions) asserted that young people are not interested in working due to seeing 'their parents, their neighbours and their entire community sit on benefits for life' (MacDonald et al., 2014:3). Chris Grayling, as Minister for Work and Pensions, also noted in 2011 that 'there are four generations of families where no-one has ever had a job' (MacDonald, 2013:200). Universal Credit's aim to reform welfare also noted the problem of 'children growing up in homes where no one works' and worklessness is repeated 'through the generations' (DWP, 2010:3, in MacDonald, 2014:3). Despite these claims, the idea of intergenerational worklessness was dismissed by MacDonald et al. (2014:2; MacDonald, 2013) who failed to locate families 'where no-one in three generations has ever worked'. When Iain Duncan Smith was asked to justify his references to intergenerational worklessness, he conceded that his remarks were based on personal observations due to statistical information not being available (Macmillan, 2013).

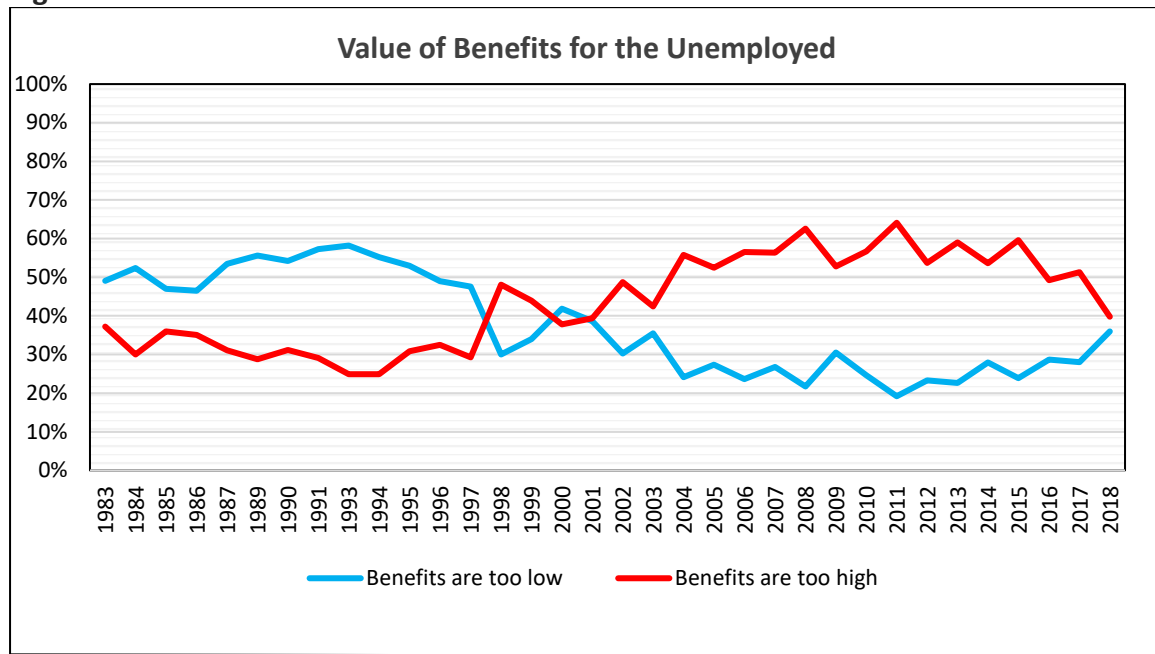
This discourse continues to be entrenched in modern day politics, with repeated distinctions made between 'stivers and shirkers' in ministerial statements (Taylor-Gooby, 2013). 'Work-based welfare' became a dominant discourse under David Cameron's government (Hill and Walker, 2014:94). The Conservative's political slogan at the 2013 Party Conference, under Cameron, was 'For hardworking people' (Landale, 2013). The Coalition government tended to blame the individual, their behaviour and pathology for being 'shirkers' and 'lazy' (Pantazis, 2016). Whilst the structural deficiencies of the benefit systems itself was blamed for encouraging dependency, this was accompanied by media articles often focusing on benefit claimants cheating the system (Pantazis, 2016).

3.2.4. Trends in Public Attitudes Towards Welfare Recipients

Until 2014, attitudes towards benefit recipients were possibly at their most punitive ever (McKay, 2014), however, recent British Social Attitudes data shows attitudes are softening (BSAS, 2019; Harding, 2017). Baumberg (2012) argues that attitudes change through an interplay between perceptions of welfare deservingness, institutions, credible and persuasive discourse, and have a temporal dimension. The British Social Attitudes Survey has been tracking and assessing attitudes to the welfare state and its recipients since 1983 with increasing negative responses identified over the decades (Baumberg et al., 2012). This section will present the British Social Attitudes Survey (BSAS) questions most relevant to exploring the attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants to analyse trends towards welfare claimants over time.

Firstly, general opinions about the value of benefits for unemployed people have changed markedly since the early 1980s (Figure 3.7). When the British Social Attitudes Survey first explored attitudes towards the value of unemployment benefits in 1983, 49% thought that benefits were too low and caused hardship compared to 37% believing that they were too high and discouraged people from finding a job. As shown by Figure 3.7. below, attitudes started to change around 1997, and from 2001 onwards those who believe benefits are too high has remained the most dominant response. Notably however, those who believe that benefits are too high and discourage people from finding a job has decreased by 20 percent since 2015.

Figure 3.7. Public attitudes: Value of benefits 1983 – 2018.



Source: BSAS 1983-2018.

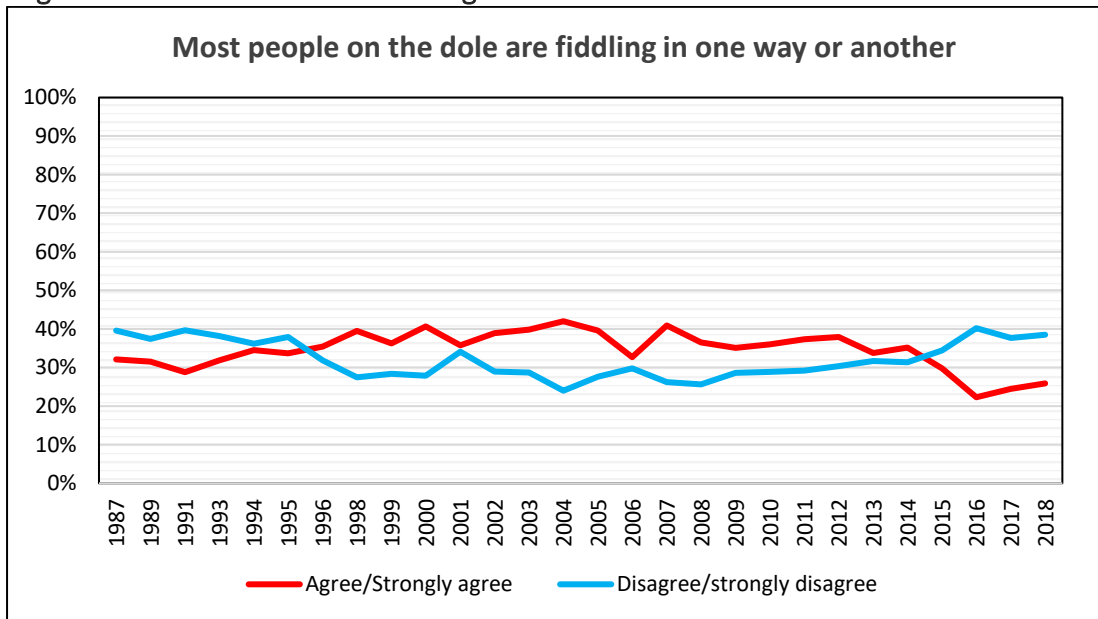
Analysis of the 2016 British Social Attitudes survey found that the British public believe tax avoidance is not unusual (de Vries and Reeves, 2017). Approximately a third of taxpayers are assumed to have exploited a tax loophole (de Vries and Reeves, 2017). In terms of legally avoiding paying tax, 48% of people believed that it is ‘usually or always wrong’, whereas more than 60% of people believe that it is ‘usually or always wrong’ for benefit recipients to use legal loopholes to claim more benefits (de Vries and Reeves, 2017). De Vries and Reeves (2017) argue that this discrepancy can be observed in the priorities of successive Conservative-led governments who have built their argument for austerity with entrenched negative attitudes towards benefit recipients. As Prime Minister and Chancellor, both David Cameron and George Osborne repeatedly framed ‘hardworking people’ and benefit claimants in opposition to each other whilst promoting spending cuts (de Vries and Reeves, 2017). Whilst there has been some discussion regarding addressing tax avoidance by the wealthy, little has been achieved, whereas changes to welfare legislation changes have been both fast and significant (de Vries and Reeves, 2017).

Most people on the dole are fiddling in one way or another

When the British Social Attitudes Survey first explored attitudes towards ‘*most people on the dole are fiddling in one way or another*’ in 1987, 40% disagreed compared to 32% who were

in agreement, as shown in Figure 3.8. below. In 1996, this attitude started to shift with 35% in agreement that most people are fiddling the dole compared to 32% in disagreement. This trend endured until 2015 when those in disagreement (34%) outweighed those who agreed for the first time since 1995. Since 2015 those in disagreement with this statement have continued to outweigh those in agreement.

Figure 3.8. Public Attitudes: Fiddling the dole 1987 – 2018.

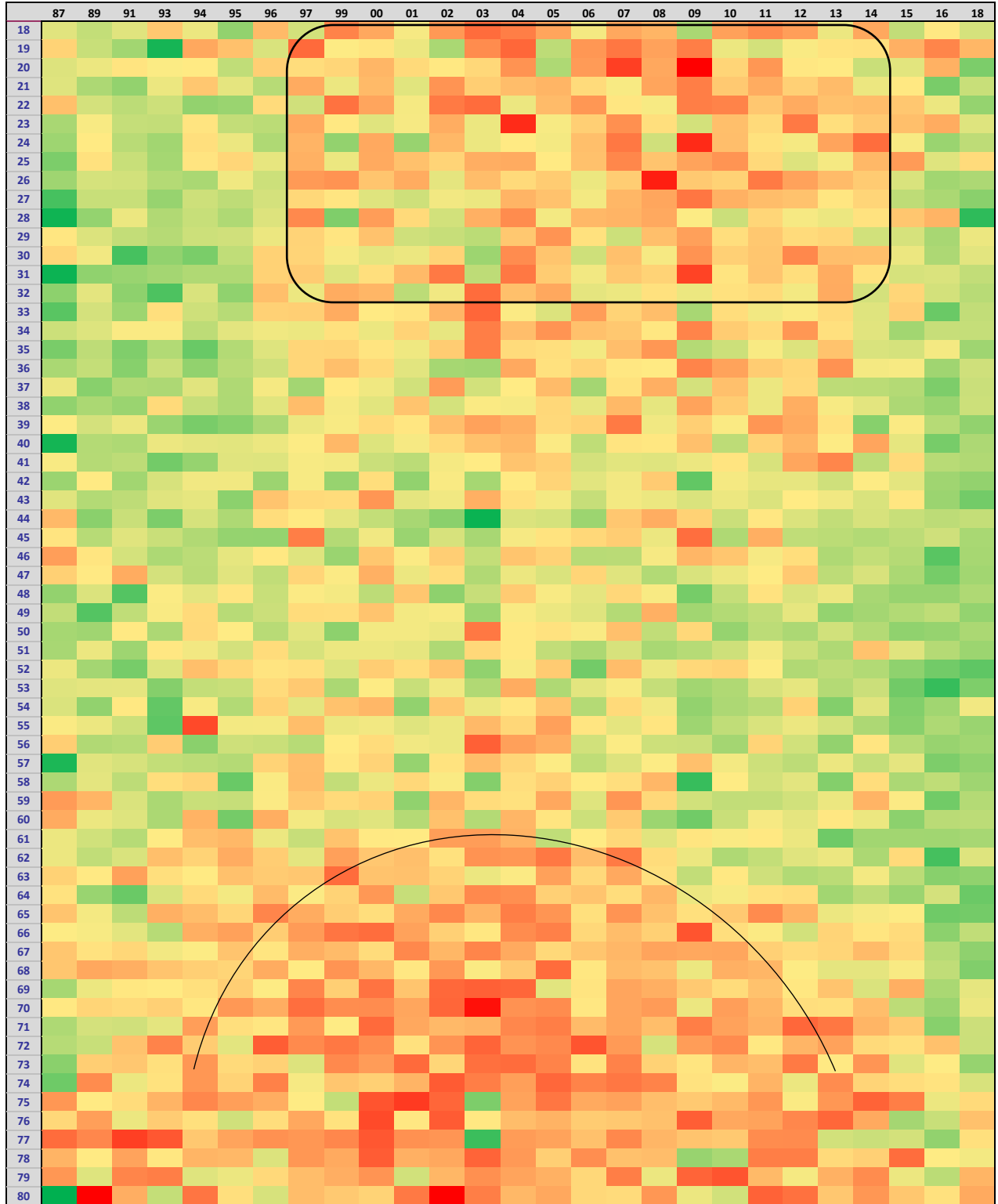


Source: BSAS 1987-2018

Figure 3.9. explores responses to ‘most people on the dole are fiddling in one way or another’ by using conditional formatting. This analyses the data in more detail showing trends in attitudes by age over time. The colours depict the mean for each age and year, with red being the most punitive responses, green the least punitive and yellow showing middle values. Importantly, green does not necessarily mean those in disagreement, but rather less punitive responses compared to the other values. The highest value (least punitive mean score) is 3.80 and the lowest value (the most punitive mean score) is 2. These scores range from 1 (Strongly agree) to 5 (Strongly disagree). The table shows that until the mid-1990s, punitive attitudes generally increased with age. From the mid-1990s onwards, it appears to be the mid-age groups, those in their mid-40s, who appear to hold less punitive views than both younger and older age groups, shown by the green and yellow shading. Additionally, younger age groups appear to have become more likely to believe that people on benefits are ‘fiddling’ than their respective age groups in the late 1980s and early 1990s, shown by the

increase in redder shading. Although, punitive views towards those who are believed to be 'fiddling' appear to have lessened for most age groups in recent years as shown by the increase in green shades.

Figure 3.9. Conditional Formatting: Most people on the dole are fiddling, 1987 to 2018 by age



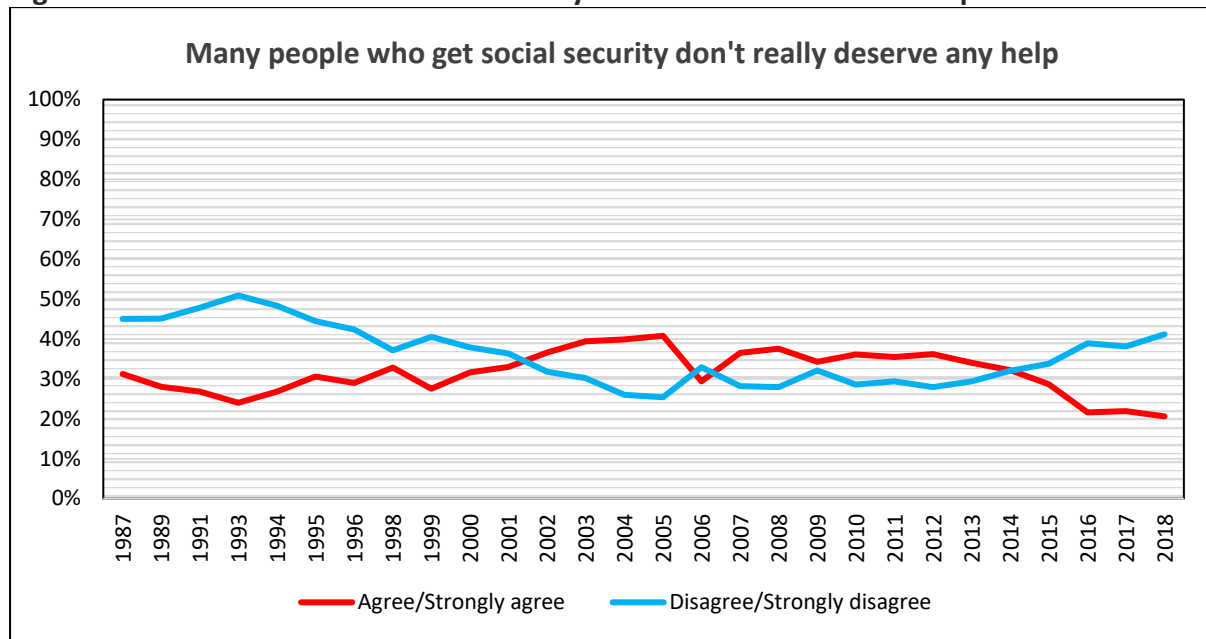
Source: BSAS 1987-2018

Many people who get social security don't really deserve any help

The British Social Attitudes Survey has tracked responses to '*Many people who get social security don't really deserve any help*' since 1987. In 2012, Turn2Us, a national charity aiming to help people in financial hardship access welfare benefits, alternative financial support, and support services, commissioned research to assess the impact of stigma and other social influences on applying for benefits (Baumberg et al., 2012). The research used data from an original Ipsos MORI survey, focus groups with claimants and non-claimants, re-analysis of existing survey data and analysis of national newspaper articles about benefits from 1995 to 2011. They found that benefits stigma, that is claiming benefits leads to embarrassment and shame and results in a lower social status, is driven primarily by whether claimants are seen as 'undeserving' (Baumberg et al., 2012:3). People viewed claimants as 'deserving' if need was evident along with claimants showing a level of personal responsibility for their own situation (Baumberg et al., 2012:3). Baumberg et al. (2012) suggest that political attitudes, possibly linked to media coverage, influence whether people are viewed as deserving or undeserving. The study found that the public viewed claimants as less deserving than they did 20 years previously, and the public are more likely to say that claimants don't deserve help and that people in need are lazy. McKay (2014) suggests that the UK is significantly more hostile to benefit recipients than many other European country. The European Social Survey in 2008 asked people from 29 countries whether they agreed or disagreed that *social benefits and services make people lazy*. The UK, closely followed by Ireland, had the most negative attitudes with over 60% of respondents believing that benefits make people lazy (McKay, 2014).

Figure 3.10. below shows a very similar trend to the question analysed in Figure 3.8. When the question was first posed in 1987, the majority were in disagreement (45%) that 'many people who get social security don't really deserve any help' compared to those in agreement (31%). This remained the case, albeit with a decreasing amount of support, until 2002, when those believing that those who receive social security are undeserving became the dominant response (37% in agreement compared to 32% in disagreement). This generally remained the case, except for a brief attitudinal shift in 2006, until 2015 when those in disagreement (34%) outnumbered those in agreement (29%).

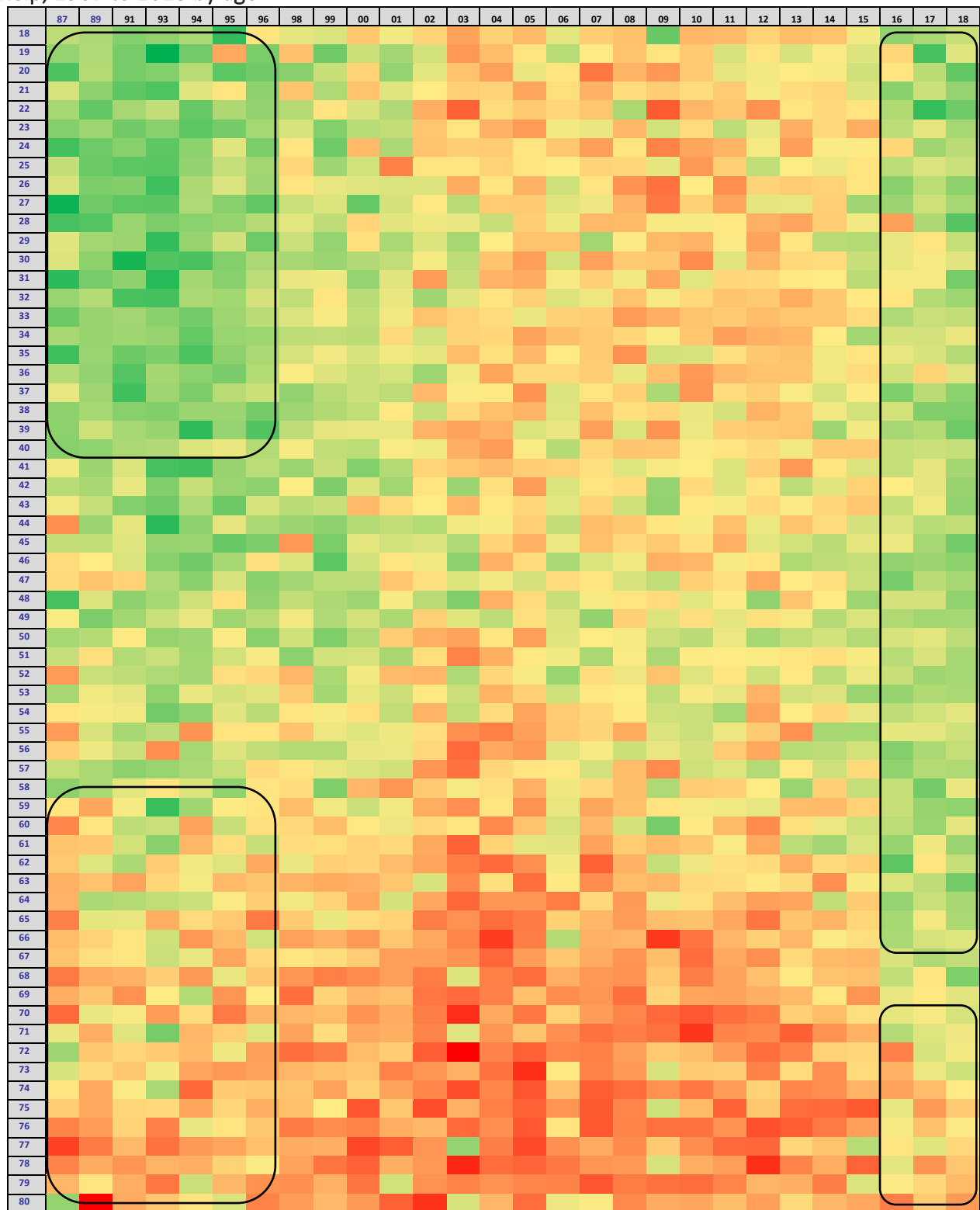
Figure 3.10. Public attitudes: Social security claimants don't deserve help 1987 – 2018.



Source: BSAS 1987-2018

Again, Figure 3.11. uses conditional formatting to analyse attitudinal trends in age over time towards those believing that social security claimants don't deserve any help. The highest value (least punitive mean score) is 3.91 and the lowest value (the most punitive mean score) is 2. These scores range from 1 (Strongly agree) to 5 (Strongly disagree). Until the mid-1990s, attitudes towards welfare claimants hardened with age, with the youngest age groups being more lenient than the older age groups. Attitudes began to shift in the early 2000s with the youngest and oldest ages appear to hold more punitive views than those in their mid-40s, although this is less pronounced than for 'fiddling' the dole (see Figure 3.9.). Again, punitive attitudes have decreased over recent years, as shown by influx of greener shades over most ages, apart from the oldest.

Figure 3.11. Conditional Formatting: Many people who get social security don't really deserve help, 1987 to 2018 by age



Source: BSAS 1987-2018

3.2.5. Summary

This chapter began by reviewing the history of responses to disadvantaged people. Contemporary responses show an increase over time in legislation that has increased conditionality, responsibility and sanctions for benefit recipients. These sanctions have resulted in negative outcomes for some claimants increasing financial difficulties, hardship and resorting to 'survival crime'. The chapter then sought to explore political discourse towards welfare claimants over time, which shows that since the early 1980s negative descriptors and depictions of welfare claimants have become embedded in modern day politics, regardless of the party in government. Finally, trends in public attitudes were presented drawing on British Social Attitudes survey data from the 1980s. This generally shows a hardening of attitudes over time, although in the last few years these attitudes have started to soften. It appears that over time, it is the younger and older age groups that are less supportive of welfare claimants, with those around their mid-40s holding less punitive views. Punitiveness towards welfare claimants has been channelled through policies, which have increased the use of sanctions for those who break the rules. This punitiveness is also apparent in public attitudes towards welfare claimants suggesting that politics and policy may influence how the public form their attitudes. While there are long-term repeated measures of social attitudes towards those who claim welfare support, there are no survey questions currently that measure punitiveness as proposed by this study. The next subchapter will now turn the attention to long-term trajectories toward rulebreaking school pupils.

Chapter 3.3. The long-term trajectories of punitiveness towards rulebreakers in the education system: Government policies, political discourse, and public sentiment

3.3.1. Introduction

Concerns about ‘standards’, ‘accountability’ and ‘control of education’ became important political issues in the 1970s given prominence by circumstances in the William Tyndale Junior and Infant School in North London between 1973 and 1975 (Demaine, 2002:7). The school was criticized for its progressive didactic approach giving pupils the freedom to choose when to work and play and was accused of denying its pupils academic progress (Davis, 2002). The coverage of the events at William Tyndale School gave rise to concerns that the government had lost control of education (Demaine, 2002). James Callaghan’s speech as Prime Minister at Ruskin College in 1976 (see Callaghan, 1977:11) called for a discussion about ‘the purpose’ and ‘standards’ of education in public schools and has been cited as setting the context for subsequent reforms (Demaine, 2002; Gibb, 2016). Whilst the central government had ultimate control over education, the Education Act (1944) had given Local Education Authorities much of the responsibility for managing schools (Demaine, 2002). The Taylor Report, *A New Partnership for Our Schools (1977)* commissioned by the Labour Party, sought to increase the means by which schools could be made accountable for their actions and set the context for subsequent reforms made by the Conservative Party when they arrived in office (Demaine, 2002). Since the 1980s, the education system has been criticised by government for a range of social problems (Dorey, 2014). Government discourse, commencing in the early 1980s, has consistently focused on the failings of education, which has enabled extensive policy reforms driven by market principles to be implemented (Dorey, 2014). This chapter reviews political discourse, government policies, and trends in public attitudes since the 1980s, arguing that over time each of these areas has become increasingly punitive towards rulebreaking school pupils.

3.3.2. The Corporal Punishment Debate

Since the 1980s, the education system has been criticised by government for a range of social problems, such as anti-social behaviour, excessive liberalness and growing truancy, which has involved a political rhetoric of teachers ‘failing pupils’ by being incapable of maintaining classroom discipline (Dorey, 2014:109). Government discourse, which commenced during the

1980s, focused on the failings of education enabling the implementation of extensive policy reforms driven by market principles and managerial authority over professionals (Dorey, 2014). Since the 1980s, teacher's authority has been frequently undermined by politicians who have often commented that bad behaviour is the fault of poor teaching skills (Dorey, 2014). Dunn (2007) notes that during New Labour's second term 'anti-social behaviour' was imported from the criminal justice system in educational discourses.

Punishment is a central strategy commonly used for disciplining school pupils' poor behaviour in the British education system (Gov.uk, 2018) evident throughout history (Parker-Jenkins, 1999). Government discourse placing emphasis on punishment and discipline is commonplace (Gov.uk, 2018; Conservative Manifesto, 2010). Corporal punishment, 'the intentional application of physical pain as a method of changing behaviour' (Greydanus et al., 2003:385), has a long history dating back to ancient civilizations in Rome where prisoners and slaves were flogged (Garrisi, 2015). Physical punishments in the UK, such as flogging, were used for hundreds of years to punish criminals, soldiers and children (Lambert, 2016; Middleton, 2008). Flogging was legalized by the Mutiny Act 1689 as a form of military punishment in the 17th Century, and 'whippings' and 'a thousand lashes' were common punishments throughout the 17th and 18th Century (Garrisi, 2015). However, these types of physical punishments were abolished for all members of society in the 19th Century, apart from for school children (Lambert, 2016).

Historically, the physical punishment of children by their parents was a disciplinary tool transferred to teachers in both private and state education (Parker-Jenkins, 1999). Corporal punishment was a key punishment used to regulate pupil behaviour, which could involve 'hitting, spanking, shoving' and the use of objects, such as, belts and sticks (Greydanus et al., 2003:385). Corporal punishment had a lengthy history as a much-valued element of the educational process encouraging children to behave at school and motivate them in their studies (Middleton, 2008). Whilst children in England and Wales were generally punished with a cane or belt, in Scotland the tawse, a leather whip with the end split into two tails, was used to physically punish children (Middleton, 2008). The use of corporal punishment in schools was challenged in 1982 when two Scottish mothers took their case to the European Court of Human Rights (see *Campbell and Cosans v. The United Kingdom* (1982) 4 E.H.R.R.

293), which supported their view that 'beating children against a parent's wishes was a violation of their human rights (Bainham, 1999). This case lay the foundations for the change in law in the UK (Gould, 2007) whereby corporal punishment was legislated against in 1987 (see Education Act, 1986).

The Conservative government responded to the judgement by the European Court of Human Rights by proposing the Education (Corporal Punishment) Bill 1985, which would allow pupils to be the subject of corporal punishment if parents agreed to it (HC Deb 28 January 1985). The Conservative government's Secretary of State for Education and Science, Sir Keith Joseph, opposed 'forcing abolition' of corporal punishment in schools, and cited a newspaper poll in England and Wales of teachers where more than half were in favour of its retention (HC Deb 28 January 1985). The Conservative government's argument also highlighted the European Court of Human Right's judgement that the issue at hand was not the banning of corporal punishment, but the parental right to exempt their child from such punishment (HC Deb 28 January 1985). Despite these protests, this proposed Bill was not supported in Parliament in 1985 with 298 votes against it (168 in favour) (HC Deb 28 January 1985). In July 1986, corporal punishment in state schools was voted against in Parliament with a vote of 231 (230 in favour) and was legislated against in the UK in 1986 (see Education Act, 1986) (Gould, 2007) with the use of corporal punishment in state schools becoming illegal in 1987 (Institute of Education, 1989).

The idea of the power to physically punish school children for misbehaviour was not forgotten, however. The fear of violence of young people, which was prominent following the murder of two-year-old James Bulger by two ten-year olds, re-emerged in 1997 with the murder of Headteacher Phillip Lawrence by a school pupil (Reed, 2003). The matter of corporal punishment subsequently arose again in the Houses of Parliament in January 1997 with a proposed amendment (Clause 5) to the Education Bill: 'Corporal Punishment Lawful with Parental Consent' (HC Deb 28 January 1997). Clause 5 was a proposal to provide an alternative to a fixed term school exclusion, giving the parent a choice of opting for corporal punishment instead of the exclusion (HC Deb 28 January 1997). Mr James Pawsey, a Conservative MP, reported a headmaster's belief that having caned 'young thugs at the right time' he had saved 'four or five of them from a life of crime' (HC Deb 28 January 1997). Mr

Pawsey also emphasized the need for ‘reasonable punishment’ to control the ‘degree of disruption that is taking place’ in schools (HC Deb 28 January 1997). Conservative MP, John Carlisle, added to the debate suggesting that ‘a short, sharp shock type of treatment’ is needed and ‘punishment requires physical pain’ (HC Deb 28 January 1997). Once again, despite these protests, the amendment was voted against by 376 (101 in favour) (HC Deb 28 January 1997).

The right of professionals to physically restrain ‘problematic’ children is however still prevalent in Youth Offender Institutions (YOI) (Allison and Hattenstone, 2016). In 2015, there were approximately 850 children (under 18s) in custody in England and Wales with 429 injuries occurring as a result of restraint (Allison and Hattenstone, 2016). A Ministry of Justice report in 2016 found that some authorized restraint techniques had the potential to kill or disable children (Allison and Hattenstone, 2016). The *Youth Detention: Solitary confinement and restraint report*, commissioned by the House of Commons and undertaken by the Joint Committee on Human Rights in 2018, recommended that the ‘pain-induced’ restraints that continue to be permissible in YOIs should be prohibited (House of Commons, 2019a). The Government Response stated its intention to review and monitor the levels of restraint used in YOIs, upskill staff and noted that it should be used only in exceptional circumstances (House of Commons, 2019b).

3.3.3. History of Responses to Rulebreaking School Children: key education policies

The reform of secondary education moved towards the top of the Conservative’s policy agenda during the mid-to late 1980s (Dorey, 2014). Since the late 1980s, secondary education has experienced ongoing neo-liberal reforms aiming to improve inefficient public services (Dorey, 2014). This neo-liberal stance was initially advocated by the New Right and subsequently embraced by New Labour (Dorey, 2014). The market principles of the private sector have been instilled into the education system giving choice to parents and increasing competition between schools based on exam results (Dorey, 2014). The education system in Scotland differs from that in England and Wales with the Scottish Government having full political responsibility for Scottish education (Tes, 2019) since devolution in 1999 (Cairney, 2011). Education policy in Scotland in the 1980s introduced reforms to the curriculum and assessment in state schools, which resulted in performance management and continue to

influence current debates in educational policy today (Arnott, 2011). These Acts and reforms introduced national testing, market principles, target setting and parental choice to the educational system in Scotland (Croxford and Cowie, 2005). The following section will provide an overview of key education policies relevant to school indiscipline, in addition to outlining some consequences of certain policies for those pupils who break school rules.

The Education Act 1980

The Conservative Party's first response to the Taylor Report, *A New Partnership for Our Schools (1977)* commissioned by the Labour Party, was the Education Act 1980. The 1980 Act implemented changes to the governance of schools following the recommendations of the Report (Poster et al., 1999; Demaine, 2002) aiming to give parents the rights to choose their children's schools (Stillman, 1986). However, education was not yet a priority for the Conservative government and it was subsequent policy reforms that had a more substantial impact (Dorey, 2014).

The Education (Scotland) Act 1981

The Education (Scotland) Act 1981 introduced parental choice into the education system giving parents the right to request that their child attend a particular school (Arnott, 2011).

The Education Act 1986

Children have always been removed from school for poor behaviour, either temporarily or permanently, however, when 'exclusion' was introduced in the Education (No 2) Act 1986, it became the focus of professionals, researchers and policy makers as a key indicator of educational and social problems (Berridge et al., 2001:2). The 1986 Act introduced permanent, fixed-term and indefinite exclusion, the latter being abolished by the Education Act 1993 (Berridge et al., 2001). Indefinite exclusion was often criticized as leaving many children without an adequate education whereby school children often received only the minimum three hours home tuition per week (Gordon, 2001). Temporary exclusions, otherwise referred to as suspensions, allow the exclusion of a pupil for a specific period, whilst permanent exclusion, also known as expulsions, bar pupils from school and removes them from school roll (Berkeley, 1999).

The Education Reform Act 1988

Education policies by Conservative Administrations prior to the 1988 Act were 'incrementalist' (McVicar, 1990:133). The 1988 Education Reform Act radically transformed education in the UK (Hay and Farrall, 2014; McVicar, 1990). Education policy departed from the previous bipartisan approach, and introduced 'hard right' thinking, which dominated the Conservatives' approach to schooling (Hay and Farrall, 2014:18). In England and Wales, the main provisions of the 1988 Act were grounded in neo-liberalism promoting the 'marketisation of education' (Dorey, 2014:113). The 1988 Act enacted the transfer of school management from local education authorities to school governing bodies, established the National Curriculum and allowed parents to choose which school to send their child to through open enrolment (Dorey, 2014). The establishment of the National Curriculum allowed for comparisons and competition between schools, which was subsequently consolidated by John Major's Conservative administration through the establishment of the Office of Standards in Education (Ofsted) and league tables (Dorey, 2014). Ofsted was enacted in the 1992 Education (Schools) Act by John Major's government to externally audit schools and teachers (Dorey, 2014). The Education Reform Act 1992 introduced league tables, which encouraged schools to exclude disruptive pupils resulting in a sharp increase in school exclusions during the subsequent decade (Farrall and Hay, 2014).

The Schools Board (Scotland) Act 1988; The Self-Governing Schools etc (Scotland) Act 1989

Education policy in Scotland became more notable following the 1987 General Election, which introduced 'competitive individualism' into the education system (Arnott, 2011: 194). The Schools Board (Scotland) Act 1988 increased parental powers over teachers and education authorities. The Self-Governing Schools etc (Scotland) Act 1989 introduced competition into the state sector, giving schools the choice to adopt self-governing status or to opt out of local authority control (Arnott, 2011). The intention was that schools would be influenced by market forces through parents moving away from the established comprehensive system towards a more selective system (Arnott, 2011). The 1989 Act also allowed private companies to manage Further Education colleges and introduced testing in primary schools (Arnott, 2011). However, the 1988 and 1989 Acts mostly failed to gain parents' support (Arnott, 2011). Parents seemed to welcome the introduction of school boards but seemed unwilling to challenge the role of professionals in teaching their children

(Arnott, 2011). The compulsory testing of primary school children was also met with significant resistance and criticism from parents, educational professionals and local authorities (Arnott, 2011). Some local authorities allowed parents to withdraw their children from testing, which resulted in only 30% of pupils tested in the first year of compulsory testing (Arnott, 2011).

The Education Act 1993

The White Paper, *Choice and Diversity: A New Framework for Schools*, formed the basis of the 1993 Education Act under Prime Minister, John Major (Dorey, 2014). The 1993 Act established 'Education Associations' to investigate 'failing' schools with the power to determine the future management of the school including whether it could be closed (Dorey, 2014). The 1993 Act consolidated the objectives of the former Education Act increasing parental choice, promoting inter-school competition, raising academic standards, reducing the role of local education authorities and increasing the managerialism in secondary education in Britain (Dorey, 2014). Thus, deepening the neo-liberal ideals of marketisation and managerialism in school (Dorey, 2014). The 1993 Act also introduced a limit of 15 days at any one time for fixed term exclusions (Berridge et al., 2001).

Education Policies under New Labour 1997 - 2010

In contrast to the previous Conservative government, New Labour dramatically increased investment in schools, particularly for teachers' pay, teaching assistants, training and ICT infrastructure (Whitty, 2009). However, New Labour also retained and expanded neo-liberal education policies (Whitty, 2009), promoting market principles, individual choice, competition (Lupton and Obolenskaya, 2013), incentives, performance indicators, results and targets (Dorey, 2014).

One of New Labour's early education targets was to reduce the number of school exclusions that had risen markedly under the previous Conservative government (Lupton and Obolenskaya, 2013). A substantial decrease in the number of permanent exclusions was evident throughout New Labour's period in office (Ogg and Kaill, 2000), decreasing from just over 12,000 permanent exclusions in 1997/98 to just under 6,000 by 2009/10 (Daniels et al., 2003; DfE, 2011), although this decrease was not linear (see Figure 3.3.1.). Instead, schools

were encouraged to use Pupil Referral Units (introduced by The Education Act 1996), alternative provision, and set up internal exclusion units (Ogg and Kail, 2000). The subsequent negative repercussions of this increase in use of alternative educational provision is discussed in detail in Section 3.3.4.

The Education Act 1997

Following concerns about violence amongst young people (Reed, 2003) and the attempts by some MPs to reintroduce corporal punishment in school (HC Deb 28 January 1997), New Labour enacted the Conservative's 1997 Education Act, which introduced measures to target these concerns (Reed, 2003). Some of these measures included increasing the length of a temporary exclusion to 45 days, allowing school detentions without parental consent and giving teachers the right to physical restrain pupils in certain circumstances (Reed, 2003).

The Crime and Disorder Act 1998

The main aim of the 1998 Act was to 'prevent offending by children' (Riley, 2007:225) and established the Youth Justice Board and Youth Offending Teams to manage young offenders (Byrne and Brooks, 2015). The 1998 Act introduced 'anti-social behaviour' into legislation, defined as 'a manner that caused or was likely to cause harassment, alarm or distress to one or more persons not of the same household as himself' (Riley, 2007:221). The 1998 Act also introduced parenting orders placing the emphasis on parents to control their child's behaviour and were managed by the Youth Offending Team (Riley, 2007).

The Anti-Social Behaviour Act 2003

The 2003 Act amended the availability of flexibility of parenting orders, placing greater emphasis on the responsibility on parents for their child's behaviour (Riley, 2007). Section 19 of the 2003 Act, the LEA or governing body were permitted to initiate a parenting contract with a parent of a pupil who was excluded temporarily, permanently, on disciplinary grounds or for truancy (Riley, 2007). This contract was managed by the Youth Offending Team (Riley, 2007). A parenting contract was introduced to instruct parents to attend counselling to help them to manage their child's behaviour or to instruct them to control their child's behaviour (Riley, 2007).

3.3.4. Trends in the Number of Exclusions

During the general election in 2010, the Conservative government pledged to raise standards in schools by giving ‘heads and teachers tough new powers of discipline’ (Conservative Manifesto, 2010:51). Each school should have a transparent school behaviour policy detailing the rules of conduct for pupils (Gov.uk, 2018). Government guidance for discipline measures states that ‘schools can punish pupils if they behave badly’, which may include being told off, removal from the classroom or detentions (schools are not obligated to give notice to parents or inform them why a detention is administered) (Gov.uk, 2018). Exclusions signify the end of the disciplinary process by removing the child from the school. The guidance specifies that schools are allowed to exclude pupils if they misbehave inside or outside of school. For the first five days of an exclusion parents may be prosecuted if their child is found in a public place during the normal school hours without good reason. The guidance also highlights that permanent exclusions should be used as a last resort.

Exclusion, defined as ‘the expulsion or suspension of a student from school’ (Gordon 2001:70), was introduced by the Education Acts 1986 (no.2) and more recently governed by the Education Act 2002 in England and Wales (with the exception of independent schools or sixth form colleges), as amended by the Education Act 2011 (DfE, 2017a). School exclusions in Scotland are governed by the Schools General (Scotland) Regulations 1975, the Schools General (Scotland) Amendment Regulations 1982 with the power to exclude a pupil resting with the local authority (Scottish Government, 2017b. Section 52(4) of the Education Act 2002 governs those making decisions about school exclusions and is based on the following legal framework:

- A fixed period exclusion where the pupil is temporarily removed from school for a maximum of 45 days per school year (even if they have moved schools); and,
- Permanent exclusion where the pupil is removed from school on a permanent basis (expelled).

Statutory guidance released in 2012 (DfE, 2012:6) states that the use of exclusions should be limited to a serious breach, or persistent breaches, of the schools behaviour policy, and, where allowing the pupil to remain in a school would seriously harm the education or welfare

of the pupil or others in the school. Following the decision to temporarily or permanently exclude a child there are a number of options available to the headteacher and governing body via official and unofficial exclusions (Gill et al., 2017). Official exclusions can include both non-permanent and permanent exclusions and are recorded with local or central government, whereas unofficial exclusions are not recorded in the national data as exclusions (Gill et al., 2017). Unofficial exclusions include managed moves to another school, a move into off-site alternative provision, or illegal exclusions (encouraging parents to home school their child or to move their child independently to another school) (Gill et al., 2017). More recently, there has been some movement towards restorative justice in some schools to deal with indiscipline (HCRP, 2019). Restorative justice has resulted in a substantial reduction (80%) in school exclusions across the city of Hull (HCRP, 2019).

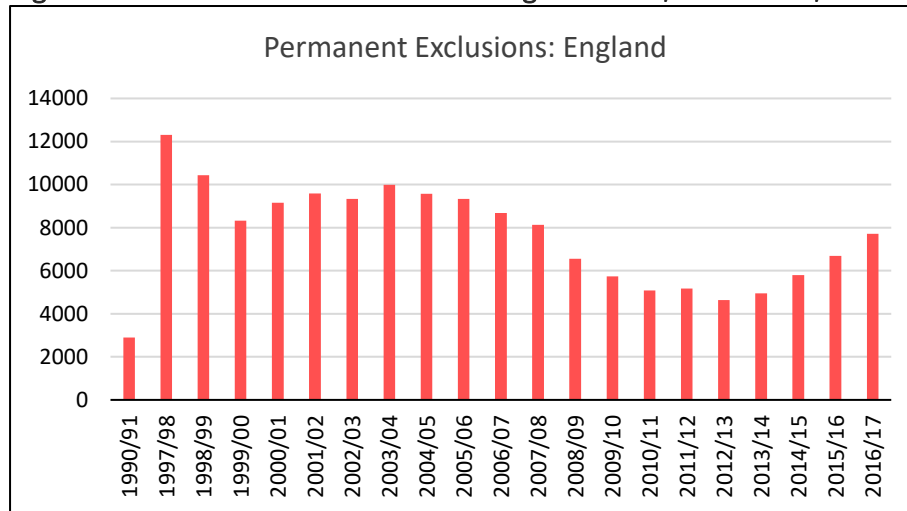
There are considerable differences between the rate of school exclusions across the four jurisdictions of the UK with the majority of permanent exclusions occurring in England (McCluskey et al., 2019). McCluskey et al. (2019) suggest that the tone of government documents is more punitive in England focusing on punishments, the use of isolation and seclusion, and powers to search without consent. In contrast, the tone of the equivalent guidance in Scotland, and to a lesser extent in the Welsh guidance, focusses on early intervention to reduce the need for exclusion (McCluskey et al., 2019). The Scottish and Welsh guidance sets out a framework of staged intervention and multi-agency partnerships and is founded on the principle of prevention (McCluskey et al., 2019).

England

The introduction of league tables by the Education Reform Act 1992 was followed by a sharp increase in school exclusions (Figure 3.12.) (Farrall and Hay, 2014). Recorded permanent exclusions quadrupled from 2,900 in 1990-91, when recording of exclusions started, to a peak of 12,665 in 1996-97, with small yearly reductions between 1997-2000 (Daniels et al., 2003). This reduction may be due to some headteachers using means of unofficial exclusions to attempt to meet national targets and avoid financial penalties (Daniels et al., 2003). Permanent exclusion figures continue to be problematic and have increased by 40% over the past 3 years reaching 6,685 exclusions in 2016 (Gill et al., 2017). This figure equates to 35 exclusions per day of the most disadvantaged children in society (Gill et al., 2017). In 2016/17

the excluded number of school children equated to approximately .10% of the total school population (DfE, 2018).

Figure 3.12. Permanent Exclusions in England 1990/91 to 2016/17



Source: Daniels et al. (2003); DfE (2011); DfE (2018)

However, Gill et al. (2017) suggest that 2017 Census data shows that the official figures are hugely underestimated with approximately 48,000 children being removed from mainstream schools, equating to 1 in 200 children (Gill et al., 2017). This figure comprises of the following:

- 15,669 pupils were registered in Pupil Referral Units (PRUs).
- 10,152 pupils had dual registration in PRUs and mainstream education.
- 22,212 pupils were registered in Alternative Provisions paid for by the local authority (non-maintained provision, such as, one-to-one tutoring and hospital schools (Gill et al., 2017).

Attendance at PRUs was not intended to be permanent, however, many pupils spend significant parts of their school lives in PRUs (Sheehy, 2015). Between 1999 and 2009 the number of pupils who attended PRUs doubled to 15,370, spread across 450 PRUs, becoming the most common form of alternative provision (Sheehy, 2015). Encouraging parents to choose to home school their children or managing moves between schools are also a means of excluding pupils from schools but are not shown in the official figures (Weale, 2017). The number of home-schooled children has also been rising alongside other means of alternative

provision (Gill et al., 2017). In 2011/12, approximately 15,000 children were home-schooled doubling by 2016/17 to approximately 30,000 (Gill et al., 2017).

‘Off-rolling’ has been the focus of growing concerns in recent years (Hutchinson and Crenna-Jennings, 2019). Off-rolling is defined by Ofsted as,

‘the practice of removing a pupil from the school roll without formal, permanent exclusion or by encouraging a parent to remove a child from the school roll, when the removal is primarily in the interest of the school rather than in the best interest of the pupil.’ (Hutchinson and Crenna-Jennings, 2019:6).

Possible motivations for such practices have been noted as improving exams results by removing certain pupils from school rolls so that their results are not included in the school’s GCSE results, and managing financial pressures (Hutchinson and Crenna-Jennings, 2019). In contrast to formal school exclusions, schools are not required to record the reasons why a pupil is removed from a school roll making it difficult to ascertain the reason why removals have taken place (Hutchinson and Crenna-Jennings, 2019). Hutchinson and Crenna-Jennings (2019) analysed exits from secondary schools using longitudinal data on three different cohorts of approximately 600,000 pupils taking their GCSEs in 2011, 2014 and 2017. They found that unexplained exits accounted for 47,225 exits in 2011, 49,051 in 2014 and 55,309 in 2017 accounting for 7.8 per cent of pupils in the 2011 cohort, 7.2 percent in the 2014 cohort and 8.1 per cent in the 2017 cohort. Hutchinson and Crenna-Jennings’ (2019) analysis suggests that pupils most likely to experience ‘unexplained moves’, that is those circumstances in which removals are not consistently recorded or regulated, are those pupils who have a high number of authorized absences. One in three were in contact with the social care system, one in three had experienced an official permanent exclusion, one in five had experienced a non-permanent exclusion, one in seven were eligible for free school meals, one in eight from black ethnic backgrounds, and one in eight were in the lowest prior attainment quartile.

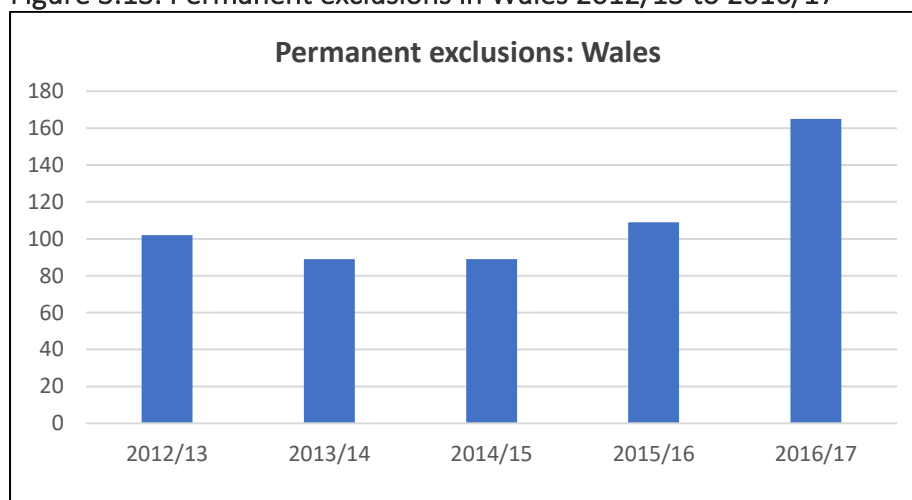
The Timpson Review found that a minority of schools were using off-rolling, which can lead to children leaving education altogether and exposed to potential safeguarding risks (Timpson,

2019). The review found that Bangladeshi and Indian children are around half as likely to be excluded as White British children, whilst Black Caribbean and Mixed White and Black Caribbean pupils are more likely to experience exclusion. Seventy-eight percent of permanent exclusions were issues to pupils who either had SEN, were classified in need or were eligible for free school meals, with 11% of permanent exclusions issues to pupils who had all three characteristics. The Timpson Review notes a potential driver for off-rolling may be the incentivization driven by the current performance and funding system, which does not reward schools for taking responsibility for complex needs of school pupils.

Wales and Scotland

The percentage of school exclusions in Wales from all schools in 2016/17 equated to .4% of the school population (Welsh Government, 2018). Whilst the numbers of permanently excluded children is relatively low, there has been a notable increase in the last five years (Figure 3.13.) (McCluskey et al., 2019).

Figure 3.13. Permanent exclusions in Wales 2012/13 to 2016/17

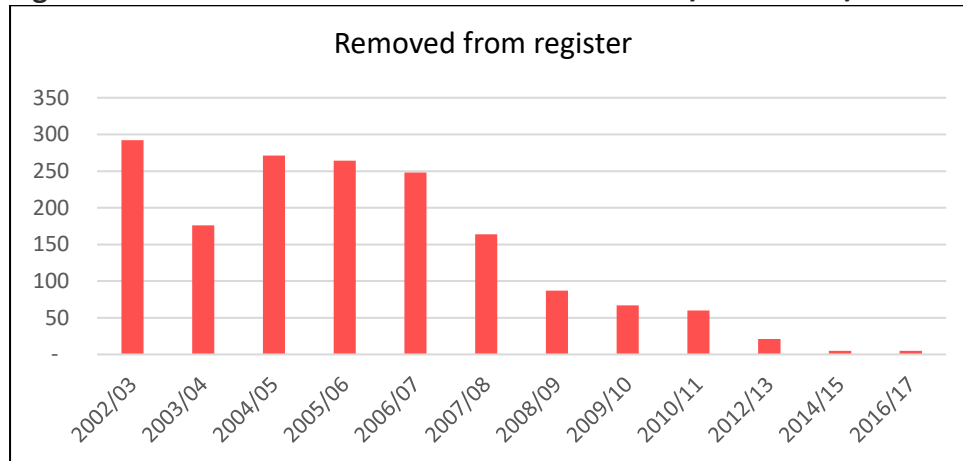


Source: Welsh Government (2018)

Permanent exclusions in Scotland are referred to as ‘removal from register’ with the pupil being educated at another school or by some other form of provision (National Statistics, 2016). The local authority has the power to exclude pupils in Scotland (Scottish Government, 2011) and are allowed to reach an agreement with parents to remove their child from a school without using the formal procedure of removal from register (National Statistics, 2016). There were only 4 permanent exclusions, or removals from register, in Scotland in

2016/2017 (National Statistics, 2016). The decline in school exclusions is attributed to the *Included, Engaged and Involved Guidance*, a policy aligning with a national, long-term strategy on prevention and early intervention (Figure 3.14.) (Scottish Government, 2017b). The policy aims to assist staff to build positive relationships with school pupils and those at risk of exclusion (McClusky et al., 2019).

Figure 3.14. Permanent Exclusions in Scotland 2002/03 to 2016/17

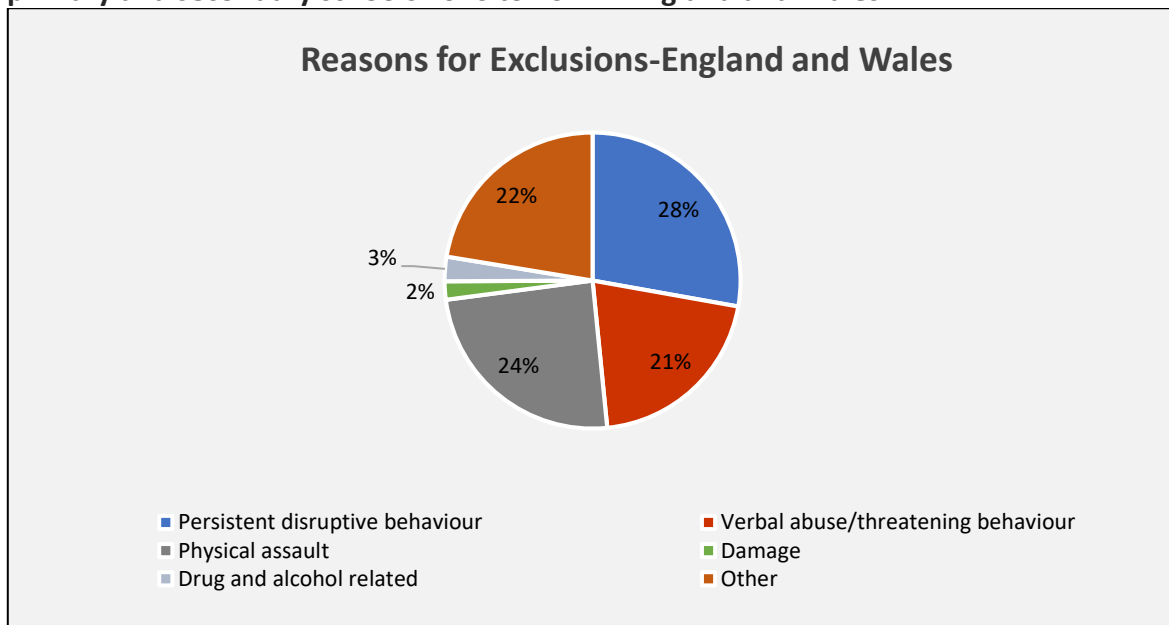


Source: Scottish Government (2018)

Reasons for Exclusions in Britain

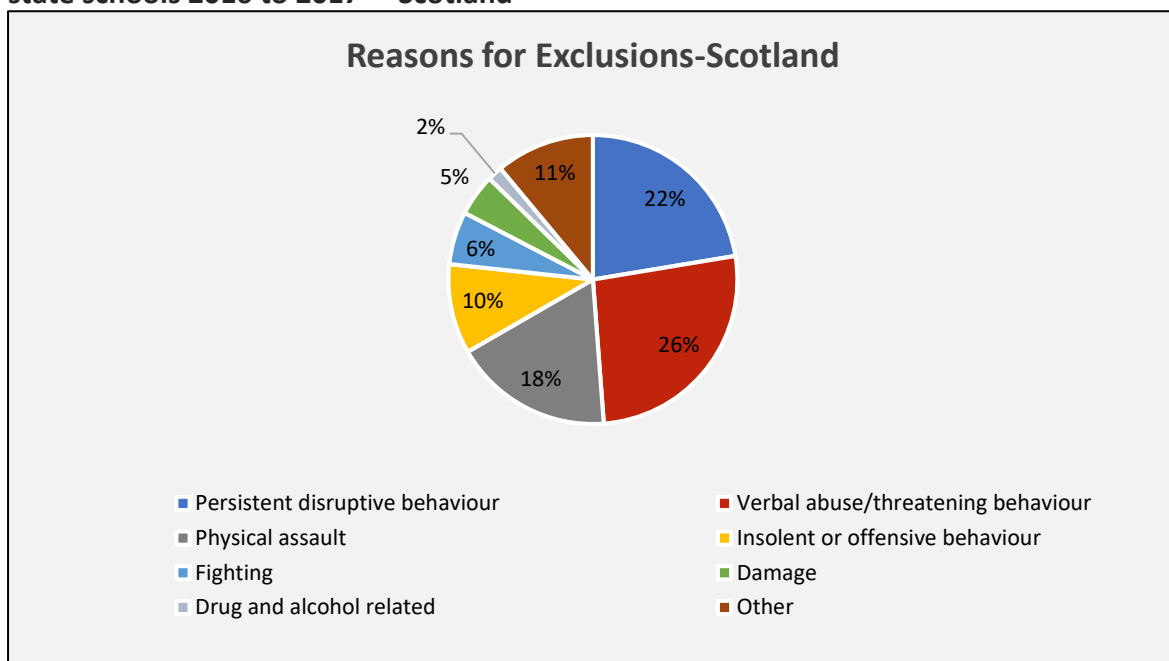
Whilst classifying behaviour is difficult and achieving consistency between teachers and schools cannot be guaranteed, Figure 3.15. and Figure 3.16. below give an indication of the types of behaviour that lead to exclusions (Berridge, 2001). Different terms are used to classify those pupils who are excluded from school on a temporary basis for challenging behaviours across UK jurisdictions; ‘fixed period’ is used in England, ‘fixed term’ in Wales, and ‘temporary exclusion’ in Scotland, although they all refer to the response of schools to challenging behaviour by removing a child from school for a period of time (McCluskey et al., 2019). The data in Scotland is recorded differently to England and Wales with Scottish categories being more expansive than in England and Wales. An attempt has been made to reduce these categories to align somewhat with those in England and Wales for the purposes of presenting the data in both systems. There were 339,360 non-permanent exclusions in England and Wales in 2016/17 and 29,473 non-permanent exclusions in Scotland, and 6,685 permanent exclusions in England and Wales and 4 ‘removals from the register’ or permanent exclusions in Scotland (DfE, 2017b; Scottish Government, 2017a).

Figure 3.15. Reasons for permanent and non-permanent exclusions in state-funded primary and secondary schools 2016 to 2017 – England and Wales



Source: DfE (2017b)

Figure 3.16. Reasons for temporary exclusions in state-funded primary and secondary state schools 2016 to 2017 – Scotland



Source: Scottish Government (2017a)

Who are the permanently excluded children?

Government official figures (DfE, 2017b) show that from 6,685 permanent exclusions in England between 2015-16, 50 children were aged 4 or under, with the numbers gradually

increasing as children got older (reaching 620 at age 11). This figure increases significantly at age 12 (in secondary school) with 1,010 pupils permanently excluded and continues to rise significantly to 1,425 at age 13 and 1,715 at age 14, decreasing to 680 by age 15 with the majority (78%) being males (DfE, 2017b). Most pupils in PRUs are White British (70%), however, certain ethnic groups are disproportionately represented in these populations as outlined by Gill et al. (2017):

- Black Caribbean pupils are educated in PRUs at nearly four times (3.9) the rate expected based on the proportion they make of the national pupil population.
- Mixed ethnicity Black Caribbean and white pupils are also more than twice as likely (2.5) to be educated in a PRU.
- Gypsy Roma heritage pupils appear in PRU populations at almost three times the expected rate (3.2).
- Irish traveller heritage pupils at seventeen times the rate (16.5).

Excluding children has the potential to displace them from school into chaotic homes or risky neighbourhoods where they are more likely to become involved in crime, worsen their academic chances and reduce their employment prospects (Evans, 2010; Berridge et al., 2001). Pupils excluded from schools are some of the most vulnerable children in society, being twice as likely to be in state care, four times as likely to have grown up in poverty, seven times more likely to have a special educational need and ten times more likely to experience a mental health problem (Gill et al., 2017). Risk factors include experience of poverty (4 times more likely to be excluded), unsafe family environment (3 times more likely to be excluded), special educational needs (7 times more likely to be excluded) and low prior attainment (15 times more likely to be excluded) (Gill et al., 2017). Adopted children are also more likely to be excluded than their peers (Adoption UK, 2017). Adoption UK (2017) surveyed 2,084 adopted children and found that nearly half of the children have special educational needs and disabilities (SEND) and were permanently excluded at a rate just over 20 times that of the general pupil population. Additionally, they were five times more likely to receive a non-permanent exclusion than the general pupil population, and they are more likely to be excluded at younger ages differing from the national trend (Adoption UK, 2017).

What happens to excluded children?

In the 2015/6 academic year in England, 5,510 (3.3%) of pupils received a permanent exclusion after being excluded for a non-permanent exclusion during the same academic year (DfE, 2017b). Negative outcomes such as unemployment, significant mental health problems and prison are more likely to be future experiences of excluded children (Gill et al., 2017). The National Education Union (NEU) has recently described increasing strict behaviour policies in England as ‘inhumane’ and ‘damaging to pupil mental health’ (Weale, 2019). The economic cost to society is also significant with each cohort of excluded children estimating to cost the state an extra £2.1 billion (of a 6,685 cohort) in health, benefits, criminal justice and education costs, or £370,000 per excluded child per lifetime (Gill et al., 2017). Outcomes for excluded pupils are poor with 1% of excluded children attaining the benchmark of the five good GCSEs required in order to access post-16 training and apprenticeships (Weale, 2017). Over half of those who spend time in prison have been excluded from school during their education (Weale, 2017).

Table 3.2. The destination and costs of alternative provision for excluded pupils in England and Wales

Costs of alternative education provision	Cost per annum (£)	Percentage of excluded children
Pupil Referral Unit	14,664	57%
College	2,623	7%
Special school	26,225	2%
Other	5,245	7%
Mainstream school	4,355	15%
Home/Alternative Education	24,996	6%
No education	-	6%

Source: Brookes et al. (2007:8)

Amid increasing concerns regarding the number of children excluded from schools and the subsequent provision made accessible to them, a 2003 study conducted by Daniels et al. (2003) tracked 193 permanently excluded children in years 9 to 11 (ages 13 to 16) from 10 Local Education Authorities (LEA) (Daniels et al., 2003). The study found that approximately 50% of children were engaged in education, training or employment 24 months after their

permanent exclusion. Important factors identified in order for these outcomes to be achieved were noted as the young person's belief in their own abilities, ongoing support from skilled support staff following the exclusion, supportive family and friends who helped reintegrate the young person into the local community, and a feeling that the exclusion was unjust.

Negative outcomes were linked to young peoples' refusal to engage with services post-exclusion. Prior to their exclusions about 40% of the pupils were reported to have offended, approximately half had identified a SEN (most commonly emotional and behavioural difficulties with some learning difficulties), and permanent exclusion usually followed a long history of behavioural challenges at school. The study also found that those who offended prior to exclusion (2 in 5) also continued to offend post-exclusion, based on information from accounts from young people, parents and staff.

The study found that LEA support and intervention was received by 144 out of 167 pupils. Following permanent exclusions, the study found that it took LEAs on average 3 months to find a first substantial alternative placement including PRUs (56%), attendance at another mainstream school (14.5%), and further education and alternative education programmes (6.5%). Two years following exclusion, the study continued to have contact with 73% of the sample and found,

- Approximately 50% were engaged in education, training or employment.
- As pupils neared school leaving age, engagement in all types of provision dropped.
- Half viewed their exclusions as detrimental, and only 19% saw it as a positive event.
- Those pupils who had received a higher number of non-permanent exclusions prior to permanent exclusion were more likely to be disengaged two years after exclusion.
- Only 26 pupils (data from 91 pupils) were known to have passed one GCSE; one or more GCSE grade A-C were obtained by 17 pupils; those returning to mainstream school were more likely to obtain GCSEs; 54 obtained a qualification of some description.

After two years contact had been lost with 52 of the young people. From the remaining 141 young people 24% were in Further Education, 12% in substantial employment, 11% in PRUs, 11% in mainstream schools and 28% had no involvement with education, training or employment. The study found that 24 months post-exclusion 55% of the young people, where data was available, had definitely or were believed to have offended compared to approximately 40% reported to have offender prior to the exclusion. Most of those who had offended prior to exclusion continued to do so following their exclusion, and nearly one third were thought to have started offending post-exclusion.

Berridge (2001) conducted a study to explore the extent permanent exclusions from school had an independent effect on the offending careers of 343 young people in six local authorities in England. The study analysed data from school and offending official records, along with interviews with 28 young people and a small group of parents. The study was retrospective with exclusions occurring between 1988 and 1998. The police held complete records for 263 of the young people and found the following:

- 85 had no prior or post exclusion offending.
- 117 had no prior offending but began offending post exclusion.
- 47 offended prior and post exclusion.
- 14 offended before but not after exclusion.
- 13 started offending the same month they were permanently excluded.
- At the point of interview, seven of the 28 interviewees were working; this tended to be short-term, poorly paid jobs with few prospects.
- Five were attending FE college.
- Twelve were unemployed.

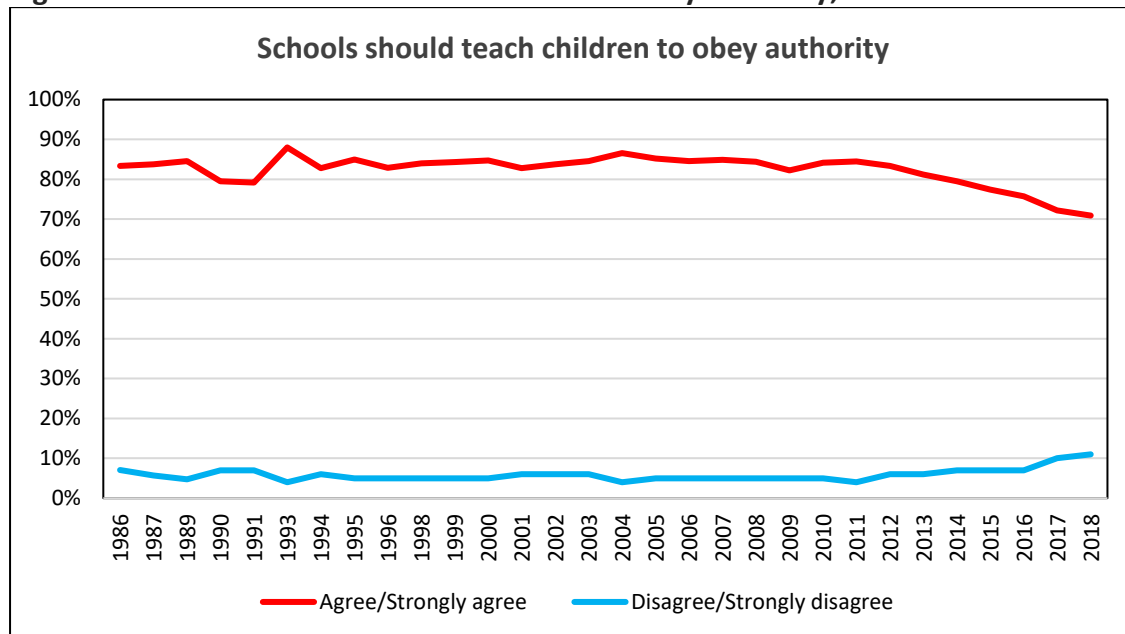
The study found that the young people suffered social and educational disadvantages, including sexual abuse, parental violence and homelessness. Additionally, they found that 18% had been in the care of by local authorities, 47 % were entitled to free school meals, 45% were known to Social Services, 20% were known to Youth Offending Teams, 8 of the 28 interviewees had spent time in Young Offender Institutions or adult prisons, 44% had been

assessed for Special Educational Needs and 19% had a Statement of Special Educational Needs. Little difference was found between young people from ethnic minority background and those from a white background, with 62% of the former and 67% of the latter having offended at some point in their lives.

3.3.5. Trends in Public Sentiment Towards School Pupils

The British Social Attitudes Survey (BSAS) has been tracking and assessing attitudes towards school children since 1986. When asked how much respondents agree or disagree with *'Schools should teach children to obey authority'* and *'Young people today do not have enough respect for traditional values'* public support for both statements has remained consistently high over time. In 1986, 83% were in agreement that *schools should teach children to obey authority* (Figure 3.17.). Those in agreement remained largely stable over time until 2013 when the number in agreement started to decrease to 71% in 2018. Those that agree with the statement has remained at around 50% and it is the strongly agree category that has reduced from 32% in 1986 to 19% in 2018. There is a spike in those who are in agreement with the statement in 1993; it is likely that this is in a response to the murder of James Bulger in early 1993 as noted in Chapter 3.1 and the spike in attitudes towards offenders at this time (Jennings et al., 2017a). This spike in agreement is also seen in Figure 3.19. below in responses to *young people today don't have enough respect for traditional values*.

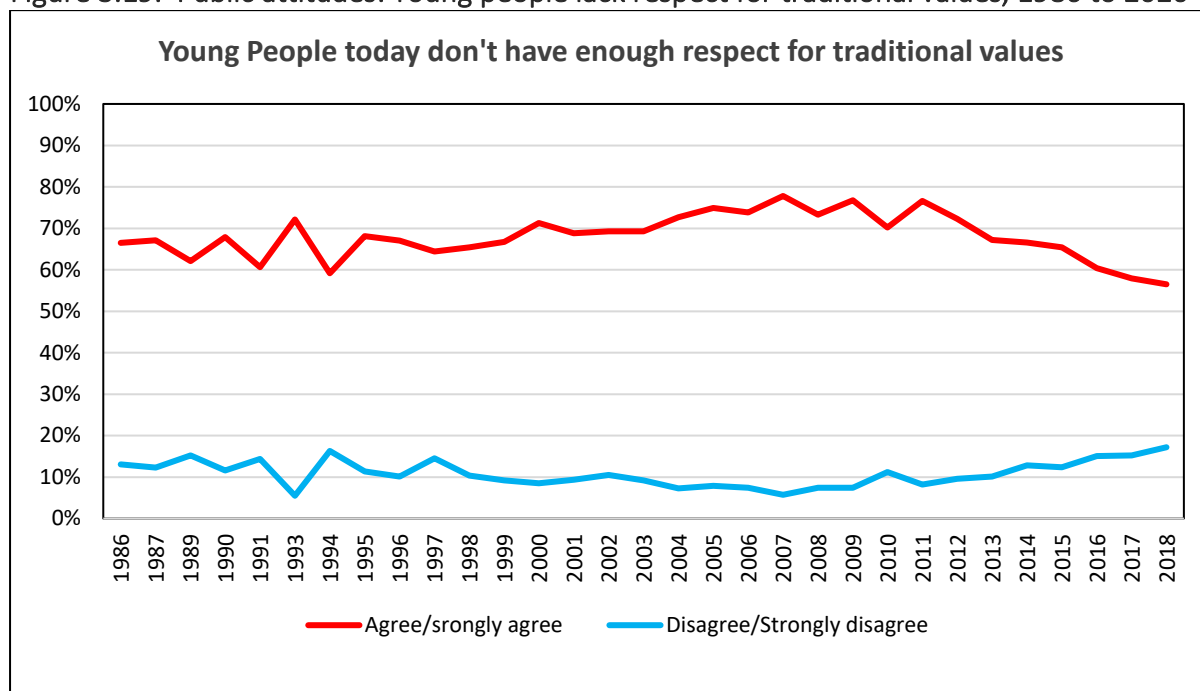
Figure 3.17. Public attitudes: Teach children to obey authority, 1986 - 2018



Source: BSAS 1986 to 2020

Figure 3.18. below uses conditional formatting to analyse responses to ‘Schools should teach children to obey authority’ in more detail using the mean score per age for each year of the survey. The redder shades show more punitive responses, yellow shows medium scores and greener shades show less punitive responses. The green scores do not necessarily mean that these responses are lenient but rather that they are less punitive compared to the other scores. The highest value (least punitive mean score) is 2.84 and the lowest value (the most punitive mean score) is 1.13. These scores range from 1 (Strongly agree) to 5 (Strongly disagree). Until 1991 support for children obeying authority appears to increase with age, with the youngest age groups being least supportive of this statement, shown by the green colours for the younger ages growing redder with age. This starts to change in 1993 and subsequent young people appear to have become more punitive (shown by the redder shadings) compared to earlier years. Older ages continue to be more punitive than younger ages shown by the greater dispersion of redder colours. In recent years, attitudes appear to be softening, shown by the green and yellow shades for most age groups.

Figure 3.19. Public attitudes: Young people lack respect for traditional values, 1986 to 2020

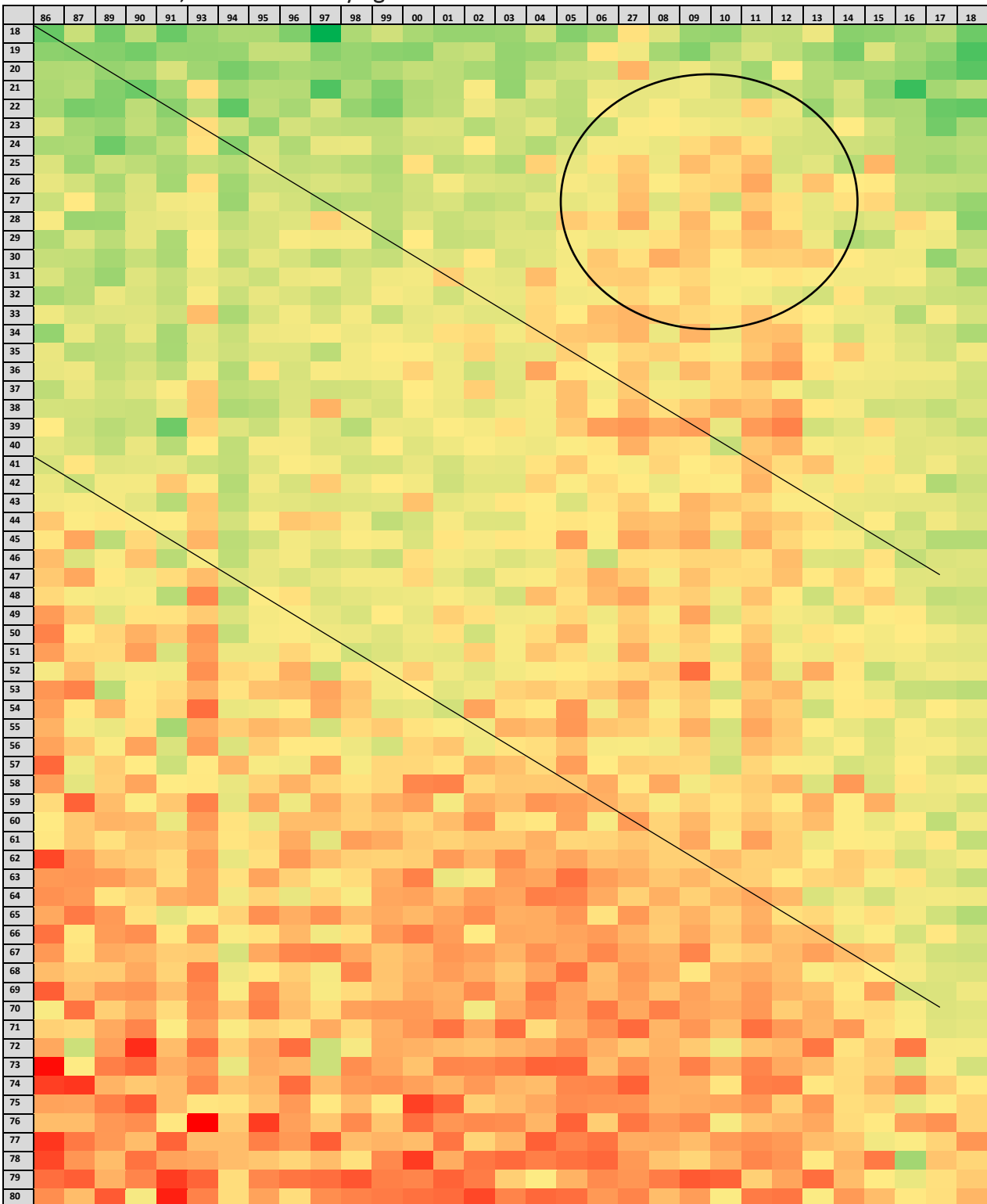


Source: BSAS 1986 to 2020

Figure 3.19. also shows a high level of support for *Young People today don't have enough respect for traditional values*. In 1986, 67% were in agreement with the statement (25% agreed, 42% agreed). Following the same trend as *Schools should teach children to obey authority*, the agree category has remained largely stable over time and it is the strongly agree category which has reduced from 25% in 1986 to 14% in 2018 where 57% were in agreement with the statement. In contrast to the previous statement, support for the belief that young people do not have enough respect for traditional values reached a peak of 78% in agreement in 2007, which had been steadily increasing since 1994. This may have been due to the growing concerns around young people’s behaviour since the early 1990s (Reed, 2003; HC Deb 28 January 1997).

Figure 3.20. below uses conditional formatting to analyse responses to *Young People today don't have enough respect for traditional values* in more detail using the mean score per age for each year of the survey. As noted previously, the redder shades show more punitive responses, yellow shows medium scores and greener shades show less punitive responses. Green does not necessarily mean that these responses are lenient but rather that they are less punitive compared to the other scores.

Figure 3.20. Conditional Formatting: Young people today don't have enough respect for traditional values, 1986 to 2018 by age



Source: British Social Attitudes 1986-2018

These scores range from 1 (Strongly agree) to 5 (Strongly disagree). The highest value (least punitive mean score) is 3.73 and the lowest value (the most punitive mean score) is 1.20. Figure 3.20. generally shows attitudes growing more punitive as people age, shown by the lines tracking ages over time. Between around 2004 onwards, younger ages also appear to have become more punitive shown by the increasing spread of redder colours in the younger age groups. Attitudes appear to have begun to soften over the last few years for all but the oldest age groups.

3.3.6. Summary

This chapter set out to explore government policies, political attitudes and trends in public attitudes since the 1980s. Since the early 1980s the education system has been blamed for a range of social problems with teachers being criticised for being unable to maintain discipline. Since this period, legislation has been enacted based on neo-liberal principles of competition and marketisation. The introduction of league tables and the national curriculum led to an increase in the number of school exclusions. Research shows that those excluded from school are much more likely to end up in the criminal justice system. Increasing concern about young people has been reflected in punitive policies, which have resulted in an increase in the use of punishments and exclusions, particularly in England. This punitiveness is also apparent in public attitudes towards school children. Exploring relevant BSAS survey questions since the 1980s, we observe that support for children obeying authority and the belief that young people do not respect traditional values enough remains generally high over time. What has changed however, is the age of those supportive of such beliefs; younger age groups, which were relatively less supportive of such beliefs when the questions were first fielded, appear to have become more supportive of such beliefs overtime. However, older ages continue to be more punitive than younger age groups with attitudes softening for all ages groups in recent years. Additionally, support for such beliefs have been declining in recent years. While there are long-term repeated measures of social attitudes towards young people, there are no survey questions currently that measure punitiveness as proposed by this study.

Part Three: Researching Punitiveness

Chapter 4.1. The Role of Cognitive Interviewing: a literature review

4.1.1. Introduction

Part Two explored trends in punitiveness towards the three different groups of rulebreakers. This was done in three ways: firstly, the history of government policies relevant to a more punitive approach to rulebreakers was presented; secondly, political discourse towards rulebreakers was considered; thirdly, trends in public attitudes were analysed. In relation to criminal rulebreakers, concerns about an increasing prison population in the 1970s was accompanied by increasingly punitive measures to control it. Legislation took a punitive turn in the early 1990s contributing to a sharp increase in the prison population, which remains at high levels today. Law and order discourse was ramped up by Margaret Thatcher in her election campaign in 1979 and appears to have set the trend for subsequent political leaders to continue with a tough on crime discourse, which endures today. Finally, trends in public attitudes towards lawbreakers dating back to the early 1980s shows that support for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers remains high, whilst support for the death penalty appears to have decreased. Government policies towards welfare claimants have increased conditionality, responsibility and sanctions over time. These sanctions have resulted in negative outcomes for some claimants increasing financial difficulties, hardship and 'survival crime'. Political discourse towards welfare claimants since the early 1980s suggests that negative descriptors and depictions of welfare claimants have become embedded in modern day politics, regardless of the party in government. Public attitudes towards welfare generally shows a hardening of attitudes since the 1980s, although in the last few years these attitudes have started to soften. It appears to be the younger and older age groups that are less supportive of welfare claimants, with those around their mid-40s holding less punitive views. Lastly, legislation has been enacted based on neo-liberal principles of competition and marketisation in the education system. The introduction of league tables and the national curriculum led to an increase in the number of school exclusions with those excluded from school much more likely to end up in the criminal justice system. Public attitudes supportive of children obeying authority and respecting traditional values has generally remained high

over time. What has changed however, is the age of those supportive of such beliefs; younger age groups appear to have become more supportive of such beliefs overtime. Although, this appears to have softened for all ages in recent years.

As noted at the beginning of this thesis, this study will use the BSAS survey questions to examine punitiveness towards law breakers, namely, *People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences*, and *For some crimes, the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence*. While there are long-term repeated measures of social attitudes towards young people and welfare claimants, there are no survey questions currently that measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants as proposed by this study. As such, the focus of this thesis now turns to the development of survey questions to explore public punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants.

This chapter will present a literature review of cognitive interviewing. Firstly, cognitive interviewing will be defined and outlined, before progressing to discuss the value of using cognitive interviewing in the design of new survey questions. The chapter will then detail the two main cognitive interviewing paradigms before presenting a discussion of some of the limitations of cognitive interviewing. The chapter will conclude by outlining some of the challenges of conducting web-based surveys relevant to this project.

4.1.2. How Can Cognitive Interviewing Help Develop Survey Questions?

‘Survey research rests on the age-old practice of finding things out by asking people questions’ (Tourangeau et al., 2000:1)

A survey aims to systematically collect data asking questions by using a standardized questionnaire to quantitatively analyze the population of interest (Groves et al., 2009; Callegaro et al., 2015). Numerous factors influence the accuracy of the data collected by a survey including how well the sample represents the target population, how data is collected and how the data is processed through editing and coding (Collins, 2015a). Additionally, there is a danger of using the results of survey data to present public opinions as conclusive

(Bishop, 2004) reducing complex attitudes into single responses and measures (Dommett and Pearce, 2019) and neglecting the prospect that people's opinions may not be stable and well-informed (Zaller and Feldman, 1992).

Surveys are frequently carried out assuming that respondents fully understand the questions as intended by the researchers, and as such, it is also assumed that respondents are able to answer these questions appropriately (Conrad and Blair, 2009). However, different words vary in meaning between people, which impacts on how questions are answered (Farrall et al., 1997). Additionally, discrepancies can arise between the respondents' and the interviewers' interpretations of the questions (Priede and Farrall, 2010). Surveys attempt to access accurate answers, facts and opinions, however the generation of answers and accessing these answers is complex (Tourangeau et al., 2000). Errors can arise during the data collection process when asking people questions, therefore standardising tools and procedures relating to the questionnaire during this process allows differences between participants to be observed more accurately (Collins, 2015a). Standardisation, in the design and administration of the questionnaire, does not necessarily result in reliable, unbiased and valid data, however (Fowler, 1995). Respondents may not understand the question being asked or may not understand in the way intended by the researcher (Collins, 2015a). This section will outline the processes undertaken in the design of the new survey questions for this study in attempting to reduce the potential effects of some of these issues.

Tourangeau et al. (2000) suggest that seeking accuracy in attitude questions is inherently more complex than with factual questions. Attitudes involve 'existing evaluations, vague impressions, general values, and relevant feelings and beliefs', and when a subject is considered, parts, or all, of these aspects are accessed (Tourangeau et al., 2000:194-5). On consideration of a particular topic, answers consist of simply reiterating an existing evaluation, updating it, extending it or making a new judgement (Tourangeau et al., 2000). Dependent on the context, the information processed can be linked to motivations and strategic decisions, for example, the desire to reach defensible conclusions (Tourangeau et al., 2000). Judgements can be made through the existence of consistent beliefs regarding a particular subject matter (Tourangeau et al., 2000).

Tourangeau et al. (2000) suggests that response effects, that is the differences in survey outcomes, can derive from numerous aspects throughout the survey process, such as the order of questions, understanding the question, recalling relevant information, providing an answer, or a range of other cognitive processes (Tourangeau et al., 2000). Tourangeau et al.'s (2000:8) Model of the Response Process details four main components generally present in responding to a question:

- *Comprehension* – identification of what the question is asking.
- *Retrieval* – recall of pertinent information from the long-term memory.
- *Judgement* – assessment of information retrieved, gap-filling, and reconstruction of information in order to present an appropriate response.
- *Response* – consists of two processes: the selection of an answer on a scale, and the presentation of an answer which may be edited for reasons of acceptability or consistency, for instance.

As such, Tourangeau et al. (2000) propose that deficits in any of these four components can result in response errors, such as, misinterpreting the question or forgetting pertinent information. Pre-testing draft questions then is required to attempt to mitigate these errors (Tourangeau et al., 2000).

Pre-testing methods can be used to highlight problems in respondents' interpretations and responses, enabling potential solutions to be explored (Conrad and Blair, 2009). Pre-testing is based on assumptions that problems with questions will be identified by the answers provided, for instance, 'don't knows', or by visible cues, such as, hesitation (Presser et al., 2004). However, it may be that the techniques used do not necessarily elicit problems; a respondent may misunderstand a question without this being apparent (Presser et al., 2004). Nonetheless, the priority of pre-testing is to try to identify problems that if left undetected would increase measurement error (Blair and Conrad, 2011). Blair and Conrad (2011) suggest that individual problems impacting on measurement error derive from problem prevalence (how often the problem occurs in interviews) and severity (the problem's effect).

Defining Cognitive Interviewing

Cognitive Interviewing (CI) is a pre-testing method available to test survey questions (Presser et al., 2004). This technique has become increasingly important in the design and testing of survey questions (Willis, 2005). CI emerged in the 1980s from The Cognitive Aspects of Survey Methodology (CASM) movement (Collins, 2015) and is rooted in the psychology of thought processes of comprehension, recall and judgement, model development and laboratory testing (Schwarz, 2007:277). CASM highlighted the importance of validity in survey research seeking to understand respondents' thought processes in determining potential sources of error in surveys and question design (Schwarz, 2007; Miller et al., 2014). CI emerged as a method for 'identifying and correcting problems with survey questions' (Beatty and Willis, 2007:287).

CI aims to test survey questions with participants through a range of techniques, which are then analysed to identify problems in order to reduce measurement errors which would otherwise affect the findings (Conrad and Blair, 2009; Presser et al., 2004). CI has become one of the more frequently used pre-testing methods (Beatty and Willis, 2007).

Beatty and Willis (2007: 287) define CI as,

'the administration of draft survey questions while collecting additional verbal information about the survey responses, which is used to evaluate the quality of the response or to help determine whether the question is generating the information that its author intends'.

Essentially, the aim of cognitive interviewing is to evaluate the effectiveness of survey questions in achieving their intended objectives through retrieving information from participants (Beatty and Willis, 2007). CI techniques examine how the participant understands, interprets, mentally processes, and responds to the material presented, with an emphasis on identifying issues with the question which may be problematic and potentially breakdown this process (Willis, 2004; Presser et al., 2004). However, despite this general definition there are variations in the implementation of almost every aspect of CI, such as,

how thought processes of participants are accessed and interpreted, the role and impact of interviewers, and the subsequent analysis (Beatty and Willis, 2007; Blair and Conrad, 2011).

Cognitive Interviewing Paradigms

Two main paradigms of CI have emerged differing theoretically and methodologically (Farrall, 2017). Thinking-aloud is the original form of cognitive interviewing, whilst Probing developed at a later date (Beatty and Willis, 2007). In the thinking-aloud paradigm the interviewer's role is to facilitate the verbal information provided by participants in order to understand their thought processes with minimal intervention. The probing paradigm requires the interviewer to play a more verbally active role guiding and questioning throughout the process in order to understand the responses (Beatty and Willis, 2007). During thinking-aloud interviews, the interviewer may encourage the participant to explain what they are thinking and why they are answering the question in a particular way, for example, 'Tell me what you are thinking...?' (Beatty and Willis, 2007:289). Probing entails the interviewer's questioning technique to be more intensive with such follow up probes as, 'Can you tell me in your own words what that question was asking?' (Beatty and Willis, 2007:290).

Thinking-aloud is a standardised procedure with a reduced interviewer bias due to the interviewer being less directive; however, this process may be harder work for participants, and may produce an excess of information that is not relevant due to participants' verbalisations being less focussed (Beatty and Willis, 2007; Willis and Artino, 2013). Additionally, encouraging respondents to provide verbal information when the information requested is not being accessed may result in more ambiguous reports or changing the thought process leading to 'reactivity' effects (Conrad and Blair, 2009:34). The advantages of thinking aloud are that it is easy to train respondents and collect data at the time the question is answered, which is initiated by the respondent rather than the interviewer (D'Ardenne, 2015b). Conversely, some respondents may find thinking aloud hard and the data may vary in quality between respondents (D'Ardenne, 2015b). The thinking aloud technique may interfere with the thought processes at the time of answering, and respondents may edit and refine their answers prior to speaking leading to undetected problems (D'Ardenne, 2015b). D'Ardenne (2015b) suggests taking into account certain factors in order to determine whether thinking aloud is appropriate: will respondents feel

comfortable divulging their thoughts about the topic at hand? Will the process of thinking aloud interfere too much and impede respondents from answering the questions properly?

Alternatively, verbal probing allows more focus and less interference during the actual response process but requires more consideration from the interviewer in order to mitigate response effects (Beatty and Willis, 2007; Willis and Artino, 2013). The creation of bias in respondent's behaviour may occur from the cognitive demands placed on them during probing and explanation of answers, which may result in respondents thinking more carefully about their answers than they would do otherwise (Willis and Artino, 2013). However, whilst thinking aloud may present the best bias-free approach, this may not necessarily result in the most useful style of interview in terms of identifying respondent comprehension of specific concepts (Farrall, 2017). Additionally, interviewers' contributions shape CI results, therefore interviewers should receive training to increase skills to recognise probes' impacts and when/how best to deploy them (Beatty, 2004 in Presser et al., 2004).

Probing

Willis (2005:87) presents a 'standard model of probing':

- Review questions and identify potential problems.
- Probe planning pre-interview to investigate potential problems.
- Administration of probes as planned.

Despite this seemingly straightforward model, probing is inherently more complex (Willis, 2005). Beatty and Willis (2007:300) highlight four main probing techniques:

- Anticipated probes – scripted or pre-determined probes in expectation of a problem with a question.
- Spontaneous probes – flexible and unplanned allowing the interviewer to use intuition rather than responding to participant behaviour.
- Conditional probes – pre-determined and administered if participant behaviour indicates an issue with the question, i.e. hesitation.
- Emergent probes – unscripted, flexible and responsive to participant responses.

Probes can be ‘concurrent’, following each question, enabling participants to recall pertinent information, or ‘retrospective’, at the end of the survey, alleviating the potential effects of accumulative probing (Willis, 2005:53). Concurrent probing allows respondents’ thoughts to be accessed whilst they are answering the questions enabling information to be accessed in real time, however, this process may in turn influence subsequent responses (DeMaio et al., 1998). Retrospective probing is undertaken once the interview is complete, therefore replicating similar conditions to the live survey, which influences the responses less, but may not allow the interviewer to access respondents thinking at the time of answering (DeMaio et al., 1998).

Table 4.1. Model of Verbal Probing in Cognitive Interviews

	Proactive Administration (initiated by the interviewer/researcher)	Reactive Administration (triggered by subject behaviour)
Standardized Construction (constructed <i>prior</i> to the interview)	Anticipated Probes	Conditional Probes
Non-standardized (constructed <i>during</i> the interview)	Spontaneous Probes	Emergent Probes

Source: (Willis 2005:88)

Willis (2005:88) divides the four main probing techniques above into two categories as shown in Table 4.1 above:

- Proactive Probing - an investigative interviewer using anticipated and spontaneous probes.
- Reactive Probing - an interviewer being responsive to a trigger during the interview by verbal information or behaviour of the respondent using conditional and emergent probing techniques.

Priede et al. (2014:560) specifically examined concurrent probing using an investigative interviewer (proactive probing) approach whereby the researcher is allowed to adapt probes and develop probes throughout the interview. They found that scripted conditional probes

were of most value in terms of useful data; spontaneous probes were of least value in this respect; emergent probes and 'functional remarks' (remarks to encourage respondent to keep talking) were found to be as useful as scripted anticipated probes. They concluded that interviewers should use anticipated and spontaneous probes to search for problems, and conditional and emergent probes to attempt to uncover problems and seek solutions. Ericsson and Simon (1980) suggest that specific probes should be used in order to reduce the respondent using inferential processes to fill the gaps in memory/information which result from the use of general probes. Willis (2005) also encourages careful consideration regarding the suitability and appropriateness of probes in order to reduce the possibility of encouraging respondents to invent problems, and/or, researchers inventing problems. Garas et al. (2003:45) distinguish between 'evidence-based' probes, detection of a problem through respondent's verbal/behavioural response, and 'context free' probes, no detection of a problem but researcher judges that a particular word/question may be problematic. They suggest that discussions in CI interviews regarding potential problems may detect actual problems or the respondent's acceptance of the interviewer's hypothesis of potential problems. Thus, context free probing may result in an interviewer effect on respondent behaviour, for example, the inference of a problem if probed by the interviewer. Consequently, Garas et al. (2003) suggest that question revisions may be more reliable should there be actual evidence of problems from respondents or if there is an agreement by numerous assessors of the verbal reports of a problem being present.

Conrad and Blair's (2009) study explored the use of conditional probes compared to discretionary probes; the former only used in response to the respondent's explicit information, the latter used whenever the interviewer felt it was appropriate. In addition to this, they also explored the ways verbal reports were interpreted by different judges, in anticipation that different judges elicit different meaning from verbal reports. Their concern was that the use of discretionary probes may detect problems that are not actual problems, and that different problems may be identified dependent on who is analysing and interpreting the information. Conditional probes were found to detect fewer potential problems with higher reliability across judges compared to discretionary probes; and, differences in reliability were linked to the types of probes administered. Conrad and Blair concluded that discretionary probes result in a higher amount of problems and thus more

false alarms, whereas conditional probing resulted in fewer false alarms but fewer actual problems. They suggest that using context-based probes may result in increased reliability and validity, however, this would reduce the ability of experienced cognitive interviewers to detect problems when no problem was indicated. They propose that the challenge of developing a CI procedure is to maximise problem detection whilst minimising error integral to CI.

In determining the techniques to be used, Beatty and Willis (2007) suggest that consideration should be given during the course of the research design to the most appropriate and suitable techniques to meet the requirements, as best as possible, of the research project, interviewers and respondents in order to meet the intended objectives. Despite there being various discussions of the advantages of one paradigm compared to the other, there have been few studies that have examined and compared these differences in practice (Priede and Farrall, 2010). Priede and Farrall (2010) conducted a comparison study of thinking aloud and probing as part of a wider project examining public confidence in justice. Their findings suggest that there is no major difference between thinking aloud and probing. Thinking-aloud enabled a deeper understanding of the cognitive processes involved in the retrieval of information than probing, whereas probing allowed for specific concepts to be explored. Priede and Farrall suggested the use of both techniques when piloting survey questions may be appropriate, either as separate interviews or within the same interview, taking into account the appropriateness of each technique in relation to the survey content. In the case of thinking-aloud and probing being used in the same question, D'Ardenne (2015b) encourages the use of think-aloud prior to any probing in order to reduce the interviewer effect of probing on the respondent's answer.

Sample Size

Researchers should consider the sample population most relevant to the study, those for whom the questions are designed, and target this group (Beatty and Willis, 2007; Collins and Gray, 2015). In terms of sample size, varying suggestions exist. Collins and Gray (2015) suggest that ideally no limit would be specified on sample size and interviewing would continue until no new problems were identified. However, practicalities and time constraints will usually hinder this process (Collins and Gray, 2015; Willis, 2005). Willis (2005) proposes

that 12-15 interviews are usually sufficient to detect significant problems, and as more interviews are conducted the useful returns diminish significantly. Willis (2005) advises that should serious problems be identified after just a few interviews then these should be rectified prior to further testing. Willis (2005) also notes that sample size is dependent on how many rounds of interviews are to be carried out. Willis suggests that three rounds of nine interviews is preferable to one round of twenty seven interviews, enabling amendments to be made between the rounds. Beatty and Willis (2007) suggest that typical sample sizes generally used in cognitive interviews are most likely insufficient in terms of comprehensively providing a true insight into the questionnaire's performance. Blair and Conrad (2011) conducted a study examining sample size and problem identification undertaking 90 interviews. They found that as the sample size increased so did the identification of problems: a sample size of five detected less than a quarter of the eventual 210 problems identified; a third of problems were detected in 10 interviews; half in 20 interviews, and 50 interviews resulted in 80 percent of the problems detected. Thus, they concluded that a small sample size may miss a significant percentage of problems.

Outcome Measures

Collins (2015a) suggests a number of issues to consider whilst using CI to pre-test questions:

- The format of the available responses – are respondents able to provide an answer from the available list/choices.
- Asking why a particular answer was chosen.
- Check if an answer is missing from the list which would have enabled respondent to answer question more easily/accurately.

Collins (2015a) highlights the importance of being clear as a researcher about the measurement objectives in order to be able to assess if the CI pre-test has achieved its aims:

- What are the areas to be explored?
- Be clear about the intended meaning of questions.
- Be clear about the information required from respondents.

CI is often used to assist researchers in developing ‘measurably better survey questions’, however this is difficult to determine (Beatty and Willis, 2007:304). CI is also viewed as being able to provide insights into the impacts of certain questionnaire design decisions, which are also difficult to assess (Beatty and Willis, 2007). Perhaps the most suitable way to think of CI is its assistance to researchers in finding the advantages and disadvantages of question construction in a particular way (Beatty and Willis, 2007).

4.1.3. Limitations of the Cognitive Interviewing Technique

Tourangeau et al. (2000:334) note that although CI may diagnose a problem with a survey, CI does not necessarily ‘point to a cure’. Conrad and Blair (2009) propose that despite CI intending to reduce measurement errors, the practice can in turn generate its own measurement errors. The identification of problems that are not actual problems may occur or different problems being identified dependent on who is analysing the data, which may result in reduced reliability and validity than intended or desired (Conrad or Blair, 2009). They suggest that these measurement errors may derive from the following:

- Differing elicitation techniques used to obtain verbal reports leading to a variance in quality.
- Varying interpretation techniques between assessors leading to different meanings being attached to reports.

The aim for researchers is to use CI procedures that increase the ability to detect problems, but also reduce errors intrinsic to CI (Conrad and Blair, 2009). Beatty and Willis (2007) suggest that variations in practice result in an unclear understanding of what cognitive interviews actually are. Beatty and Willis (2007) note that being explicit about which elements of cognitive interviewing produces useful results and being clear about what was carried out in cognitive interviews would increase methodological knowledge and understanding in this area. They suggest that CI practitioners should agree on a framework for CI testing reports, such as number of interviews, interviewees, and rounds of interviews, the amount of think aloud and probing techniques used, and the nature of the probing, for instance. This framework will enable the sharing of information and documentation of procedures undertaken in projects in order to develop best practice (Beatty and Willis, 2007). Additionally, there has been little consensus historically regarding the analysis of CI verbal

reports, which use a variety of procedures to determine whether questions have proved problematic for respondents (Blair and Brick, 2010). Consequently, documentation of analysis decisions will ensure transparency, allow scrutiny, and promote credibility (Collins, 2015a). Closer attention to the systematic processes involved in CI will result in a method that is 'coherent', 'defensible' and replicable (Willis, 2014:8).

Collins (2003; 2015a) suggests that CI has the following limitations:

- It is qualitative, therefore not possible to measure its impact.
- Not possible to give quantitative evidence that the question revision is improved following CI.
- Not all thought processes can be verbalised.
- Not everyone is able to verbalise their thoughts processes, therefore it discriminates against those who cannot and may deter them from engaging with it.
- It is non-standardised.
- Interviewer impact on process (rapport, interrupting process impacting on respondent behaviour, how questions are asked).
- Focusses on the question and answer process and does not take into account the flow of the survey or length impact.

The Challenges of Conducting Web-based Surveys

Willis (2005) suggests that whilst probing paradigms appear to be frequently used in interviewer-administered surveys, the think-aloud paradigm may be more appropriate for web-based surveys due to the navigation and creative issues concerning these types of surveys. The challenges of web-based surveys are not constrained to words and questions, but extend to the mode of delivery, layout, design, structure, architecture, and the hardware and software used (Presser et al., 2004). Presser et al. (2004) insist that all these aspects need to be tested in order to allow for an understanding of their impacts on potential errors in the data. Additionally, Presser et al. (2004) suggest that following revisions, further testing should be carried out in order to determine if the revisions have indeed resolved the issues detected. If possible, it is advisable to test whether the layout and design of the survey impacts on the response process of comprehension, retrieval, judgement and response

(Collins, 2015a). Collins (2015a) suggests that web-based surveys involve additional aspects that may interfere with the response process, such as respondent-internet device interaction, navigation, error messages, and following instructions. Consequently, an assessment of the usability of the survey in this context may be of benefit in order to try to replicate the intended data collection instrument (Collins, 2015a).

4.1.4. Summary

This chapter has aimed to present a discussion of some of the potential issues in using survey research to explore public attitudes. Cognitive interviewing has been introduced as a means to pre-test survey questions and attempt to mitigate some of the potential issues arising from survey research. A review of cognitive interviewing literature has outlined the value of cognitive interviewing in assisting the survey design process, the two main cognitive interviewing paradigms of thinking aloud and verbal probing presenting their respective strengths and limitations, and the limitations of cognitive interviewing more generally. This chapter concludes by a discussion of some of the challenges of conducting web-based surveys. Essentially, it is important to draw out what people understand in relation to the newly designed questions; do people interpret the words and sentiments as intended? Cognitive interviewing not only provides the opportunity to test and reflect on this aim but also provides important qualitative data about how people interpret the questions. The relevance of how these issues relate specifically to this project will be noted throughout the next subchapter as attention is now turned to the design process of questions for this study using cognitive interviewing.

Chapter 4.2. Using cognitive interviewing techniques to explore contemporary attitudes towards ‘rulebreakers’

4.2.1. Introduction

Chapter 4.1. presented a discussion of some of the strengths and challenges of using survey research to explore attitudes. A review of cognitive interviewing literature was presented highlighting some of the strengths and limitations of using this method in the design process of survey questions. Additionally, a discussion on some of the challenges of conducting web-based surveys was presented. This chapter aims to present the process involved in developing the research questions for this project reflecting throughout on issues raised in Chapter 4.1. This chapter commences by discussing the ethical considerations involved in undertaking cognitive interviews. The chapter then outlines the design process by presenting the questions designed to measure public attitudes towards rulebreakers. The cognitive interviewing process will then be presented; this involves details of the fieldwork, data management and the subsequent analysis. The chapter concludes by presenting the finalised battery of questions designed to measure punitiveness towards rulebreakers.

4.2.2. Ethical Considerations

Any research project should place ethical considerations at the heart of the design process considering how informed consent will be gained, how to minimise participant burden, how to maintain participant confidentiality, and interviewer safety (D’Ardenne, 2015a). An ethics application (Appendix A) was approved detailing the nature of the cognitive interviews, in that they would be face to face interviews conducted in participants’ homes by a lone researcher. Potential risks were managed by training in good fieldwork practices and informing the main supervisor of the time and location of where the interviews would be conducted. Additionally, the main supervisor was informed of the interviews’ completion.

Very little harm was foreseen to participants as the nature of the interviews were to ask participants questions on their attitudes towards certain types of institutional punishments in order to test the survey questions. However, there was potential that some participants may have been excluded from school or in receipt of benefits and may have felt uncomfortable answering the questions. It was made clear to the participants that there were no direct

questions about their experiences, no personal information would be sought, and that the interviews were to understand how they interpreted the questions. The University's Research Ethics Policy uses the General Data Protection Regulation (GDPR) definition of personal data:

“personal data’ means any information relating to an identified or identifiable natural (living) person (‘data subject’); an identifiable natural person is one who can be identified, directly or indirectly, in particular by reference to an identifier such as a name, an identification number, location data, an online identifier or to one or more factors specific to the physical, physiological, genetic, mental, economic, cultural or social identity of that natural person’ (The University of Sheffield, 2020)

Consideration of the General Data Protection Regulation (GDPR) has been given throughout the project. Participants were advised that should they disclose any personal information during the interviews then that information would be redacted when the interviews were transcribed. No personal information was collected regarding names and addresses, except for the arranging of the interviews in a few cases, and such data was destroyed after the fieldwork was completed. Additionally, when transcribed, any identifying data (such as names of third parties or particular places) was redacted. The only information collected from the participants was demographic factors, such as age and gender, in order to undertake basic analyses to review ease of question interpretation across different groups of people. Participants answered the questions anonymously on a tablet and had the option of not disclosing their demographic information should they prefer not to.

Potential participants should be given sufficient information to make a fully informed choice about whether they wish to take part (D’Ardenne, 2015a). Access was gained to participants through door knocking in a range of neighbourhoods to try to obtain a representative sample. Prospective participants were provided with a brief verbal introduction about the study detailing an accurate description of the purpose of the study, what their involvement would entail, who was conducting the research, the subject matter, length of interview and how the information collected would be used (D’Ardenne, 2015a). Additionally, it was stressed that taking part was voluntary and that they could withdraw from the study at any time without giving any reason for doing so (D’Ardenne, 2015a). Once a person agreed to

take part in the study, they were provided with an information sheet providing details of the study and the contact details of the research team (Appendix B); this gave participants the opportunity to ask further questions or withdraw from the study at a later date should they wish to do so (D'Ardenne, 2015a). Participants were then provided with a consent form (Appendix C). Additionally, in an attempt to incentivise interviews with those aged between 16 and 24 years old, a £10 high street voucher was offered as this age group is particularly difficult to interview. Again, it was made clear to this group that they were not obliged to take part and could withdraw at any time (D'Ardenne, 2015a).

4.2.3. Question Design

Four new questions were designed aiming to measure the prevalence of punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants (see Q1, Q2, Q5, Q6 in Figure 4.2). Two additional questions will also be used to measure punitive attitudes towards lawbreakers, these are:

- *People who break the law should face stiffer sentences.*
- *There are some offences for which only the death penalty is appropriate.*

However, these are well tested questions used by the British Social Attitudes Survey since 1986 with considerable national usage, and as such, they were not tested in the cognitive interviews. Additionally, two further questions (Q3 and Q4) were also designed from an identified gap in existing survey questions in relation to beliefs about school punishments aiming to explore beliefs relating to authoritarianism, discipline, and social control. These two questions were subsequently used to measure neo-conservative values. The theoretical and empirical construction of this variable is discussed in more depth in Chapter 5.

The design process began with literature reviews of attitudes towards school pupils and welfare claimants, along with reviews of previous and current political policies in education and welfare that respond to rulebreaking behaviours. The literature reviews also entailed analysis of political discourse, relevant surveys that have been undertaken, and a presentation of trends in data over the past four decades. During the literature reviews, embryonic survey questions were drawn up, amended and adapted as the literature reviews,

and knowledge, expanded. This process culminated in the design of six new survey questions (Table 4.2.).

Table 4.2. Final Survey Questions

Item No	Item Wording
Q1	<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements? Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments.</i>
Q2	<i>School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded.</i>
Q3	<i>Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour.</i>
Q4	<i>School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour.</i>
Q5	<i>Welfare benefit recipients who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties.</i>
Q6	<i>Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped.</i>

The Measurement Aims of the Cognitive Interviews

The aim of cognitive interviews (CI) is to assess whether designed questions are working in the way intended (Collins, 2015a). The overall aim of the battery of questions in the eventual survey is to assess the prevalence of punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers in contemporary British society and how these relate to political attitudes.

The specific aims of the cognitive interviews were: to assess whether participants understood the key terms in the questions in a consistent way; what do these terms bring to participants' minds when they are answering the questions? What are the factors that influence how participants respond? Are participants able to answer sufficiently accurately and reliably to meet the measurement aims of the survey? (Collins, 2015a). Despite Willis's (2005) suggestion that thinking aloud may be more suitable to web-based surveys due to the potential for navigation issues to arise, verbal probing was assessed as the most suitable technique to meet the CI aims in this instance. Through reflection on the literature review, it

was assessed that verbal probing would be the most suitable technique to meet the measurement aims, as the interviews intended to explore comprehension of specific terms (Priede and Farrall, 2010; Farrall, 2017). The cognitive interview participants were members of the general public recruited through door knocking on randomly selected doors and asked to take part in the interviews. As thinking aloud may be harder work for participants and requires some training (Beatty and Willis, 2007; Willis and Artino, 2013) it was assessed as unsuitable due to the extra burden this may place on participants. Additionally, verbal probing requires no participant training and results in less interviewer interference during the response process (Beatty and Willis; Willis and Artino, 2007). The usability of the survey in an online context was assessed through interviewer observation during the interviews whilst participants used a tablet; this was used to replicate the intended data collection device (Collins, 2015a).

4.2.4. Cognitive Interviewing Fieldwork

The first round of cognitive interviews was undertaken between 10th and 15th May 2018 aiming to evaluate how the target audience understood, processed and responded to the designed questions (Willis, 2005). A total of twelve participants (Table 4.3.) were recruited directly by knocking on randomly selected doors in two areas in Northern England to take part in face-to-face interviews. An urban and suburban area were chosen with the goal of recruiting a variety of participants to capture varying responses (Collins and Gray, 2015). The areas were chosen due to their geographical differences as well as their social and economic differences detailed as follows from UK Census Data (2018). Area A, the urban location, is ethnically more diverse than Area B with a BAME population of approximately 25% in comparison to Area B's BAME population of approximately 1%. Area A has an economically active population of approximately 50% and an economically inactive population of approximately 13%, in contrast to the economically active and inactive populations of Area B of 68% and 3% respectively. In terms of property ownership, approximately 40% of people in Area A either own or mortgage their property and approximately 45% rent their homes through social housing. In Area B approximately 75% of people own or mortgage their homes with approximately 10% renting through social housing. In terms of migration, 88% of residents in Area A and 97% in Area B were born in the UK; approximately 3% have resided in the UK in the last 5 years in Area A and approximately 0.5% in Area B; and, 10% of residents

in Area A have resided in the UK for five years and over, compared to 2.5% in Area B. The median income for Area A is approximately £16,000 compared to approximately £23,000 in Area B (ONS, 2016). Area A is amongst the 10% most deprived neighbourhoods in the country compared to Area B which is amongst the 20% least deprived neighbourhoods according to the Index of Multiple Deprivation (Department for Communities and Local Government, 2015). There were seven females and five males ranging from 18 to 85 years old with two participants describing themselves as Asian or Asian British, and the remaining as White British.

Table 4.3. Summary of Participants

Subject ID	Age	Gender	Ethnicity
R1	35 to 44	Male	Asian or Asian British - Pakistani
R2	25 to 34	Female	Asian or Asian British - Pakistani
R3	45 to 54	Male	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British
R4	65 to 74	Male	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British
R5	75+	Female	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British
R6	18 to 24	Female	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British
R7	75+	Male	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British
R8	35 to 44	Female	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British
R9	75+	Female	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British
R10	18 to 24	Male	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British
R11	35 to 44	Female	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British
R12	45 to 54	Female	White - English/Welsh/Scottish/Northern Irish/British

Interviews were carried out in participants' homes and comprised of two stages. In stage one, participants were provided with a tablet on which to complete the survey to simulate, as much as possible, the eventual online survey (DeMaio et al, 1998; Gray, 2015). Following completion of the survey, stage two involved interviewing participants via a series of questions about their interpretation of the statements using the verbal probing technique (Willis, 2005). Verbal probing was chosen as the technique allows for exploration of specific words and concepts (Priede and Farrall, 2010). The interviews lasted between six and thirty-two minutes.

Cognitive Interview Script

The cognitive interview script (Table 4.4.) was devised prior to the CIs (Willis, 2005). This comprised of eleven anticipated probes developed to address the specific aims of the interviews as noted above. Fundamentally, the CI aims were to explore if certain words or terms were universally understood (Willis, 2005). In addition to the anticipated probes, emergent probes were also used to explore potential issues raised by participants (Beatty and Willis, 2007). Emergent probes are unscripted, flexible and reactive allowing the interviewer to be responsive to something a participant says which may indicate a problem (Beatty and Willis, 2007). Emergent probes are variable due to their application being based on each participant's response.

Table 4.4. Cognitive Interview Schedule

Question	Probes
Q1	<i>Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments.</i> What did you understand by the term 'unruly'?
Q2	<i>School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded.</i> What did you understand by the term 'permanently excluded'?
Q3	<i>Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour.</i> What did you understand by the term 'caning'?
Q1, Q2, & Q4	Some of the questions used terms like 'unruly', 'bad behaviour' and 'disruptive behaviour'? Which of these terms do you prefer?
Q5	<i>Welfare benefit recipients who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties.</i> What did you understand by the term 'welfare benefit recipients'?
Q6	<i>Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped.</i> Can you explain your answer to this question?
General Probes	How did you find answering these questions? Enjoyable? Thought provoking? Interesting? Were they easy or difficult to answer? Why? Could you find the answers you wanted to give? Why? Why not?

Data Management and Analysis

Analysis was undertaken based on the 'Framework' approach favoured in Collins (2015b:143) using Excel. The Framework analytical approach was developed by Ritchie and Spencer (1994) in conducting applied qualitative research seeking to identify attitudes and experiences, examine the factors that underlie such attitudes and experiences, appraise the effectiveness of what exists, and to identify new theories, plans and actions (Ritchie and Spencer, 1994). Framework is 'systematic and disciplined', whilst also relying on the creativity and 'conceptual abilities of the analyst to determine meaning, salience and connections' (Ritchie and Spencer, 1994:177). This approach incorporates the orderly storage of raw data and the systematic process of reducing, classifying and ordering the cognitive data to facilitate subsequent analysis (D'Ardenne and Collins, 2015; Ritchie and Spencer, 1994).

The raw data comprised of the interview recordings, interview transcripts and completed test questionnaires. An interview summaries template was used to systematically reduce and organise the data (Figure 4.2.) (D'Ardenne and Collins, 2015:147). Each transcribed interview was reduced onto the template, which ensures that relevant data for each interview is collated in a single document and that the all interview findings are consistently written up (D'Ardenne and Collins, 2015).

Once an interview summaries template had been completed for each interview, the data for each question was amalgamated into Framework Matrices in Excel using the subheadings used in the Interview Summaries Template column headings (Figure 4.1.). Primarily, the process of populating the matrices from the templates allows for a further opportunity to collate and reduce data from multiple interviews into a coherent document from which analysis can be undertaken (D'Ardenne and Collins, 2015). Additionally, this process also allows for checking if any information is missing in order to achieve the research aims (D'Ardenne and Collins, 2015).

4.2.5. The Analysis Process

The formal analysis phase comprised of two parts; firstly, the identification and classification of problems and the circumstances in which they occur, together with understanding how the questions are being interpreted and answers formulated (Collins, 2015b); secondly,

identifying why problems occur and the possible explanations for these allowing consideration of potential resolution or amelioration of the problem (Collins, 2015b). This section analyses the responses from the cognitive interviews for the purposes of the question design. However, interesting findings emerged throughout the cognitive interviews illustrating attitudes towards both rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants. Discussions in relation to these attitudes will appear in relevant subsequent chapters for each rulebreaker (Chapter 6 and Chapter 7); these subsequent discussions allow the themes evident throughout the cognitive interviews to be placed into context alongside the quantitative findings.

Figure 4.1. Interview Summaries Template

<ol style="list-style-type: none">1. <u>Respondent background</u><ol style="list-style-type: none">1.1 Respondent ID:1.2 Sex:1.3 Age Group:1.4 Working Status:1.5 General comments on interview: 2. <u>Findings on Question:</u><ol style="list-style-type: none">2.1. Survey answer:2.2. Observations/think aloud findings:2.3. Findings from probes:2.4. Findings from general probes:2.5. Other findings/comments on Question

Source: D'Ardenne and Collins (2015:147)

Table 4.5. Framework Matrix

Finding on Q1: Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments					
1. Resp. ID	2. Survey answer	2.2. Observation/think aloud findings	2.3. Findings from probes	2.4. Findings from general probes	2.5. Other findings

Source: D'Ardenne and Collins (2015:153)

The CI results below present the amalgamation of answers for each question which allows qualitative and quantitative analysis; the former allows analysis of what the problems were and whether they were similar across interviews; the latter can show how severe the problem is by the frequency of which the problem(s) occurred (Willis, 2005). The following section consists of analysing responses in relation to the measurement aims. A colour coding scheme has been used in the analysis to highlight responses relevant to the CI aims: do participants understand key terms in the questions in a consistent way? (Comprehension problem); What do these terms bring to participants' minds when they are answering the questions? (Interpretation); What are the factors that influence how participants respond? Are participants able to answer sufficiently accurately and reliably to meet the measurement aims of the survey? Analysis also involves combining participant verbal responses to probes with the survey data and response times (Collins, 2015b). Question timings were analysed to see if particular questions posed problems identified by respondents taking more time to answer certain questions. Table 4.6. shows an overview of the results.

Cognitive Interview Analysis: Round One Analysis

Question 1: *Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments. What did you understand by the term 'unruly'?*

(R=Respondent) (Colour code: Red=comprehension problem; Blue=interpretation)

Unruly appeared to be problematic for some participants. R6 responded, 'Mmm...**what does unruly mean?....I'm guessing** it's like more like **naughtier**... But **I wasn't sure**'. Other participant responses could indicate that the word is problematic: R1 ('It's quite an **open-ended word** isn't it that?); R2 ('**Rulings?**'); R8 ('**I presumed**'); R10 ('**is that right?**').

Participants interpreted unruly as: *misbehave* (R1, R3, R7), *disruptive* (R2, R5, R8, R11, R12), *naughtier children* (R4, R6), *without boundaries at home* (R6), *badly behaved* (R8), *not following the rules* (R9, R10). Unruly also brought out the idea of persistence of inappropriate behaviours in participants' interpretations of the word: R7 ('a lot'), R8 ('always, they just carry on doing it'), R12 ('constant confrontations'). Analysis of response times shows that the average amount of time it took respondents to answer Q1 was 19 seconds, with this question being one of five participants' slowest responses and no participant's fastest response time. This may be due to the issue raised with understanding the term unruly, but also the complexity of the question involving 'tougher punishments' as discussed below. Three participants strongly agreed with the statement, four agreed, three disagreed and two strongly disagreed. On analysis, participant feedback indicates that consideration should be given to amending 'unruly' due to some uncertainty expressed. Analysis of feedback suggests that this could be replaced with 'disruptive' as five participants used this word to describe what they thought unruly meant (although this may be influenced by the other question). This question will be re-tested in Round 2 cognitive interviews.

'Tougher Punishments'

Some respondents made insightful comments into their thoughts on 'tougher punishments' whilst completing the survey. R2 commented, 'They just deserve tough punishment sometimes I think', and R5 stated, 'No, I'm not into punishing kids...not punished like hit, corporal thing...I don't believe in that.' When probed on this term, participants tended to refer to the current punishments in schools. Despite the ambiguity of what 'tougher punishments' means to respondents, they generally appeared able to respond to the sentiment of the term. Only R5 referred to 'tougher punishments' in relation to physical punishments. No changes to the term 'tougher punishments' is deemed necessary as it is the punitive sentiment of the concept that is being measured rather than the exact meaning of the term.

Question 2: *School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded.*

What did you understand by the term 'permanently excluded'?

(Red=comprehension problem; Blue=interpretation)

Responses indicate that participants understood the term permanently excluded, with the majority of responses including terms such as 'not allowed back in school' and 'banned'. Only R2 elaborated when probed that the term might mean 'being permanently schooled elsewhere in the school'. Three participants strongly agreed with the statement, two agreed, six disagreed and one strongly disagreed. On average, Q2 took the longest time for participants to answer with an average of 23 seconds with this question being one of five participants slowest response times and one participant's fastest time. The two slowest response times were by participants making comments about the question to the interview whilst responding. On analysis, respondents showed an understanding of the term, therefore no amendment is deemed necessary to the question.

Question 3: *What did you understand by the word 'caning'?*

(Red=comprehension problem; Blue=interpretation)

Participants generally understood the term and interpreted it as being 'hit with a stick' (R1, R2, R5, R6). It was also clear that the word 'cane' is still a ubiquitous word to participants with R3, R7, R8, R9, R10, R11 and R12 all using it to describe their interpretation of the meaning. The context of their answers which used the word cane demonstrates an understanding of what the cane was and was used for (R3: 'punishment', 'get him with it'; R7: 'on your hand, wrap you with it'; R8: 'a wrap over the knuckles with the old cane'; R9: 'battering them with it'; R10: 'hit on the hand'; R11: 'hit across the palms'; R12: 'smacked with the cane'). Two participants questioned the term 'caning' initially: R1 'Caning? Is that like a whip...like a stick?', and R6 'I've no idea. Caning like with a stick?'. One participant strongly agreed with the statement, four agreed, four disagreed and three strongly disagreed. On analysis, caning appeared to be understood by participants and therefore no adjustment to the term or statement is deemed to be needed. An average response time for Q3 was 12 seconds with it being one of two participants fastest response time at 5 and 6 seconds, and one person's slowest response time at 15 seconds.

Question 4: *School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour. Some of the questions used terms like 'unruly', 'bad behaviour' and 'disruptive behaviour'. Which of these terms did you prefer?*

(Red=comprehension problem; Blue=interpretation; Green=respondent's preference)

There did not appear to be an obvious preference to any of the terms. R1, and R3 preferred **badly behaved**; R2, R7, R12 preferred **disruptive**; R6 preferred either **badly behaved** or **disruptive**; and, R4 and R10 preferred **unruly**. However, R5, R8, R9, R11 noted that the **terms all have the same meaning** or **indicated no preference**.

Disruptive behaviour was interpreted by some respondents as meaning persistent behaviours interfering with other pupils learning: 'small kind of behaviour, the little chitty chat' (R2); 'concerning everybody else as well because it would be disrupting their learning' (R6); 'bringing other people that are in the class to do the same as them' (R7); 'when the child is acting out' and 'it's constant' (R8); 'spoil for everyone around', 'wrecking it for other people as well as themselves' (R9); 'annoying other students' (R10); 'disrupting the class...being annoying' (R12).

Bad behaviour was interpreted by some respondents as referring to a person being bad rather than the behaviour and as such did not like the term: 'nastier with the teacher' (R5); 'being a bad person in general' (R10); 'something that you do because you are a nasty person' (R12). R1 and R3 preferred bad behaviour as 'it's probably more appropriate for today...generally not behaving in the right manner' (R1); 'they know what they are doing' (R3). R6 preferred bad behaviour or disruptive behaviour, noting that bad behaviour is 'just not behaving how they should' and it 'could just be that it affects you'. R9 interpreted bad behaviour as 'more subtle' and 'orchestrating but not necessarily on the front line'.

Unruly was interpreted as: 'just a bit giddy' (R3); 'talking when you shouldn't be talking' (R5); 'rude towards the teacher and other staff and other pupils' (R8); 'not sticking to the rules...playing about in a daft manner' (R9); R10 noted that he felt that **unruly was not as bad in behaviour terms as the other two terms**; R12 felt that **unruly was in the middle of bad behaviour and disruptive on the behaviour spectrum**.

Probe 4 allowed participant to reflect on their interpretations of each term. Responses were elicited detailing the differences between the terms and in some cases lead to participants ordering the terms on a behaviour spectrum. Unruly was only preferred by two participants, which in addition to the previous analysis of unruly in Q1, would further suggest that this word may need amending. A decision was made to keep the original question wording for Q3 and Q4 as the terms assessed what was intended. Five participants strongly agreed with the statement, five agreed, one disagreed and one strongly disagreed. In terms of response times, Q4 was one of five respondents fastest response times and one of two respondents' slowest times, with an average time of 16.5 seconds, ranging from 3 to 40 seconds. The slowest response times (R9 and R12) reflect the deliberations of the complexity of the question rather than the question presenting as problematic. R9 and R12 were also the only two participants who strongly disagreed/disagreed respectively with this statement.

Question 5: Welfare benefit recipients who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties. What did you understand by the term 'welfare benefit recipients'?

(Red=comprehension problem; Blue=interpretation)

Participants' interpretations of the term 'welfare benefit recipients' were quite diverse with only R10 unsure what welfare was, stating 'I was thinking that welfare is similar to a charity...not from the government.' This may be due to R10 being young and perhaps having no personal knowledge and experience of the benefit system. Seven participants strongly agreed with the statement, four agreed and one disagreed. Q5 gave the quickest average response time of 11 seconds with it being one of four participants quickest response time and one participant's slowest time. On analysis, respondents generally understood the term, therefore no amendment is deemed necessary.

Qualitative analysis suggests that referring to welfare benefit recipients divides responses into two categories; those who expressed a generic interpretation of the term, and those who specified specific groups, namely the unemployed and migrants. The former involved responses such as 'underprivileged who claim benefits' (R1), 'claim public funds...working class credit' (R2), 'unemployed, old age pensioners, people with learning or physical disabilities' (R9), 'any money that somebody gets from the government to help them out' (R11), 'unemployment support allowance, single parent, somebody who is on disability living

allowance' (R12). The latter group responded in the following ways, with some making a connection to immigration: 'them that don't work' (R3), 'Immigrants...they come in, get everything out of the system, and put nothing in' (R4), 'All people, not just all foreigners that are here' (R5), 'people who don't tend to get jobs because they don't look for them and get quite a lot of benefits' (R6), 'Scroungers...anyone who is scrounging...coloured or white' (R7), '...the ones that are just doing it to get everything they can so they don't have to go to work' (R8). This analysis indicates that there are commonalities between participant responses and recent observations in literature and research (discussed in more detail in Chapter 7).

Question 6: *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped. Can you explain your answer to this question?*

Analysis suggests that participants interpreted the question as intended, therefore it is assessed that no amendment to the question wording is needed. Probing was used to assess whether participants had considered the permanency element of the question, which answers indicate they had. Those who strongly agreed continued to assert that those who cheat should permanently be withdrawn money, for example, 'We go to work, you go to work...don't give them nowt, just stop it' (R3), 'if nothing happens to them, they just carry on doing it. They should stop all their money and not give them anything' (R4), and 'if they are swinging the lead you can't have your benefits. They don't get no more' (R8). In contrast, the majority of those who agreed tended to soften their response when probed on permanency, for example, 'Maybe that's a bit strict...I think that is a bit too harsh. I'm in two minds about that then really' (R2), and, 'they should be stopped to some degree...but mostly people are trying to get benefits because they are really needy, so I don't think they should be permanently stopped' (R5). Three participants strongly agreed with the statement, six agreed, two disagreed and one strongly disagreed. Analysis of response times shows that the average response time for Q6 was 14 seconds, with this question being three participant's slowest response time and three participants' fastest response time.

General Probes

Participants reported generally finding the questions easy to understand and straightforward. Some participants referred to the complexity of the questions and the difficulty in answering with limited information. Analysis indicates that revising the answer categories to include a

mid-point is required. Participants highlighted the complexities of some questions made them weigh up the agree or disagree category forcing them to provide an answer but left them feeling unsatisfied with the response they gave. These participants noted that a mid-point would have allowed them to answer more accurately. Additionally, observations of any navigation issues suggested that the majority of participants were familiar with using such a device and as such no problems were encountered. The only participant who reported feeling unconfident using the tablet was one participant in the 75+ age group who had no previous experience of using this technology. In the eventual survey, this age group will be targeted through face-to-face interviews by the survey company should the group be under-represented through the web-based survey.

Recommendations

The aims of the CI interviews were to assess whether participants understand key terms in a consistent way? What do these terms bring to participants' minds when they are answering the questions? What are the factors that influence how participants respond? Are participants able to answer sufficiently accurately and reliably to meet the measurement aims of the survey? Based on the above analysis, the following recommendations were made:

1. 'Unruly'

'Unruly' used in question 1 was a term that some participants appeared unfamiliar with. As a result, 'unruly' was replaced with 'disruptive' in round two of cognitive interviews. Five participants used disruptive to describe unruly, which suggests that this is a common word that participants understand. This question was amended to *'Disruptive school children should receive tougher punishments'* and re-tested in round two of cognitive interviews.

2. 'Cheat the system'

Consideration was given to whether 'cheat the system' was too provocative. This concern is raised by how punitive responses were to welfare claimants both in their answers and the verbal responses to probes. In round two, Q5 and Q6 were re-tested with a mid-point (neither agree nor disagree) to assess if this results in a more even distribution.

3. *Mid-point*

As noted in the previous section, it was assessed that a mid-point was required. This was tested in round two.

Comparison of attitudes towards children and welfare claimants

Analysis indicates that introducing permanency to punishment (permanent exclusion/permanently stopping payments) reduced participants' punitiveness to both groups. With regards to tougher punishments for children, seven participants strongly agreed or agreed, which reduced to five with the inclusion of permanent exclusion. Consequently, the majority were not in favour of permanent exclusion. With welfare claimants, stiffer penalties resulted in eleven of twelve participants strongly agreeing or agreeing; this reduced to nine in agreement following the introduction of permanently stopping payments. So, whilst attitudes softened a little towards welfare claimants, 75% of participants continued to be in favour of permanently stopping payments. Overall, participants showed a more punitive attitude towards welfare recipients than towards school pupils, both in their answers and their discourse.

Cognitive Interviews: Round Two Analysis

Following the recommendations above, a decision was made to re-test the following three questions:

- Question 1 – Replace 'unruly' with 'disruptive'. A mid-point was not used in this question in order to compare it with round one interview distributions to see whether changing the word made a difference to responses.
- Question 5 and Question 6 – Include a mid-point to explore whether this improves the distributions. Whilst 'cheat the system' may be provocatively worded, using this phrase may provide and insight as to whether political discourse is evident in public attitudes towards benefit recipients.

A decision was also made not to use probes in round two due to the terms already being probed in round one. The focus of round two was to test the distributions of the answers and examine the quantitative results.

Recommendation 1 - Question 1

The quantitative results comparing round one (12 participants) using 'unruly' and round two (29 participants) using 'disruptive' are shown in (Table 4.6.). In round 1, 58% either strongly agreed or agreed with the statement with 42% either disagreeing or strongly disagreeing. In round 2, 48% strongly agreed or agreed and 52% disagreed or strongly disagreed with the statement. Analysing the data above in isolation, unruly appears to generate a more punitive response. However, this difference may be due to demographic differences in attitudes as round 2's participant base covered a greater geographic area with a larger participant base.

Response times between round one and round two were also examined. In round one, response times ranged from 6 to 58 seconds, with an average response time of 19 seconds, compared to round two which ranged from 7 seconds to 92 seconds, with the average response time of 23.8 seconds. Lengthier response times tended to be participants commenting on the nature of the question whilst completing the survey, for example, round two R13 commented that it was a difficult question to answer as her response is dependent on the circumstances of the child (response time – 92 seconds).

Table 4.6. Cognitive Interviews: Comparison of round one and round two

Round 1 – 'Unruly'	Number	Percentage	Round 2 – 'Disruptive'	Number	Percentage
Strongly Agree	3	25	Strongly Agree	4	14
Agree	4	33	Agree	10	34
Disagree	3	25	Disagree	11	38
Strongly disagree	2	17	Strongly Disagree	4	14

Following round two analysis, it was decided to revert to using the term 'unruly'. Reflecting on round one, only one person stated that they did not know the word, but on elaboration had interpreted the word as intended. The word 'disruptive', whilst seemingly a more familiar word to participants, also resulted in its own challenges; for example, participants tended to interpret unruly as meaning any behaviours that break the rules, whereas disruptive tended to be interpreted as behaviours that only disrupted other children's learning. The questions for

this project aim to capture attitudes towards all inappropriate behaviours, therefore unruly was assessed as more suitable in this instance. In terms of the quantitative data, there was little difference in response times once consideration was given to participants talking to the interviewer whilst answering the question. Consequently, a decision was made to use ‘unruly’, but to ensure that in the survey it will always follow other behaviour questions to ensure that respondents are familiar with the nature of the battery of questions.

Recommendation 2 and 3: Questions 5 and 6.

The quantitative results comparing round one (using no mid-point) and round two (using a mid-point) for *Welfare benefit recipients who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties*, and *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped* are shown in are shown in Table 4.7. and Figure 4.8.

Table 4.7. Rulebreaking welfare recipients: support for stiffer sentences results

Round 1	Number	Percentage	Round 2	Number	Percentage
Strongly Agree	7	58	Strongly Agree	6	20.5
Agree	4	33	Agree	13	45
			Neither Agree nor Disagree	6	20.5
Disagree	1	9	Disagree	2	7
Strongly Disagree	0	0	Strongly Disagree	2	7

In round 1 (Table 4.7.), 91% strongly agreed or agreed that *welfare recipients who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties*, whilst 9% disagreed, compared to round 2 where 65.5% strongly agreed or agreed and 14% disagreed or strongly disagreed with 20% neither agreeing or disagreeing.

Table 4.8. Rulebreaking welfare recipients: support for permanently stopping welfare payments results

Round 1	Number	Percentage	Round 2	Number	Percentage
Strongly Agree	3	25	Strongly Agree	1	4
Agree	6	50	Agree	7	24
			Neither Agree nor Disagree	5	17
Disagree	2	17	Disagree	12	41
Strongly Disagree	1	8	Strongly Disagree	4	14

In round 1 (Table 4.8.), 75% strongly agreed or agreed that *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped*, whilst 25% disagreed or strongly disagreed, compared to round 2 where 28% strongly agreed or agreed and 55% disagreed or strongly disagreed with 17% neither agreeing or disagreeing. Both results suggest that including a mid-point allows respondents to provide a neutral answer and improves the distributions. Whilst the question may contain provocative wording, participants are able to still acknowledge the complexities of the question in their answer by selecting ‘neither agree nor disagree’. Hough and Roberts (2005) note that efforts should be made to provide respondents with appropriate and sufficient response options to avoid presenting a false representation of attitudes. Additionally, as noted previously, this difference may in part be due to demographic differences as round one and round two interviews were undertaken in different areas with a greater geographic and larger participant base.

The finalised questions following two rounds of CIs are shown below (Table 4.9.). A decision was also made to use ‘welfare claimants’ in both questions five and six as this made question six more succinct than using ‘welfare benefit recipients’. No concerns had been identified in the analysis to indicate doing so would be problematic; participants appeared to respond in the same way to both terms. Table 4.9 shows the six new survey questions designed for this project, plus the two questions used by the British Social Attitudes Survey to measure punitive attitudes towards lawbreakers (Q7 and Q8).

Table 4.9. Final Draft of Survey Questions

Item	Item Wording	What is this measuring?
Q1	<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements? Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments.</i>	Attitudes to punishment
Q2	<i>School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded.</i>	Attitudes to punishment
Q3	<i>Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour.</i>	Beliefs about punishment
Q4	<i>School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour.</i>	Beliefs about punishment
Q5	<i>Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties.</i>	Attitudes to punishment
Q6	<i>Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped.</i>	Attitudes to punishment
Q7	<i>People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences.</i>	Attitudes to punishment
Q8	<i>For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence.</i>	Attitudes to punishment

4.2.6. Summary

This chapter commenced by outlining the CI design process, presenting the measurement aims of the interviews. The CI framework was then presented prior to providing an overview of the cognitive interviews. The analysis of the cognitive interviews and the decision making involved throughout the question design has been discussed in detail to demonstrate the analytical process involved in the design of new survey questions. The process of undertaking cognitive interviews enabled questions to be pre-tested targeting the population representative of the eventual survey. This aims to assess whether questions work as intended, as much as this is possible. The process adopted for the nature of these CIs is

deemed to have been suitable in achieving the specific aims: key terms were tested to see if participants understood them in a consistent way; an understanding was gained into what these terms brought to participants' minds when answering and what factors influenced responses; and, whether participants were able to answer sufficiently accurately and reliably to meet the measurement aims of the survey was assessed. The final draft of questions was then presented, which was tested in the pilot survey in September 2018, detailed in the next subchapter.

Chapter 4.3. A Quantitative Framework

4.3.1. Introduction

The previous chapter detailed the cognitive interviewing design process undertaken in the development of the new survey questions. Analysis of the cognitive interviews was then presented, which shows the decision-making process of question design for this study. The chapter concluded by presenting the final battery of questions, this included: four newly designed questions to measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants; two questions fielded since the 1980s by the British Social Attitudes Survey to measure punitiveness towards lawbreakers; plus, two newly designed questions to measure beliefs about the punishment of school pupils (subsequently used to measure neo-conservative values, see Chapter 5). This chapter outlines the quantitative methodology used in this study. This short discussion presents the capacity of the chosen methodology for this study in achieving its objective of measuring public attitudes on a large scale. In doing so, limitations of using quantitative methods to examine punitive attitudes are also discussed whilst also outlining some of the efforts that have been made to reduce the effects of some of these limitations. The chapter concludes by outlining the pilot study, providing details about the pilot sample.

4.3.2. Quantitative Methodology

‘A survey is a systematic method for gathering information from (a sample of) entities for the purpose of constructing quantitative descriptors of the attributes of the large population of which the entities are members’ (Groves, 2004:2)

This study applies quantitative methodology, derivative of an online survey, to the exploration of punitive public attitudes towards rulebreakers. The epistemology here suggests that knowledge about the social world can be gained through the use of a quantitative methodology (Bryman, 1984). The use of quantitative methodology to understand public opinion towards criminal justice has a relatively lengthy history in criminology (see Chapter 2.1.) and public attitudes (see Part 2). Quantitative methodology aims to be objective, replicable and able to examine relationships between factors (Bryman,

1984). The operationalization of concepts allows for objectivity maintaining a distance between researcher and participants (Bryman, 1984). Replicability is achieved through the ability to re-run the same survey in a different context (Bryman, 1984). Whilst the studying of relationships between factors is enabled through using statistical software (SPSS in this case) to conduct a range of statistical analyses (Farnworth et al., 1996; De Vaus 1995). Survey research then allows data collection from a large sample to be 'structured' and 'systematic' (De Vaus 1995:3), enabling analysis to be measurable and generalisable (Denscombe, 2014). However, it is also acknowledged that the researcher is present in every decision that is made throughout the project, from the formulation of the topic of study, the research design, question design, interpretation, analysis and write up. As such, steps have been undertaken along the way to be open and transparent about the decisions made in this project's design; acknowledging the limitations and steps taken to attempt to reduce the effects of these limitations, where possible.

4.3.3. Measuring Public Attitudes

'An attitude is shaped by, or some might say, created by, the measurement instrument.' (Hough and Roberts, 2005:20).

This study has aimed to measure public attitudes; this is 'a snapshot' of attitudes 'at a given point in time' (Denscombe, 2007:8). In doing so, it makes some fundamental assumptions: that individual, divergent and complex attitudes can be 'standardised' and simplified (Durand, 2016).

'Structured surveys are blunt instruments' (Hough, 1996:193)

A clear limitation of survey research is the injustice that quantifying attitudes can do to the subtlety of individual viewpoints (Hough and Roberts, 2005). Hough and Roberts (2005) suggest that limitations can arise from an insufficient sampling strategy (see Chapter 5.2), inappropriate question wording and not providing sufficient and appropriate response categories. Efforts have been made to try and reduce some of the effects of these limitations throughout the study. The process of the study to this point, has detailed the efforts made to

design questions that are placed into context by literature, empirical research and trends in policies and political opinion. The cognitive interviewing process has outlined the attempts made to design questions that have appropriate wording, adequate response categories and measure attitudes as proposed by this study. For instance, the cognitive interviewing process highlighted the desire by some respondents to be provided with a mid-point (neither agree nor disagree), which has been detailed in the previous chapter.

It is known that survey questions that are highly generalised can over-represent punitiveness (Hough and Roberts, 2005). Roberts and Hough (2005) found that providing more information to the public about sentencing scenarios tends to soften people's responses to the use of (youth) custody. When people are given more time, information or questions on a subject, their punitiveness reduces (Hough and Roberts, 2005). This was observed in some of the cognitive interviews (discussed in more detail in Chapter 7, section 7.4.). During verbal probing following participants' completion of the main survey, some participants reflected on the severity of their answers or commented that they would have liked to have more information to enable them to make a more informed response. However, due to the constraints of the survey it was necessary to design the questions in a simple way. Additionally, the purposes of this study are to gain a general sense of punitive attitudes and attitudes towards the use of specific sanctions, to attempt to understand what influences these attitudes, and to compare attitudes towards different groups of rulebreakers. It was deemed that the questions were designed in a way that the objectives of the study could be achieved. The battery of questions designed for this project were embedded in a larger survey to explore contemporary social and political attitudes (Appendix D), as such these newly designed questions were well-suited to the style of questions of the survey. Additionally, survey research allows an understanding of a large number of people's values and attitudes at a point in time (NatCen, 2020). Moreover, longitudinal survey research helps understand how attitudes and values change over time (NatCen, 2020).

4.3.4. Web-based Surveys: Strengths and Limitations

A web-based survey is a self-administered survey accessed via the internet and can be accessed via computers, smartphones and tablets (Callegaro et al., 2015). Web-based surveys have the strengths of speed of data collection, access to a geographically wide sample, and

the convenience of respondents completing the survey at their own pace (Callegaro et al., 2015). Interviewer specific bias and interviewer's variance, which can impact on the data through interviewer's attitudes, moods and prejudices, are removed through web-based surveys (Callegaro et al., 2015). Additionally, the privacy afforded through this mode of delivery reduces the prevalence of socially desirable responses compared to other modes of delivery (Kreuter, Presser and Tourangeau, 2008; Heerwegh, 2009). Moreover, the more anonymous a person perceives themselves to be, the less respondents are likely to provide socially desirable answers (Heerwegh and Loosveldt, 2007). Web-based data collection strategies are now widely used and have become a mainstream form of data collection used by the Office for National Statistics and the Centre for Longitudinal Studies, for example (ONS, 2020; UCL, 2020).

However, despite these strengths, there are some notable limitations. Non-response may occur in internet surveys (Callegaro et al., 2015) in which invited participants may refuse to participate altogether, cease participation at any point during the survey, or may only answer certain questions (Vehovar and Mantreda, 2017). There is also the increased likelihood of self-selection bias (Callegaro et al., 2015). In terms of the survey for this study, the non-response rates are shown in Table 5.4 (p179). In total, there were 5,781 respondents; 3,178 (29%) invited online panellists did not participate, and 488 (4%) dropped out at some point during the survey. Of the 488, 93 (91%) dropped on the introductory page of the survey, 9.8% (48) dropped out when asked to submit their country and postcode, and a further 12.1% (59) dropped out when asked their age and gender. Between 4 % and 5% tended to drop out during the attitudinal batteries of questions, with drop out percentages reducing as the survey progressed following the attitudinal based questions. These dropout rates potentially point to some limitations of web-based surveys highlighted by Callegaro et al. (2015). Lack of interest or motivation in the topic, time restrictions, lack of concentration when completing the survey, and problems understanding the questions may all impact on the data collected (Callegaro et al. (2015). Heerwegh and Loosveldt (2008) found in their comparison study of a face-to-face and a web-based survey in a student sample that the web-based survey was more likely to elicit higher item non-response and a higher number of 'don't knows'. People also may refuse to answer a specific item if they feel it is sensitive, with some socio-demographic questions resulting in non-responses (Tourangeau et al., 2000).

Whilst the full sample of the main survey consisted of 5,781 respondents, once all variables were included in the multiple regression models, the sample size reduced considerably (n=2,090). This was due to the inclusion of some non-completed socio-demographic variables, specifically, religiosity, politics scale, class origin, income and ethnicity (detailed in the regression models). Religiosity resulted in the highest number of item non-response. The religiosity question was preceded by the question: 'What is your religion?', if respondents answered 'none' to this question, then they were not asked the subsequent question which asked, 'Would you consider yourself as extremely religious or extremely non-religious?'. Of the 5,781 respondents, 2,453 respondents answered that they had no religion; therefore, they were not asked the subsequent religiosity question. However, religiosity was included in the survey and analyses due to its relevance to political attitudes (Friesen Ksiazkiewicz, 2014; McAndrew, 2020). The ordinal regression analyses also resulted in a reduced sample size (n=3,637) (see ordinal regression models for details). These limitations will be revisited in Chapter 10.

In an attempt to mitigate some of the limitations of the web-based survey in this study, a range of steps were undertaken to attempt to design a survey instrument that not only operationalised and measured complex concepts, but also sought to test if certain aspects produced non-response issues. The range of steps taken consisted of expert reviews on the newly designed questions, two omnibus surveys, two rounds of cognitive interviews and a pilot survey during which questions were adapted and re-tested until the final survey instrument consisted of sixty-two items. The process undertaken in the design of the items specifically for this study are detailed throughout the thesis.

4.3.5. The Pilot Survey

Continuing the process of testing the survey questions a pilot survey was conducted between the 18th and 26th September 2018 to a representative sample, by BMG Research. It is important to pilot-test a survey to test the reliability, internal consistency and validity of a measurement instrument (Pallant, 2016) using participants representative of the targeted population of the study (Persaud, 2010). The pilot survey therefore was an online survey conducted by BMG Research of those aged over 16 years old (n=629). This was intended to

establish the relationships between items and batteries and to give an indication as to any potential problems with the survey. The main task was to check the distributions of items and to check the planned factor analyses worked as intended. Additionally, it was important to see if any questions were producing relatively high numbers of dropouts or if any questions were taking a relatively long time to answer. The median time for completion was 12 minutes and 51 seconds, which was assessed as acceptable. No questions were assessed as causing any noticeable concerns from the perspective of respondent engagement or willingness to answer the questions.

The Pilot Sample

The sample consisted of 629 respondents, 55% of which were male and 45% female. The modal age group was 55-64 with 22% of respondents in this age category. The second largest age group 45-54 with 20% of respondents in this group. Categories 25-34, 35-44 and 65-74 were all similar at around 17%. The youngest (16-24) and oldest (75+) age groups consisted of 4% and 2% respectively. Eighty-seven percent of the sample classed themselves as White British, 66% of the sample reported growing up in a working-class household, whilst 29% grew up in a middle-class household. Thirty-one percent of respondent households earned under £20,000 per year, with the majority (67%) earned under £40,000, and 7.4% earned over £70,000. Thirty-two percent reported that their financial situation was a lot worse (8%) or a little worse (24%) than a year ago, whereas almost 50% thought that it was the same, with 15% thinking it was a little better. Thirty-six percent had completed a university degree and 58% of respondents were married. Forty-seven percent reported that they had no religion, 26% were Church of England, 9.5% Roman Catholic, 5.4% Christian no denom, 2.1% other protestant or Christian, Methodist 1.4%, 2.2% Muslim, 1.1% Jewish and other religions accounted for less than 1% each. Only 1% reported being extremely religious, 5.1% very religious and 18.8% somewhat religious. Of the 510 respondents who reported voting in the 2017 General Election, 30% voted Conservative and 27% voted Labour. Factor analyses were then conducted to assess validity (Pallant, 2016). This was used to explore if the questions measured what they were designed to measure (Pallant, 2016). There were no concerns noted from the analyses undertaken in the pilot survey.

4.3.6. Summary

This chapter has presented the quantitative framework used in this study. The chapter began with a short discussion of the strengths of using quantitative methodology to examine public attitudes. These were highlighted as allowing a large-scale systematic analysis, which enables the operationalization of concepts and the study of relationships between variables of interest. The chapter then progressed to discuss the limitations of using quantitative methodology to explore public attitudes. This consisted of acknowledging that questions of a general nature can over-inflate punitive attitudes, the difficulty of trying to simplify complex attitudes and the efforts made to at least reduce some of the effects of these limitations in this study. The strengths and limitations of web-based surveys were then considered, including some reflections of the limitations of this online survey in regards to non-response items of some of the socio-demographic variables in this study. Finally, the chapter concluded by presenting the pilot study, which allowed the pre-testing of the questions and basic analyses to be undertaken. This process did not highlight any concerns with the survey questions. Part four now turns the attention to the main survey findings.

Chapter 5 Placing analysis into context

5.1. Introduction

Part 3 outlined the process used in developing survey questions. This entailed a review of the cognitive interviewing literature encompassing the strengths and limitations of this pre-testing method, the two main cognitive interviewing paradigms, and the challenges of conducting web-based surveys. The cognitive interviewing process for this study was then detailed, presenting the findings and the final survey questions. Finally, a short discussion on the strengths and limitations of survey research was presented before detailing the pilot study. This chapter aims to place the quantitative analysis into context in a number of ways. Firstly, the sample will be described followed by preliminary analyses of the key questions used in the analysis (the six newly designed questions plus the two criminal rulebreaker questions, see 5.2 below) will be presented. This chapter then progresses to present the descriptive statistics for each question, and subsequent analysis of the differences between gender and age for each question using t-tests and one-way ANOVAs. The construction of the independent variables used in the analyses will then be outlined, namely, neo-liberal values, neo-conservative values, social nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, and political nostalgic values. This involves detailing the theoretical background and the practical steps to their construction.

5.2. The Sample

Fieldwork was conducted by BMG Research between Thursday 17th January to Tuesday 12th February 2019. Online panels have pre-recruited respondents enabling timely data collection (Callegaro et al., 2015). However, online panels may impact on measurement error through the presence of over-engaged or 'professional' respondents, the absence of non-internet or low-internet usage households, self-selection bias and representativeness (Callegaro et al., 2015). The sampling strategy used by BMG detailed throughout this section aims to reduce the impact of these limitations. The British sample consisted of 5,781 responses to an online survey, which included 200 face-to-face interviews identified as low-level internet users. Internet use is less likely amongst the 65+ age group, and BAME individuals are generally less likely to use the internet relative to the white population (BMG, 2019). BMG uses a 'panel blend' approach sending survey invites simultaneously across other panels (Respondi, Cint,

Panelbase) in addition to its own panel with the aim of accessing a broader range of respondents (BMG, 2019). This method is designed to improve the quality of outputs by reducing the risk of selecting a single panel provider. Respondents were able to access the survey from desktops, laptops, tablets and mobile devices to increase accessibility (BMG, 2019). A small pilot launch was conducted on the evening of the 17th of January. The pilot consisted of 45 completes, with the responses collected used to allow checks that data was being captured correctly and that the script was working as intended. The survey was launched fully on 18th January after no issues were identified following the pilot launch, with pilot completes included in the final dataset.

A stratified random sampling approach was used drawing on online panelists' profiled information with the sampling frame drawn to select a representative sample of approximately 500 respondents from each Government Office Region in Britain (Table 5.1.) (BMG, 2019). This is a more robust approach when compared to a quota design as it reduces the risk that 'over-engaged' panellists being over-represented in the final sample. An increased number of reminder invitations were sent to enable greater opportunity for panelists to respond to the survey.

Table 5.1. The Composition of the Sample.

Region	Number	Percent
East Midlands	544	9.4
East of England	559	9.7
London	529	9.2
North East	488	8.4
North West	530	9.2
Scotland	529	9.2
South East	511	8.8
South West	531	9.2
Wales	517	8.9
West Midlands	530	9.2
Yorkshire and The Humber	513	8.9
Total	5781	100.0

Broad quotas for age, gender and Government Office Region were implemented to account for differential response rates. The sampling frame was not proportional in terms of the broader population of Great Britain. Instead, the sample was drawn in order to achieve a

representative sample of in the region 500 responses within each Government Office Region in Great Britain. Within each region the sample was stratified to be representative of age by gender and region. Educational level, ethnicity and IMD were monitored during fieldwork.

Main Survey Face-to-face Interviews

A small number (200) of face-to-face interviews by BMG were conducted with low internet users to increase the representativeness of the sample from the perspective of online connectivity. Whilst the internet is an increasingly 'normalised' mode of responding to surveys, analysis of ONS figures show that levels of internet use and access are considerably lower among older residents aged >65. Additionally, BAME individuals are, on average, less likely to use the internet relative to the white population. A total of 20 Lower Super Output Areas (LSOAs) were selected across Great Britain, with at least one LSOA selected in each Government Office Region. LSOAs were selected that either fell within the top decile in each Government Office region in terms share aged >65, or within the top decile in terms of BME population share. Interviews were conducted using a Computer-Assisted Self-Interview (CASI) methodology whereby an interviewer introduced the respondent to the computerised survey. Screening questions were conducted by the field interviewer, after which the tablet device was handed over to the respondent who then completed the survey on their own without interviewer involvement (unless where asked to provide technical support and assistance). Respondents were screened for their internet use prior to beginning the survey and only those respondents that used the internet for five hours or less per week (which includes any use of the internet at their place of work) were eligible to participate. The composition of the sample by target group is shown in Table 5.2.

Table 5.2. Number of Face-to-face Interviews

Government Office Region	Over 65	BME
East Midlands	9	9
East of England	9	9
London	9	11
North East	10	9
North West	9	9
Scotland	8	9
South East	8	10
South West	9	3
Wales	13	5
West Midlands	9	15
Yorkshire and Humberside	9	9
TOTAL	102	98

The overall composition of the final sample is as follows:

Table 5.3. Number of Interviews

Government Office Region	Online	Face-to-face	TOTAL
East Midlands	526	18	544
East of England	541	18	559
London	509	20	529
North East	469	19	588
North West	512	18	530
Scotland	512	17	529
South East	493	18	511
South West	519	12	531
Wales	499	18	517
West Midlands	506	24	530
Yorkshire and Humberside	495	18	513
TOTAL	5581	200	5781

A total of 66 cases were removed for completing the survey at excessive speed. Any respondent that completed the survey in less than 40% of the median response time was removed from the dataset. All respondents in the data set therefore have a survey response time of greater than 363 seconds (6 minutes and 3 seconds). All counts cited here exclude removals. The median time for completion (excluding cases removed for completing the survey at excessive speed) was 14 minutes and 48 seconds. The valid completion rate was 51%. The response/engagement rate was 71%. A breakdown of responses by status is provided in Table 5.4. below.

Table 5.4. Response Rates

Status	Definition	Count	Percentage
Completed	Completed and not removed for quality	5781	51
Target Full	Target for region/soft launch reached	1579	14
Refusal	Did not participate	3178	29
Drop Out	Started but did not complete the survey	488	4
Removed (Quality Reasons)	Completed the survey at excessive speed	66	1
TOTAL		10892	100

A Nationally Representative Weight was calculated using targets ascertained for each Government Office Region. Targets³ were as follows within each Government Office Region:

- Age by gender (interlocking)
- IMD (by quartile)
- 2016 Past EU Referendum Vote
- 2017 Past General Election Vote

With the weights applied the effective sample size (a measure of sampling efficiency) was 65%. Reduced efficiency at a national level is largely explained by the non-proportional targets for each Government Office Region. The Government Office Regions were specified by the Principle Investigator to ensure that the survey company did not recruit from limited areas, but instead recruited from a broad geographical area. A weighting variable was provided by the survey contractor. This weight was not used for the purposes of the multivariate analyses undertaken for this study. A comparison of the weighted and unweighted frequencies for the socio-demographic variables was undertaken in which no substantial difference was noted (Appendix E). This gives support that the survey was broadly representative of the population of Britain without the need for the weighting variable.

Who Is The Sample?

The sample⁴ consists of 47% males and 53% females with a mean age of 49.66, SD 16.75, ranging from 16 to 94 years old with a normal distribution (Figure 5.1.). Fifty-eight percent

³ All targets are based on Official Statistics from the ONS that are awarded National Statistics status, as well as the BBC's published election results (BMG, 2019).

⁴ As noted in Chapter 4.3. there are some limitations with the sample; this will be revisited in Chapter 10.

are in a marriage-type relationship (married, living as married or in a civil partnership). Thirty-three percent of the sample are degree educated, 52% educated up to degree level, and 15% have no qualifications. The median household income category before deductions is £25,000 to £29,999 per annum, 35.5% earned under £20,000, 71.7% earned under £40,000 and 6.7% earned above £70,000. The Office for National Statistics measures the median household disposable income (after deductions) in the UK at £28,400 (ONS, 2019). Forty-two percent describe themselves as having no religion, with the largest religious group (28%) being Church of England. Almost 8% of the sample were unemployed and 64% described the household they were raised in as working class. Thirty percent of the sample voted conservative at the 2017 General Election, whilst 29% voted for Labour. Figure 5.2. shows respondents' political self-identification (*In politics people sometimes talk of left and right. Where would you place yourself on the following scale?*).

Figure 5.1. Age Range of the Sample.

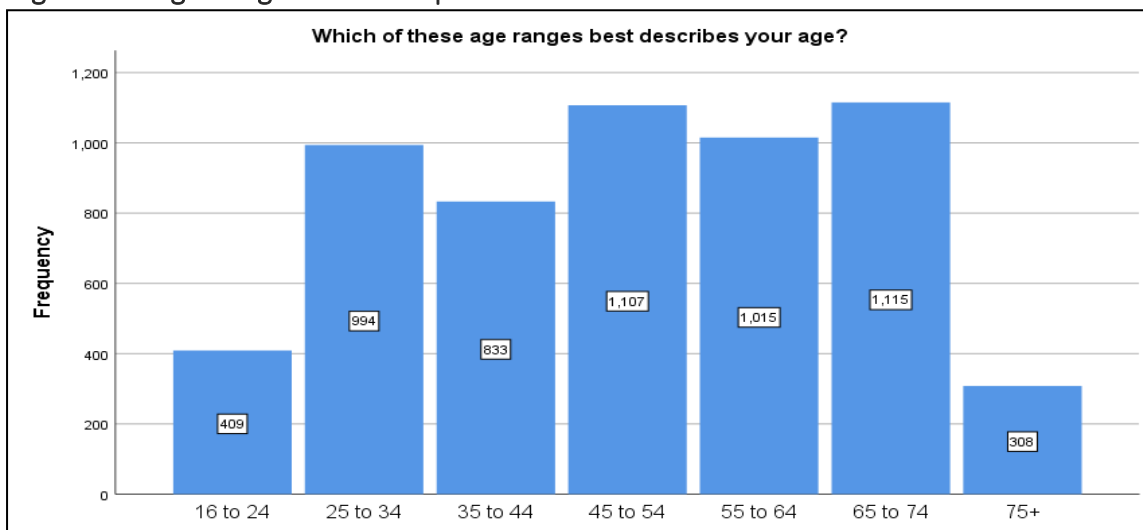
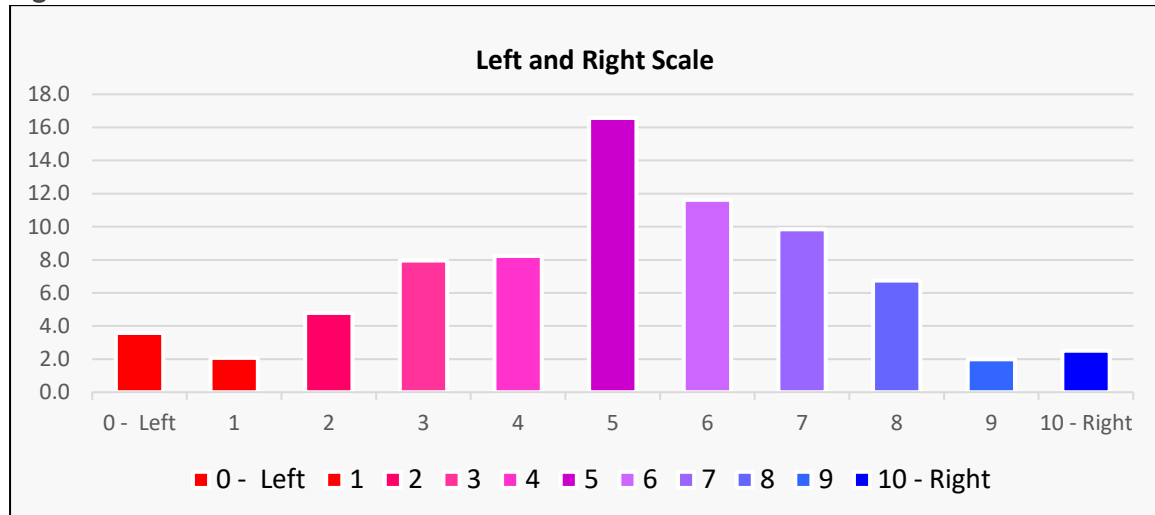


Figure 5.2. Politics Scale.



5.3. Descriptive Statistics, T-Tests and One-way ANOVAs

Six new survey questions were designed. Four of the six new survey items were designed to measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants and school children (Questions 1, 2, 5 and 6 below), whilst the remaining two questions were designed to measure beliefs about school punishments aiming to explore beliefs relating to authoritarianism, discipline and social control (Questions 3 and 4 below, subsequently used to measure neo-conservative values). Question 1 to 6 formed one battery of questions in the survey and used a five-point Likert scale⁵, with all questions sharing the same response codes provided to the question: *'How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?'*

1. Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments.
2. School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded.
3. Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behavior.
4. School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behavior.
5. Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties.
6. Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped.

Additionally, two survey items (Questions 7 and 8 below) developed and used over a period of decades by the British Social Attitudes Survey, were presented to participants in another

⁵ Response codes were: Strongly disagree, disagree, neither agree nor disagree, agree, strongly agree.

section of the survey sharing the same response codes⁵ as question 1 to 6, are to be used to analyze punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers:

7. People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences.
8. For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence.

The higher the respondent's score, the more punitive the person's attitudes are. The questions designed for this project were embedded in a larger survey (Appendix D) aiming to explore public sentiments and political attitudes, therefore the questions designed here were well suited to the larger survey.

The descriptive statistics for the eight items above are shown in Table 5.5. The mean result shows that support for *stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants* received the most punitive response (mean=4.28, SD=.864). *Caning was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour* received the least punitive response (mean=2.69, SD=1.320). Notably, the two statements with the largest standard deviations are those referring to physical punishments indicating a greater spread of responses with data points dispersed more widely from the mean (Field, 2018). Responses to the death penalty question has the largest standard deviation (SD=1.490) followed the corporal punishment question (*Caning was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour*) (SD=1.320). The mode for both questions referring to rulebreaking welfare claimants and lawbreakers is 5, suggesting that the strongly agree category was the most frequent response category for these four questions. The median for all variables is 4 (agree) apart from for the caning statement (neither agree nor disagree). These findings suggest that respondents generally expressed support for *more* punishment, but not necessarily physical punishment.

Table 5.5. Descriptive statistics for the eight new variables

	School Pupils				Welfare Claimants		Lawbreakers	
	School children - tougher punishments	School children – permanent exclusion	Caning good way of tackling behaviour	School punishments – not strict enough	Welfare claimant – stiffer penalties	Welfare claimants – payments stopped	Law breakers – stiffer sentences	Law breakers - death penalty
Number	5781	5781	5781	5781	5781	5781	5781	5781
Mean	3.91	3.57	2.69	4.02	4.28	3.94	3.99	3.37
Median	4.00	4.00	3.00	4.00	4.00	4.00	4.00	4.00
Mode	4	4	2	4	5	5	5	5
Std. Deviation	.937	1.103	1.320	.949	.864	1.084	.950	1.490
Variance	.878	1.216	1.744	.900	.747	1.175	.902	2.219

5.3.1. Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments

Seventy-four percent of respondents strongly agreed (27%) or agreed (47%) with this statement, 17% neither agreed nor disagreed, and 9% either disagreed (7%) or strongly disagreed (2%) (see Figure 5.3). Scores for this variable indicate negative skewness (-.842) indicating that values are clustered at the high end (more punitive scores) and positive kurtosis (.474) indicating that the values are peaked. These skewness and kurtosis scores indicate that this variable is not normally distributed with a mean standard error of 0.12. Whilst descriptive statistics indicate that this variable is not normally distributed parametric tests will be carried out on the data due to the large number of cases involved. Tabachnick and Fidell (2013:80) suggest that the risk of distortion from skewed data is reduced with 200+ cases. Additionally, parametric tests have historically been used to analyse data in criminology, therefore their use here will allow comparison with previous research in the field⁶.

An independent samples t-test was conducted to compare responses to this statement between males and females (Figure 5.4). There was a significant difference ($p=.001$) between scores for males ($M= 3.96, SD=.923$) and females ($M=3.86, SD=.947$; $t(5709)=4.133$). The magnitude of the differences in the means (mean=.102, 95% CI: .054 to

⁶ Non-parametric tests were also undertaken for completion as these are normally used for items measured on ordinal scales (Pallant, 2016). Statistical results did not differ to those outlined in this chapter.

.150) was very small (eta squared=.003). Eta squared ranges from 0 to 1 and represents the proportion of variance in the dependent variable that is explained by the independent group (Pallant, 2016).

Figure 5.3. Frequencies for tougher punishments for unruly school children.

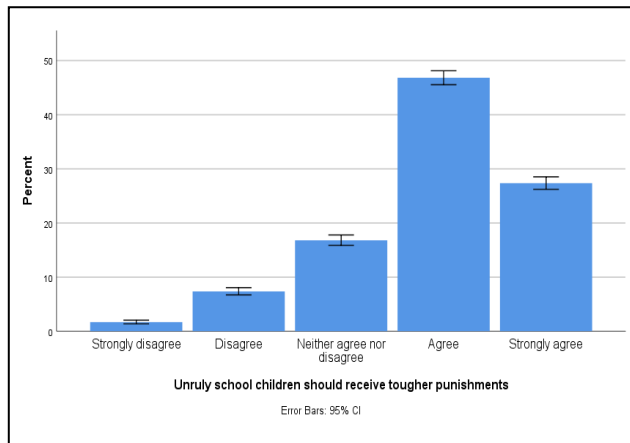
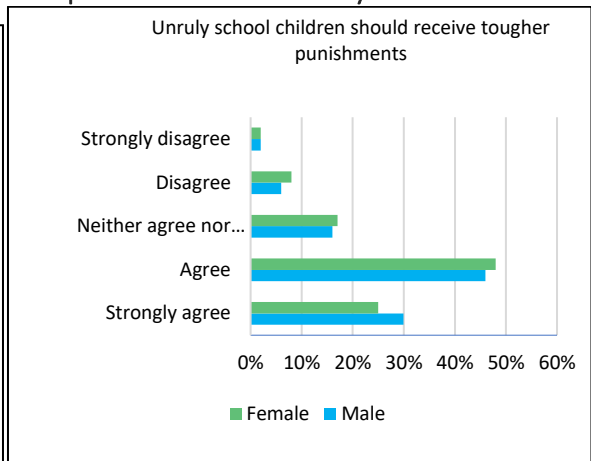
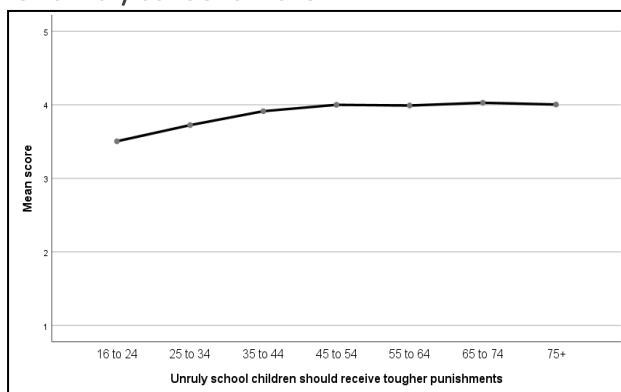


Figure 5.4. Gender responses for punishments for unruly school children.



A one-way between-groups analysis found a statistically significant difference at the $<.05$ level for responses for the different age categories, however, the effect size calculated using eta-squared, was .02 indicating that the actual difference in mean scores was small. Post-hoc comparisons using the Tukey HSD (Honestly Significant Difference) test indicated that there was a statistically significant difference in the mean scores for both the 16-24 and 25-34 age categories compared to every other age group, with the younger age groups being less punitive. The means plot (Figure 5.5) illustrates the responses with the higher scores being more punitive.

Figure 5.5. Mean by age range for tougher punishments for unruly school children.



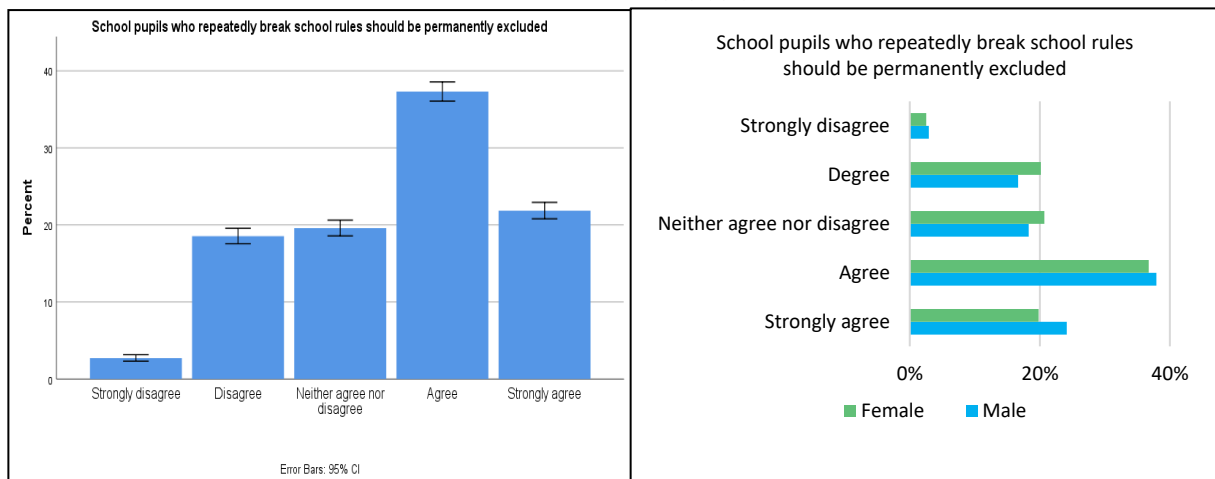
Summary

The majority of respondents (74%) were in agreement that unruly school children should receive tougher punishments indicating an overall punitive response. There are statistically significant differences, with small effect sizes, between gender and certain age groups, with males being more punitive and the two youngest age groups being less punitive in comparison to older age groups.

5.3.2. School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded

Fifty-nine percent of respondents strongly agreed (22%) or agreed (37%) with this statement, 20% neither agreed nor disagreed, and 21% either disagreed (18%) or strongly disagreed (3%) (Figure 5.6). Scores for this variable indicate negative skewness (-.408) and negative kurtosis (-.795) suggesting that the variable is not normally distributed, with a mean standard error of .015. An independent samples t-test was conducted to compare responses to this variable between males and females (Figure 5.7). There was a significant difference ($p=.001$) between males ($M=3.64$, $SD=1.106$) and females ($M=3.51$, $SD=1.096$; $t(5779)=4.324$). The magnitude of the differences in the means (.126, 95% CI: .069 to .182) was very small ($\eta^2=.003$).

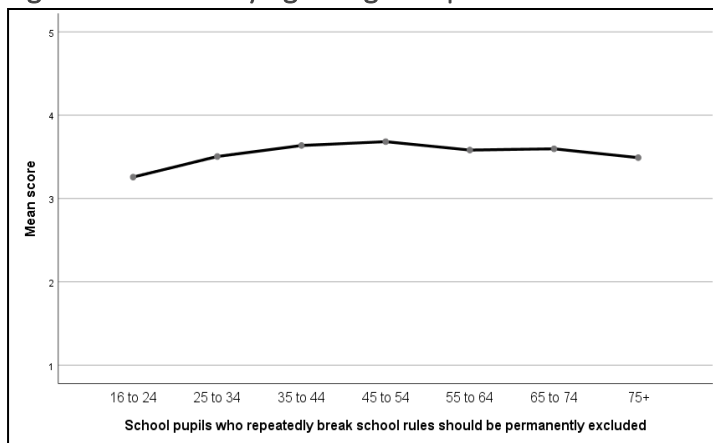
Figure 5.6. Frequencies for permanent exclusion. Figure 5.7. Gender responses for permanent exclusion.



A one-way between-groups analysis of variance indicates that there is a statistically significant difference at the $<.05$ level for the responses for the different age categories,

however, the effect size calculated using eta-squared, was .01 indicating that the actual difference in mean scores was small. Post-hoc comparisons using the Tukey HSD test indicated that the mean score for both the 16-24 age category was significantly different from every other age group apart from the 75+ category. The 25-34 age category was significantly different to the 16-24 and 45-54 age category. Whilst these younger age groups were less punitive than older age groups, the means plot below shows a curvilinear relationship between age and support for the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils, suggesting a more complex relationship than with support for tougher punishments for rulebreaking school pupils (Figure 5.8).

Figure 5.8. Mean by age range for permanent exclusion.



Summary

The majority of respondents (59%) were in agreement that school pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded, a reduction of 15% from agreement with *unruly school pupils should receive tougher punishments*. This suggests that the introduction of a specific severe sanction reduces punitive responses from some participants. Despite this reduction, the responses still indicate an overall punitive response. There are statistically significant differences between gender and certain age groups, with males being more punitive and the youngest age group being the least punitive, however the means plot illustrates a more complex relationship between age and punitiveness with the 45-54 age category being the most punitive. Despite these findings, the effect sizes were very small which is also reflected in the mean scores.

5.3.3. Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behavior

Thirty percent of respondents either strongly agreed (11%) or agreed (19%) with this statement, 21% neither agreed nor disagreed, and 49% either disagreed (25%) or strongly disagreed (24%) (Figure 5.9). Scores for this variable indicate positive skewness (.252) and negative kurtosis (-1.112) suggesting that the variable is not normally distributed, with a mean standard error of .017. An independent samples t-test was conducted to compare responses to between males and females (Figure 5.10). There was a significant difference ($p=.001$) between males ($M=3.01$, $SD=1.335$) and females ($M=2.41$, $SD=1.243$; $t(5541.15)=17.408$). The magnitude of the differences between the means (.594, 95% CI: .527 to .660) was a small to moderate effect ($\eta^2 = .05$).

Figure 5.9. Frequencies for caning.

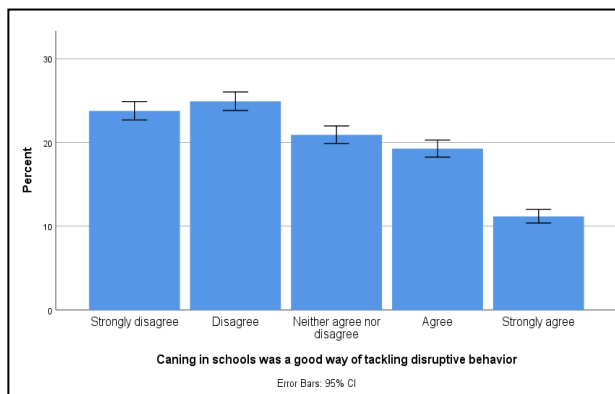
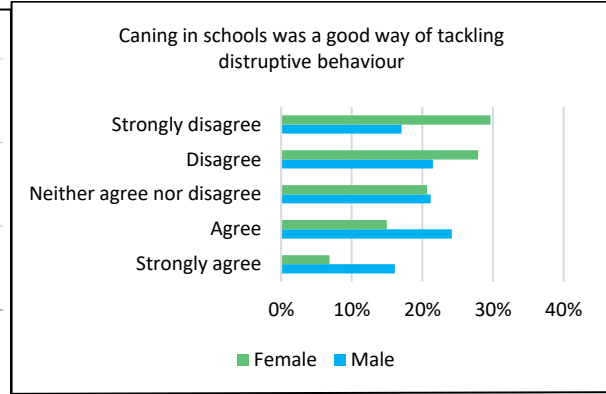
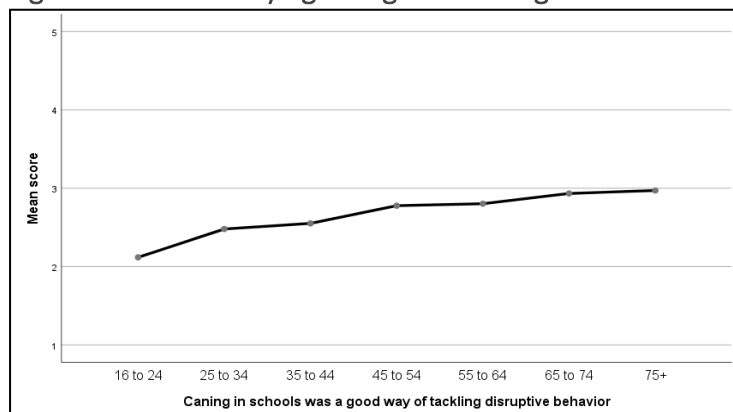


Figure 5.10. Gender responses for caning.



A one-way between-groups analysis of variance shows a statistically significant difference at the $<.05$ level for the responses for the different age categories, however, the effect size calculated using eta-squared, was .03 indicating that the actual difference in mean scores was quite small. Post-hoc comparisons using the Tukey HSD test indicated that the mean score for the 16-24 age category was significantly different from every other age group. The 25-34 age category was significantly different to all age categories except the 34-44 age group. The 35-44 age category was significantly different to all apart from the 25-34 age group. The 45-54, 55-64, 65-74 and 75+ age groups were significantly different to the youngest three age groups (Figure 5.11).

Figure 5.11. Mean by age range for caning.



Summary

The minority of respondents (30%) were in agreement that caning was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour indicating less support for physical punishments. There are statistically significant differences, with small effect sizes, between gender and certain age groups, with males being more supportive of the statement and the youngest age group being less supportive than older age groups.

5.3.4. School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behavior

Seventy-six percent of respondents either strongly agreed (35%) or agreed (41%) with this statement, 16% neither agreed nor disagreed, and 8% either disagreed (6%) or strongly disagreed (2%) (Figure 5.12). Scores for this variable indicate negative skewness (-.911) and positive kurtosis (.482) suggesting that the variable is not normally distributed, with a mean standard error of .012. An independent samples t-test was conducted to compare responses to between males and females (Figure 5.13). There was a significant difference ($p=.003$) between males ($M=4.05$, $SD=.952$) and females ($M=3.98$, $SD=.945$; $t(5779)=2.960$). The magnitude of the differences between the means (.074, 95% CI: .025 to .123) was very small ($\eta^2 = .001$).

Figure 5.12 Frequencies for punishments not strict enough.

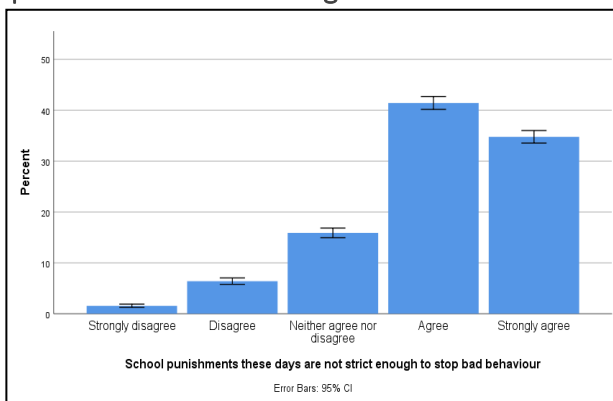
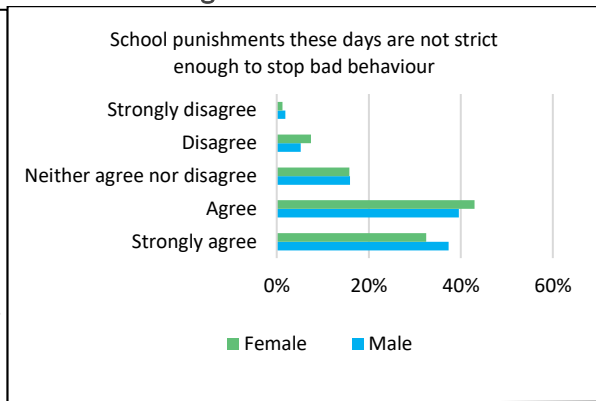
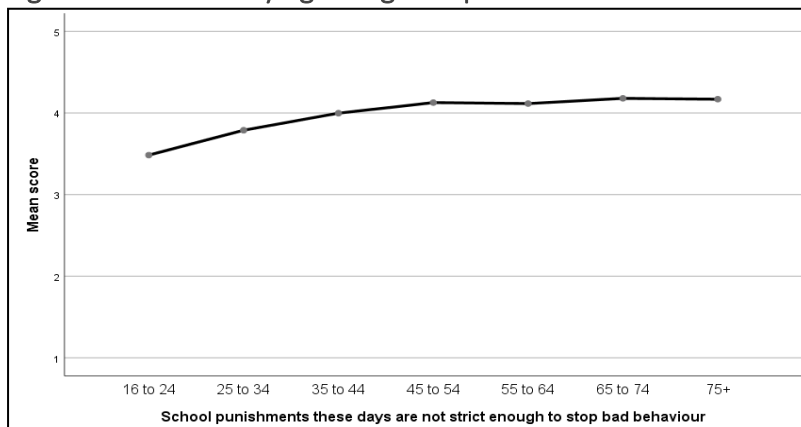


Figure 5.13. Gender responses for not strict enough.



A one-way between-groups analysis of variance shows a statistically significant difference at the $<.05$ level for the responses for the different age categories. The effect size calculated using eta-squared, was .04 indicating that the actual difference in mean scores was small to medium. Post-hoc comparisons using the Tukey HSD test indicated that the mean scores for both the 16-24 and 25-34 age categories were significantly different from every other age group. The 35-44 age category was significantly different to all age groups apart from the 55-64 and 75+ groups (Figure 5.14).

Figure 5.14. Mean by age range for punishments not strict enough.



Summary

The majority (76%) were in agreement that school punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour. There are statistically significant differences between gender and certain age groups, with males being more supportive of the statement and the

youngest age group being less supportive than the older age groups. However, the effect sizes are small which is also reflected in the differences in mean scores.

5.3.5. Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties

Eighty-four percent of respondents either strongly agreed (49%) or agreed (35%) with this statement, 12% neither agreed nor disagreed, and 4% either disagreed (3%) or strongly disagreed (1%) (Figure 5.15). Scores for this variable indicate negative skewness (-1.214) and positive kurtosis (1.321) suggesting that the variable is not normally distributed. The mean standard error is .011. An independent samples t-test was conducted to compare responses to support for stiffer penalties between males and females (Figure 5.16). There was no significant difference ($p=.097$) between males ($M=4.26$, $SD=.893$) and females ($M=4.30$, $SD=.837$; $t(5556.11)=-1.661$).

Figure 5.15: Frequencies for welfare claimants stiffer penalties.

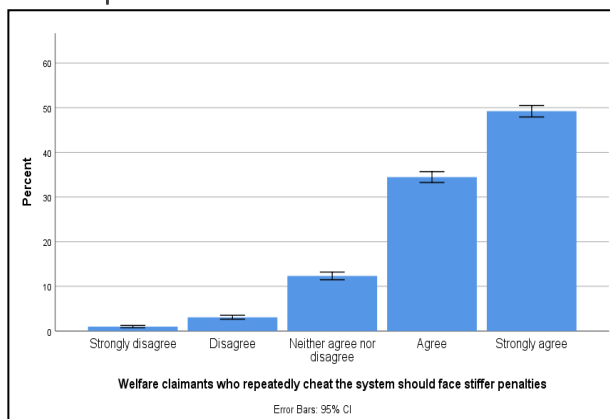
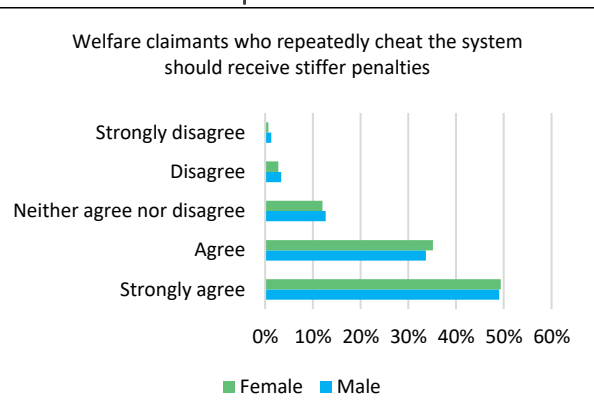
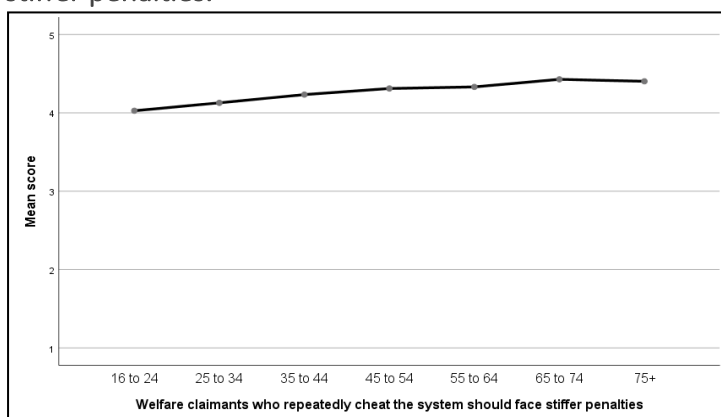


Figure 5.16. Gender responses for welfare claimants stiffer penalties.



A one-way between-groups analysis of variance shows a statistically significant difference at the $<.05$ level for the responses for the different age categories. The effect size calculated using eta-squared, was small at .02. Post-hoc comparisons using the Tukey HSD test indicated that the mean scores for both the 16-24 and 25-34 age categories were significantly different from every other age group apart from each other. The 35-44 age category was significantly different to the youngest and two oldest age groups, and the 45-54 age group was significantly different to the two youngest and 64-74 age groups. The 65-74 age group is statistically significantly different to the youngest four age groups, whilst the 75+ age category is statistically different to the youngest three age groups (Figure 5.17).

Figure 5.17. Mean by age range for welfare claimants stiffer penalties.



Summary

The majority (84%) were in agreement that welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer sentences indicating the most punitive response of all the statements. There was no statistically significant difference between genders. There were differences in mean scores between certain age groups, with youngest age group being less punitive than the older age groups with a small effect size.

5.3.6. Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped

Sixty-nine percent of respondents either strongly agreed (39%) or agreed (30%) with this statement, 19% neither agreed nor disagreed, and 12% either disagreed (10%) or strongly disagreed (2%) (Figure 5.18). Scores for this variable indicate negative skewness (-.778) and negative kurtosis (-.264) suggesting that the variable is not normally distributed. The mean standard error is .014. An independent samples t-test was conducted to compare responses between males and females (Figure 5.19). There was a significant difference ($p < .001$) between males ($M=3.87$, $SD=1.125$) and females ($M=3.99$, $SD=1.044$; $t(5534.43)=-4.013$). The magnitude of the differences between the means (-.115, 95% CI: -.171 to -.059) was very small ($\eta^2 = .003$).

Figure 5.18: Frequencies for permanently stopping welfare.

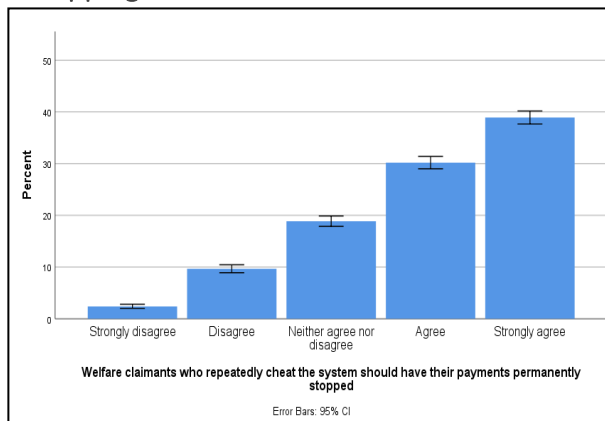
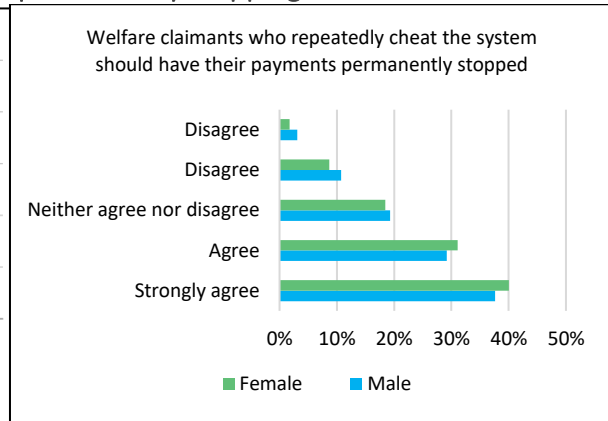
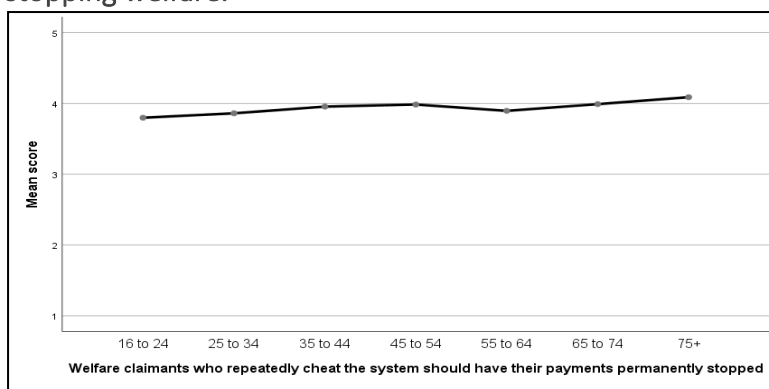


Figure 5.19: Gender responses for permanently stopping welfare.



A one-way between-groups analysis of variance shows a statistically significant difference at the $<.05$ level for the responses for the different age categories. However, the effect size calculated using eta-squared, was very small at $.004$. Post-hoc comparisons using the Tukey HSD test indicated that the mean scores for the 16-24 age category were statistically significantly different from the 45-54, 65-74 and the 75+ age categories. The 25-34 age category was statistically significantly different to the 75+ age group. The means shows a more complex relationship between age and support for permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants compared to support for stiffer penalties with the 55-64 age group decreasing in punitive attitudes compared to its direct peers. Despite these differences the effect sizes were very small (Figure 5.20).

Figure 5.20: Mean by age range for permanently stopping welfare.



Summary

The majority (69%) were in agreement that welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped; this is a 15% reduction in support from those who were in agreement with *welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties*. This suggests that the introduction of a specific extreme sanction reduces punitiveness for some respondents. This follows the same trend as the responses for rulebreaking school pupils. There are statistically significant differences between gender and certain age groups, with females being more punitive and the youngest age group being least punitive. Despite these findings, the effect sizes were very small, which is also reflected in the small differences between mean scores.

5.3.7. People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences

Seventy-one percent of respondents either strongly agreed (36%) or agreed (35%) with this statement, 22% neither agreed nor disagreed, and 7% either disagreed (6%) or strongly disagreed (1%) (Figure 5.21). Scores for this variable indicate negative skewness (-.682) and negative kurtosis (-.098) suggesting that the variable is not normally distributed. The mean standard error is .012. An independent samples t-test found that the differences in mean scores between males and females were not statistically significant (Figure 5.22).

Figure 5.21: Frequencies for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers.

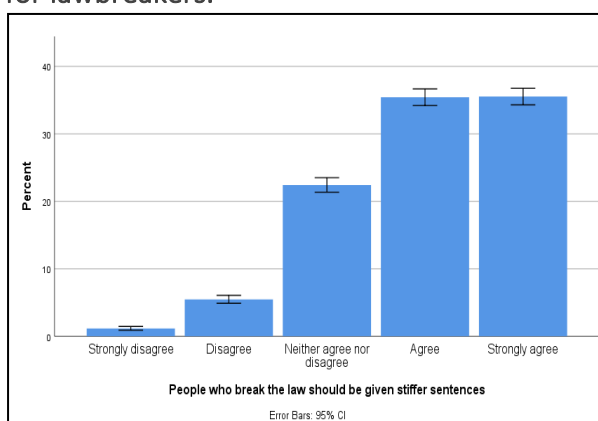
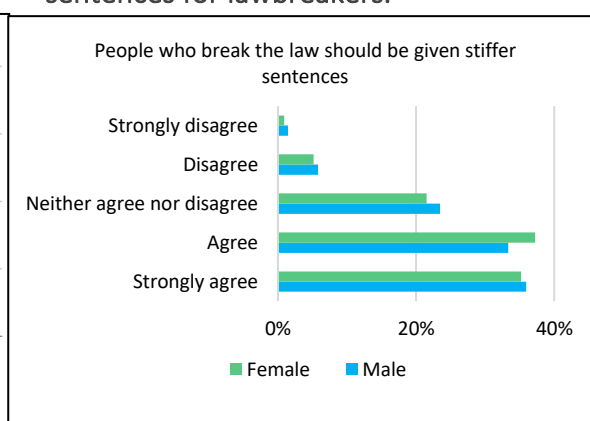


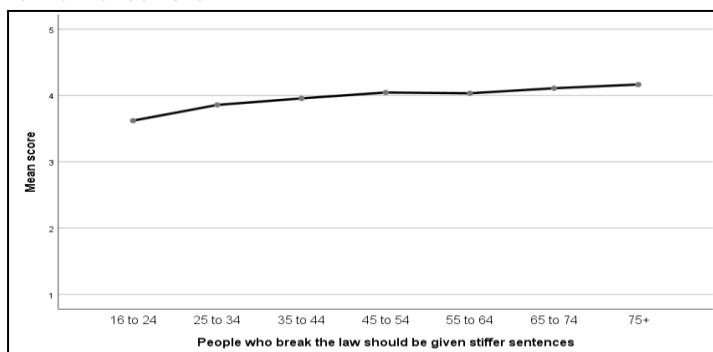
Figure 5.22: Gender responses for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers.



A one-way between-groups analysis of variance was conducted to explore the impact of age on responses to support for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers. There was a statistically significant difference at the <.05 level for the responses for the different age categories.

However, the effect size calculated using eta-squared, was small at .02. Post-hoc comparisons using the Tukey HSD test indicated that the mean scores for the 16-24 age category was statistically significantly different from all other age groups. The 25-34 age group was statistically different to all age groups except the 35-44 group, whilst the 35-44 age group was statistically different to the youngest and two oldest age groups (Figure 5.23).

Figure 5.23. Mean by age range for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers.



Summary

The majority (71%) were in agreement that people who break the law should be given stiffer sentences indicating an overall punitive response. There are no statistically significant differences between genders. There were statistically significant differences in mean scores between certain age groups, with punitiveness increasing with age with a small effect size.

5.3.8. For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence

Fifty-four percent of respondents either strongly agreed (32%) or agreed (22%) with this statement, 16% neither agreed nor disagreed, and 30% either disagreed (11%) or strongly disagreed (19%) (Figure 5.24). Scores for this variable indicate negative skewness (-.409) and negative kurtosis (-1.255) suggesting that the variable is not normally distributed with a mean standard error of .020. An independent samples t-test results indicate a significant difference ($p < .05$) between males ($M=3.42$, $SD=1.50$) and females ($M=3.33$, $SD=1.48$; $t(5779)=2.523$). The magnitude of the differences between the means (.099, 95% CI: .022 to .176) was very small (eta squared = .001) (Figure 5.25).

Figure 5.24. Frequencies for death penalty

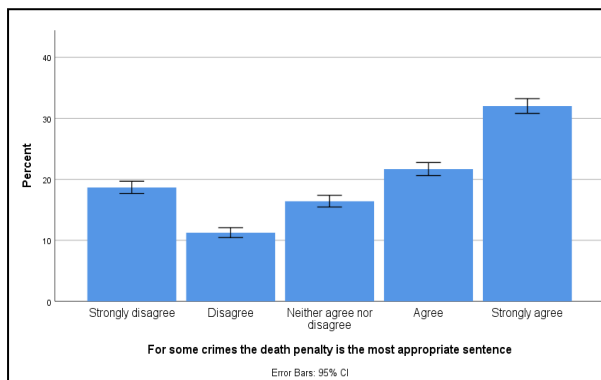
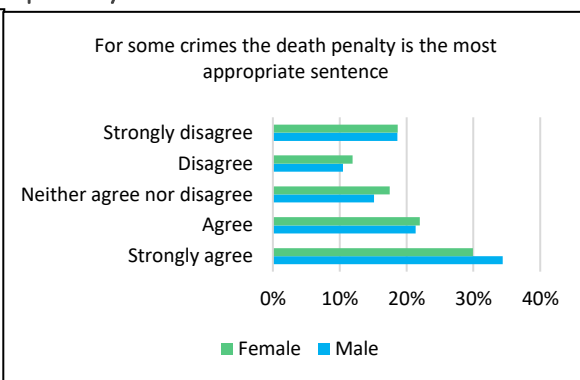
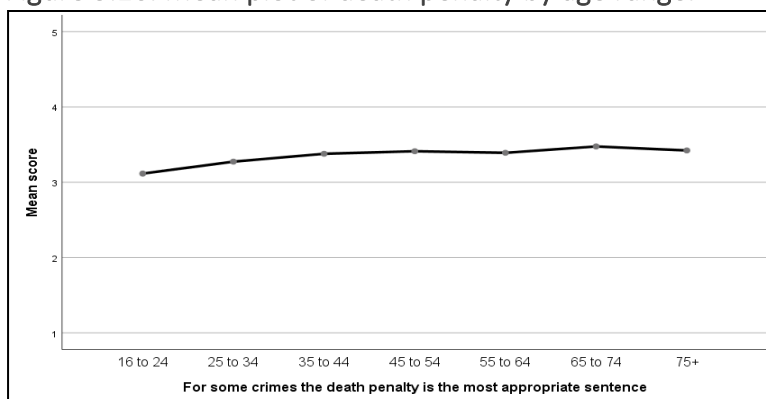


Figure 5.25. Gender responses for death penalty



A one-way between-groups analysis of variance shows a statistically significant difference at the $<.05$ level for the responses for the different age categories. However, the effect size calculated using eta-squared, was very small at $.004$. Post-hoc comparisons using the Tukey HSD test indicated that the mean scores for the 16-24 age category were statistically significantly different from the 45-54, 55-64 and 64-74 age categories, whilst the 25-34 age group was statistically different to the 65-74 age groups (Figure 5.26).

Figure 5.26. Mean plot of death penalty by age range.



Summary

Fifty-four percent were in agreement that for some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence, a reduction in 17% in punitiveness from support for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers suggesting that the introduction of an extreme sanction reduces punitiveness in some respondents. This result follows a similar trend to both the rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants questions. There are statistically significant differences between gender and certain age groups, with males being more punitive and the

youngest age group being least punitive with very small effect sizes, which is also reflected in the small differences between mean scores.

Overall Summary

The most punitive response from the eight items was support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants, whilst the belief that caning was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour received the least support. The two questions involving physical punishments (caning and the death penalty) received the least support. The questions which posed non-specific sanctions towards rulebreakers received the top three most punitive responses. The introduction of specific extreme sanctions appears to reduce punitiveness for some respondents. The mean plots for most of the questions show a general trend of punitiveness increasing with age with the two youngest age brackets being least punitive.

Table 5.6. below shows an overview of the percentages for each question with the numbers in brackets of respondents in each category.

Table 5.6. Frequencies for the eight new variables

	School children tougher punishments	School children permanent exclusion	Caning good way of tackling behaviour	School punishments not strict enough	Welfare claimants stiffer penalties	Welfare claimants payments stopped	Law breakers stiffer sentences	Law breakers death penalty
Strongly Agree	27% (1581)	22% (1263)	11% (645)	35% (2010)	49% (2845)	39% (2250)	36% (2054)	32% (1851)
Agree	47% (2707)	37% (2157)	19% (1113)	41% (2395)	35% (1992)	30% (1745)	35% (2048)	22% (1253)
Neither agree/ disagree	17% (971)	20% (1132)	21% (1209)	16% (918)	12% (712)	19% (1090)	22% (1296)	16% (948)
Disagree	9% (425)	18% (1072)	25% (1440)	8% (369)	3% (176)	10% (558)	6% (316)	11% (650)
Strongly Disagree	2% (97)	3% (157)	24% (1374)	2% (89)	1% (56)	2% (138)	1% (67)	19% (1079)

5.4. Constructing variables for analysis

This project aims to assess the prevalence of punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers, to explore the relationship between punitive and political attitudes, to examine the factors influencing these public attitudes, and to explore the extent to which punitive attitudes vary towards different groups of rulebreakers. To achieve these aims, in addition to the new variables designed specifically for this study, new variables have been constructed from the

sixty-two questions fielded in the main survey to explore a range of social and political values and attitudes, crime related factors, plus a range of socio-demographic factors (see Appendix D).

This study aimed to explore the extent to which a range of political values and social attitudes were related to punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers, specifically neo-conservative values, neo-liberal values, and social, economic and political nostalgic values. During the early 1980s, New Right political ideologies emerged in many western industrialised nations and are characterised by a combination of neo-liberal and neo-conservative ideals (Gamble, 1988; Hay, 1996; Hayes, 1994). Whilst there is some overlap between these two strands, they each offer distinct perspectives (Hayes, 1994). Hayes (1994) notes that the interconnected themes of neo-conservatism include social order, traditional values, the authoritarian state expressed through law, and nationalism. Whilst neo-liberalism's interconnected themes assert the free market, competition, profit, and the belief that state authority should be limited to defence, the rule of law and monetary control (Hayes, 1994). The literature reviews exploring the long terms trends in policies towards rulebreakers suggest that since the early 1980s these policies have increasingly become underpinned by neo-liberal and neo-conservative ideals.

The design of the new survey questions was partly influenced by parliamentary discourse relating to young people prevalent in the 1980s and 1990s (see Chapter 3.3). The power of the state to be able to administer physical discipline to young people as a form of social control was a much debated topic by Conservative MPs during this period. During the same period, the education system was criticised by government for a range of social problems, such as anti-social behaviour (Dorey, 2014). There were concerns about the link between indiscipline in schools and anti-social behaviour in neighbourhoods (Berridge et al., 2001). Conservative MPs supported the caning of school children to 'save them from a life of crime' (HC Deb 28 January 1997). An educational strategy emerged under the Conservative government during this period, which reiterated 'social skills, respect for authority, traditional values and discipline' founded on a traditional education (Hall, 1979:19). The core of the neo-conservative belief system is to advocate authority to secure order (Hayes, 1994). Neo-conservatism represents traditional impulses with order and authority clearly evident

(Hayes, 1994). The Education Act 1988 increased the regulation of teaching through a set curriculum, stronger accountability of teachers, and advocated broadly Christian acts of worship in schools (Evans, 1989; Jones, 2009). Neo-conservatism is also an evaluation of the *past* in response to how people observe and experience the present. It is an underlying belief that is rooted in the *past*. It differs from punitiveness due to this *historical construction*.

Punitiveness, by contrast, is an attitude which is a reflection on the *present* form of punishment, which is supportive of harsher punishments in the future. Punitiveness has 'connotations of excess', suggests an intensification of punishment either by duration or severity, and is applied disproportionately (Matthews, 2005:179). The operationalisation of punitiveness in this study aims to tap into the public's desire for harsher penalties (school punishments, welfare sanctions, sentences). It is an attitude that suggests that punishment as it is, in its present form, is not enough, and that it should be harsher (Kury and Ferdinand, 1999; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Roberts et al., 2003). It is a reflection on the present form of punishment and shows a desire for harsher punishments in future. This distinction was evident in the cognitive interviews.

Cognitive Interviews

The design phase of the new survey questions aimed to construct questions that measured people's evaluation of historical authoritarian measures. These questions were then tested in the first round of cognitive interviews (these questions were only tested in the first round as people were assessed as understanding the wording and the sentiments of the newly designed items).

The school punitiveness items (*Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments; School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded*) were designed to tap into people's direct support for harsher sanctions. They are reflections on the current sanctions as not being harsh enough and the desire for harsher sanctions in the future. The neo-conservative items (*Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour; School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour*) were designed to tap into people's beliefs about traditional impulses focussing on a steady maintenance of authority and order.

There was a distinction between people's beliefs about how authority was administered in the past (neo-conservative items) and their attitudes towards how rulebreakers ought to be punished (school punitiveness items). Respondents held beliefs that social control measures were more effective in the past but did not generally hold punitive attitudes now i.e. they did not also necessarily seek harsher punishments. Some respondents were clear that past forms of behaviour management are not a form of social control that they would desire today. Those old enough to have been subject to caning in schools, made extensive nostalgic references to their own experiences of being caned as children. Some respondents agreed with the question but were clear that they were unsupportive of corporal punishment being reintroduced.

'...I didn't agree with caning...I don't think children should be physically punished, no.' (R5, agreed with the statement when completing the survey showing her belief that caning *was* a good way of managing behaviour, but was clear in her discourse that she did not support it as a form of behavioural control today).

'I think if you got the cane I think some people wouldn't do it again would they? I don't think that sort of thing is needed these days' (R11, agreed with the historical compliance effect of caning on some school children's behaviour, but disagreed with it as a form of behavioural control today).

R7 referred to his own experiences of corporal punishment in schools and noted that being caned taught you to respect authority.

In response to *School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour*, the following observations were made. Ten out of twelve respondents agreed with the statement, whilst only seven out of twelve agreed with *Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments*, and four out of twelve were in agreement that *School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded*. Participants' discourse appeared to make a distinction between the historical nature of the statement and the school punitiveness items,

'...school punishments these days are not strict enough to stop poor behaviour, so they are not stopping the bad behaviour...but I disagreed because I don't really see how they can get much stricter...bar hitting the children...' (R12)

'I'm going to agree, because I don't think punishments in schools are strict enough...' (R5, disagreed with the school punitiveness items).

Whilst there are some similarities in the nature of the neo-conservative values variable and the punitiveness questions (particularly school punitiveness), there is also a clear distinction in the root of these questions as discussed above. Respondents made a clear distinction between the *historical* nature of the neo-conservative items and their reflections on *current* school punishments in relation to the school punitiveness items. A further discussion regarding the neo-conservative values variable is included in Chapter 10.

In addition to the neo-conservative and neo-liberal values variables, nostalgia has also been linked to public support for politicians espousing radical right views in recent years (Gest, 2016). As such, nostalgic values will also be examined in this study taking the form of social, economic, and political nostalgia. A range of steps were undertaken to attempt to design a survey instrument that operationalised and measured complex concepts. The range of steps taken consisted of expert reviews on the newly designed questions, two omnibus surveys, two rounds of cognitive interviews and a pilot survey during which questions were adapted and re-tested until the final survey instrument consisted of the final sixty-two items. The following section details the construction of key variables used in the analyses, specifically, neo-liberal values and neo-conservative values (belief systems) and social nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values and political nostalgic values (nostalgia).

5.4.1. Beliefs Systems

Belief systems, specifically neo-liberal values and neo-conservative values, are central concepts in analyzing the relationship between punitive and political attitudes towards rulebreakers (Table 5.2 and Table 5.3). The questions were measured using a Likert scale⁷

⁷ Response codes were: 1=strongly disagree, 2=disagree, 3=neither agree nor disagree, 4=agree, 5=strongly agree.

with the higher the respondent's score, the more neo-liberal or neo-conservative the respondent's values were viewed to be. This section will first outline the theoretical background to the construction of the separate items, before proceeding to present the practical construction of the neo-liberal values and neo-conservative values variables in SPSS.

Table 5.7. Measuring neo-liberal values

Item Wording
<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?</i>
<i>Ordinary working people get their fair share of the nation's wealth.</i>
<i>There is no need for strong trade unions to protect employees' working conditions and wages.</i>
<i>Private enterprise is the best way to solve Britain's economic problems.</i>
<i>Major public services and industries ought to be in state ownership.</i>
<i>It would be better for everyone if we all paid less tax.</i>
<i>Welfare benefits should be reserved for only the extremely needy.</i>

Theoretical background to neo-liberal values items

Neo-liberalism's interconnected themes assert the free market, competition, profit and the belief that state authority should be limited to defence, the rule of law and monetary control (Hayes, 1994). Six separate items used in the survey to measure neo-liberal values (existing and newly designed items) aimed to relate to neo-liberalism's core themes asking, 'How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?' (Table 5.7):

- *Ordinary working people get their fair share of the nation's wealth:* This question was designed by the British Election Study (BES) and suggests that everyone is deemed to benefit from the market (Hayes, 1994).
- *There is no need for strong trade unions to protect employees' working conditions and wages:* Designed by the BES and refers to support for the weakening of trade unions (Thompson, 2014).

- *Private enterprise is the best way to solve Britain's economic problems*: a central theme to neo-liberalism is a belief in 'the power of the market' (Hayes, 1994:27). Designed by the BES.
- *Major public services and industries ought to be in state ownership*: anti-privatisation (BES).
- *It would be better for everyone if we all paid less tax*: aims to tap into support for anti-taxation (New).
- *Welfare benefits should be reserved for only the extremely needy*: State intervention for those deemed as in 'genuine need' i.e. 'the old, the sick and the incapable' (Hayes, 1994). (New).

Constructing the neo-liberal values variable

Factor analysis was undertaken to construct a new variable from these six separate items with the aim of conducting regression analyses. Exploratory factor analysis was undertaken (as with the construction of all new variables composed of multiple variables) using principle axis factoring, which does not assume normal distribution, with oblique rotation allowing for correlation between variables (Field, 2018). The Kaiser-Meyer-Olkin (KMO) for all six items verified sampling adequacy, $KMO=.757$, which is above the minimum criteria of 0.5 and falls into the range of 'middling' (Kaiser and Rice, 1974). All items loaded onto one factor with the *Major public services and industries ought to be in state ownership* question loading negatively onto the factor. The Cronbach's alpha for the original six items was .491 showing an increase to .665 should *Major public services and industries ought to be in state ownership* be removed. Exploratory factor analysis was re-run omitting this item. The KMO measure verified the sampling adequacy for the analysis ($KMO=.754$) and all KMO values for individual items were greater than .80, which is above the acceptable limit of 0.5. with one eigenvalue over Kaiser's criterion of 1 and in combination explained 43.54% of the variance. The scree plot confirmed retaining 1 factor. The neo-liberal items have a medium to high reliability (Cronbach's $\alpha=.665$). Results from factor analysis and Cronbach's alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable from the five items, namely neo-liberal values. Figure 5.27 shows the factor loadings.

Figure 5.27: Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for neo-liberal values items	Factor 1
There is no need for strong trade unions to protect employees' working conditions and wages	.674
Private enterprise is the best way to solve Britain's economic problems	.617
Ordinary working people get their fair share of the nation's wealth	.600
Welfare benefits should be reserved for only the extremely needy	.438
It would be better for everyone if we all paid less tax	.368

Theoretical background to neo-conservative values

Hayes (1994) notes that the interconnected themes of neo-conservatism include a desire for social order, support for traditional values and support of an authoritarian state expressed through law. Four separate items were used in the survey to measure neo-conservative values (existing and newly designed) aiming to relate to neo-conservatism's core themes (Table 5.8).

Table 5.8. Measuring neo-conservative values

Item Wording
<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?</i>
<i>Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour.</i>
<i>School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour.</i>
<i>Young people today don't have enough respect for traditional values.</i>
<i>Schools should teach children to obey authority.</i>

The four items included two newly designed items for this project and two designed and used by the British Election Study and the British Social Attitudes Survey. The first two newly designed questions were presented in the battery of newly designed questions for this project (see section 5.3), whilst the British Election Study and British Social Attitudes questions were presented in a battery with neo-liberal values items above. Respondents were asked, 'How much do you agree or disagree with each of the following statements?':

- *Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour*: refers to the ‘romantic appraisal of the past’ in achieving order in schools (Apple, 2006:67). (Designed for this project).
- *School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour*: past methods for maintaining order in schools was more effective than present-day methods (Apple, 2006) (Designed for this project).
- *Young people today don’t have enough respect for traditional values*: support for traditional values (Hayes, 1994). Traditional values are viewed by the neo-conservative as featuring ‘good’ social order which should be preserved (Hayes, 1994). Christian values, discipline and respect are central to this (Hayes, 1994). (British Election Study; British Social Attitudes Survey).
- *Schools should teach children to obey authority*: a central theme of neo-conservatism is a desire for social order (Hayes, 1994). (British Social Attitudes Survey).

Constructing the neo-conservative values variable

Exploratory factor analysis was conducted using principle axis factoring with oblique rotation. The KMO measure verified the sampling adequacy for the analysis, KMO=.778, which falls into the range of ‘Middling’ (Kaiser and Rice, 1974) and all KMO values for individual items were greater than .75. Analysis resulted in one factor with an eigenvalue above 1 and in combination explained 59.72% of the variance with the scree plot confirmed retaining 1 factor. The neo-conservative items have a good reliability (Cronbach’s α =.759). Results from factor analysis and Cronbach’s alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable from the four items, namely neo-conservative values, with factor loadings are shown in Table 5.28.

Figure 5.28. Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for neo-conservative values	Factor 1
Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour	.571
School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour	.752
Young people today don’t have enough respect for traditional values	.703
Schools should teach children to obey authority	.696

5.4.2. Nostalgia Items

The nostalgia battery consisted of thirteen individual questions designed to measure social, economic and political nostalgic values (see Tables 5.9, 5.10 and 5.11) asking respondents ‘How much do you agree or disagree with each of the following statements?’ with the same response categories as the beliefs systems variables⁸ with the higher the respondent’s score, the more nostalgic the respondent’s values were viewed to be. The questions were tested in the cognitive interviews to understand whether young people were able to answer the questions. Analysis showed that they were able to answer these questions, did have attitudes and were able to choose the ‘don’t know’ category if they so wished⁹. This section will first outline the theoretical background to the construction of the separate items, before proceeding to present the practical construction of the nostalgic values variables.

Theoretical background to social nostalgic values

The social nostalgic values battery contains six questions which aimed to assess the extent to which respondents felt that the country, or areas they are familiar with, have changed and that this change provokes a sense of sadness for them (Table 5.9).

Table 5.9. Measuring social nostalgic values

Item Wording
<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?</i>
<i>I would like my country to be the way it used to be.</i>
<i>More and more, I don't like with what my country has become.</i>
<i>These days I feel like a stranger in my own country.</i>
<i>The country's best days are behind it.</i>
<i>I feel sad when I think about how areas like the one I grew up in have changed.</i>
<i>I feel sad when I think about how areas like the one I now live in have changed.</i>

⁸ Response codes were: 1=strongly disagree, 2=disagree, 3=neither agree nor disagree, 4=agree, 5=strongly agree.

⁹ Two rounds of cognitive interviews and online pilots pre-tested the questions, which included fielding the questions to young people. Most noted some historical knowledge through education or family and were able to answer the questions. All questions had a ‘don’t know’ option should they not be able to answer the questions.

The six items include three newly designed questions and three questions designed and used by IPSOS MORI. Respondents were asked, 'How much do you agree or disagree with each of the following statements?'

- *I would like my country to be the way it used to be*: refers to feeling that country has changed for the worse. (IPSOS MORI).
- *More and more, I don't like with what my country has become*: a sense that the country is getting worse. (IPSOS MORI).
- *These days I feel like a stranger in my own country*: Feelings of alienation. (IPSOS MORI).
- *The country's best days are behind it*: The idea that the country is in decline. (New).
- *I feel sad when I think about how areas like the one I grew up in have changed*: change which provokes sadness. (New).
- *I feel sad when I think about how areas like the one I now live in have changed*: change which provokes sadness. (New).

Constructing the social nostalgic variable

These six items were factor analysed to form one social nostalgic values variable. The KMO measure verified the sampling adequacy for the analysis, $KMO=.837$, falling into the range of 'meritorious' (Kaiser and Rice, 1974). All KMO values for individual items were greater than .78; one factor had an eigenvalue over Kaiser's criterion of 1 and in combination explained 57.5% of the variance and the scree plot confirmed retaining 1 factor. The six social nostalgic values items have a high reliability (Cronbach's $\alpha=.849$), however, reliability analysis indicated that removing the item *The country's best days are behind it* would increase the alpha to .855. Reliability analysis was repeated with item 3.4. removed and confirmed that no additional items required removing. The KMO of the 5 items = .819 verified the sampling adequacy for the analysis with all individual items greater than .76, and analysis confirmed retaining one factor explaining 63.4% of the variance. Results from factor analysis and Cronbach's alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable from the five items. Figure 5.29 shows the factor loadings.

Figure 5.29: Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for social nostalgic values	Factor 1
I feel sad when I think about how areas like the one I grew up in have changed	.824
I feel sad when I think about how the areas like the one I now live in have changed	.787
These days I feel like a stranger in my own country	.730
I would like my country to be the way it used to be	.720
More and more, I don't like what my country has become	.617

Theoretical background to economic nostalgic values

The economic nostalgic values battery consists of five items (Table 5.10) aiming to assess the extent to which respondents believe that there has been an economic change which is dominated by profit, market forces and increased economic inequalities and that this has been detrimental to communities.

Table 5.10. Measuring economic nostalgic values

Item Wording
<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?</i>
The profit motive has come to dominate all aspects of our society.
Making money is all people care about these days.
The reliance on market forces has increased the gap between rich and poor.
It feels to me like the country lost something when coal mines, steel mills and shipyards closed.
I feel that there has been a loss of community spirit around here since the 1980s.

Three of the five items were newly designed and asked, '*How much do you agree or disagree with each of the following statements?*'

- *The profit motive has come to dominate all aspects of our society*: Change which goes beyond the economy. (Designed by Karstedt and Farrall, 2007).
- *Making money is all people care about these days*: Focus on money in society. (New).
- *The reliance on market forces has increased the gap between rich and poor*: Increased inequality. (Designed by Karstedt and Farrall, 2007).
- *It feels to me like the country lost something when coal mines, steel mills and shipyards closed*: Loss of heavy industry. (New).

- *I feel that there has been a loss of community spirit around here since the 1980s: change that has been detrimental to local communities (New).*

Constructing the economic nostalgic variable

Factor analysis was conducted to form one economic nostalgic values variable. The KMO measure verified the sampling adequacy for the analysis, KMO=.779 falling into the range of ‘middling’ (Kaiser and Rice, 1974). All KMO values for individual items were greater than .75, one factor had an eigenvalue over Kaiser’s criterion of 1 and in combination explained 50.66% of the variance with the scree plot confirming the retention of one factor. The economic nostalgic values items have a medium to high reliability (Cronbach’s α =.753). Results from factor analysis and Cronbach’s alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable from the five items. Figure 5.30 shows the factor loadings.

Figure 5.30: Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for economic nostalgic values items	Factor 1
The profit motive has come to dominate all aspects of our society	.682
Making money is all people care about these days (REC High = more punitive)	.666
The reliance on market forces has increased the gap between rich and poor	.608
I feel there has been a loss of community spirit around here since the 1980s	.594
It feels to me like the country lost something when coal mines, steel mills and shipyards closed	.543

Theoretical background to political nostalgic values

The political nostalgic values item contained questions that referred explicitly to Margaret Thatcher and her governments. These items aimed to assess the extent to which respondents believed that the Thatcher governments had a detrimental impact on ordinary people’s lives and communities and that this detrimental impact endures today (Table 5.11).

Table 5.11. Measuring political nostalgic values

Item Wording
<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?</i>
Margaret Thatcher’s governments decreased the quality of life for many ordinary people.
Margaret Thatcher’s governments did a lot of damage to communities around here.
Many of the problems we now face started in the 1980s with Margaret Thatcher.

Two of the three items were designed by the project team and asked, ‘How much do you agree or disagree with each of the following statements?’

- *Margaret Thatcher’s governments decreased the quality of life for many ordinary people:* Refers to the impact that Thatcher’s governments had on the quality of normal people’s lives. (Adapted from Holbrook and Schindler, 1994).
- *Margaret Thatcher’s governments did a lot of damage to communities around here:* Refers to the impact that Thatcher’s governments policies had on local communities. (New).
- *Many of the problems we now face started in the 1980s with Margaret Thatcher:* Refers to whether current problems in Britain can be traced back to policies of the Thatcher governments. (New).

Constructing the political nostalgic variable

Results from factor analysis and Cronbach’s alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable from the three items. The KMO=.765 falls into the range of ‘middling’ (Kaiser and Rice, 1974) and all KMO values for individual items were greater than .75. One factor had eigenvalues over Kaiser’s criterion of 1 and in combination explained 87.06% of the variance with the scree plot confirming retention of one factor. The political nostalgic values items have a high reliability (Cronbach’s α =.926). Results from factor analysis and Cronbach’s alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable from the three items. Figure 5.31 shows the factor loadings.

Figure 5.31: Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for political nostalgic values items	Factor 1
Margaret Thatcher's governments decreased the quality of life for many ordinary people	.908
Many of the problems we now face started in the 1980s with Margaret Thatcher	.897
Margaret Thatcher's governments did a lot of damage to communities around here	.889

5.5. Summary

This chapter commenced by detailing the sample, prior to presenting basic analyses of both the newly designed questions and the two survey items developed by the British Social Attitudes Survey to measure attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers. Frequencies, t-tests and one-way ANOVAs were presented which appears to show a distinction in punitiveness towards each group of rulebreaker with the most punitive response towards support for

stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants. Support for physical punishments received the least punitive. This suggests that whilst there is strong support for *more* punishment, this desire does not take the form of physical punishments. Additionally, the questions referring to non-specific sanctions towards rulebreakers received the top three most punitive responses, whilst the introduction of specific, extreme sanctions appears to reduce punitive attitudes. This chapter has also detailed the development of the variables to be used in the subsequent analyses in Chapter 6 to Chapter 9, namely, neo-conservative values, neo-liberal values, and the nostalgia variables (social, economic and political nostalgia). Chapter 6 will now commence the process of analyzing punitive attitudes towards distinct groups of rulebreakers, specifically, examining public attitudes towards rulebreaking school children.

Part Four: Examining Punitiveness Towards Rulebreakers

Chapter 6 Quantitative analysis of punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils

6.1. Introduction

Chapter 5 commenced by presenting the basic analyses of the newly designed questions, along with the two survey items developed by the British Social Attitudes Survey to measure attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers. This analysis involved frequencies, t-tests and one-way ANOVAs and has revealed some interesting findings. There appears to be a variation in punitiveness towards each group of rulebreaker with the most punitive response towards support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants. Whereas, physical punishments, caning and the death penalty, received the least support respectively. Notably, the questions referring to non-specific sanctions towards rulebreakers received the top three most punitive responses, whilst the introduction of specific, extreme sanctions appears to reduce the extent of punitive attitudes. Chapter 5 also detailed the development of the variables to be used in the subsequent analyses throughout the remaining chapters. These variables comprise of beliefs systems (neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values) and nostalgia (social, economic and political nostalgic values).

Further detailed quantitative analyses, starting from this chapter through to Chapter 9, aims to build on the initial findings presented in Chapter 5 to examine the unique factors influencing punitive attitudes; first as distinct groups of rulebreakers (Chapters 6, 7 and 8) and then as a collective group (Chapter 9). This chapter starts this process by exclusively exploring attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils. The steps taken to examine the data are as follows:

1. Ordinal Logistic Regression was used to conduct separate analyses on the two items developed to measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils, *Unruly school pupils should receive tougher punishments* and *School pupils who repeatedly break*

school rules should be permanently excluded,¹⁰ which have an ordinal outcome measured by a Likert scale. The same four models were run for each variable with each model introducing a further set of factors. Model 1 introduced a range of socio-demographic factors; Crime-rated factors were entered in Model 2; Model 3 introduced belief systems; and, finally, nostalgia items were added in Model 4 (see Table 6.1 and Table 6.2).

2. Hierarchical multiple linear regression was then used to analyze *School Punitivity*, a continuous variable constructed through factor analyzing *Unruly school pupils should receive tougher punishments* and *School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded*. Hierarchical multiple regression allows the inclusion of a range of factors entered into the model in a specified order based on theoretical grounds (Tabacknick and Fidell, 2014; Pallant, 2016). Sets of variables were entered into the model in blocks, with each block being assessed in terms of its effect on the dependent variable once the previous variables have been controlled for (Pallant, 2016). The four blocks consist of socio-demographic factors, crime-related factors, beliefs systems and nostalgic values.
3. Qualitative data from the cognitive interviews is also included in the chapter. This aims to provide a little insight into public attitudes towards the punishment of rulebreaking school pupils not attainable through quantitative analysis alone. The cognitive interviews were limited to probing specific terms within the newly designed questions as testing the questions was the main objective of the cognitive interviews, however, despite this limitation, themes in participants' beliefs emerged from the data.
4. Previous criminological literature on punitiveness will also be considered in relation to the findings in this chapter due to there being no evidence base exploring punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils.

¹⁰ Response codes were: 1=Strongly disagree, 2=disagree, 3=neither agree nor disagree, 4=agree, 5=strongly agree.

6.2. Exploring support for tougher punishments for unruly school pupils

*Model 1: Socio-demographic factors*¹¹

As shown in Table 6.1, *age group 45 to 54* (beta=.577, $p<.001$), *degree education* (beta=-.401, $p<.001$), *class origin* (beta=.241, $p<.001$) *religion* (beta= -.215, $p<.001$), and *politics* (beta=.185, $p<.001$) were found to have the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards unruly school children. This suggests that those *aged between 45 and 54* are more punitive when compared to the *16 to 24 age group*, those with *degree level education* are less punitive when compared to those with *no qualifications*, those from a *working-class origin* are more punitive compared to those from a *middle-class origin*, those with *no religion* are less punitive than those with *a religion*, and *self-identified political conservatism* increased punitive attitudes. *Ages 35 to 44* (beta=.474, $p<.01$), *55 to 64* (beta=.437, $p<.01$) and *over 65 year olds* are also associated with increased punitive attitudes when compared to those *aged between 16 and 24 years old*. Additionally, *males* (beta=.191, $p<.01$) were found to be more punitive than *females* and those earning between *£60,000 and £84,999* (beta=.290, $p<.05$) were found to be more punitive than those in the lowest earning group. All other factors in Model 1 were not significant. The Nagelkerke R-Square value suggests that socio-demographic factors as a whole account for 9.4% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards unruly school children.

Model 2: Crime related factors

The next model introduced crime related factors into the model. The *victimisation* variable asked if respondents had experienced any victimisation in the last 5 years and has no significant effect in any of the models. *Fear of crime (How safe do you feel walking around in the area you live in after dark?)* has a significant effect when introduced in Model 2 (beta = .202, $p<.001$) with punitive attitudes increasing as fear increases. Fear of crime has very little impact on the socio-demographic variables in Model 2.

¹¹ These are coded as follows: Gender: 0=Male, 1=female; Age=1=65+, 2=55-64, 3=45-54, 4=35-44, 5=25-34, 6=16-24; Income: 1=£85,000+, 2=£60,000-£84,999, 3=£40,000-£59,999, 4=£25,000-£39,999, 5=below £24,999; Education: 1=Degree level, 2=below degree level qualifications, 3=no qualifications; Religion: 0=No, 1=Yes; Politics scale is continuous from 0=left to 10=right; Class Origin: 0=working class, 1=middle class; Relationship status: 0=single, 1=in relationship; Universal Credit: 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant; IMD: 1=1st quartile, 4=last quartile; Ethnicity: 1=Other, 2=Black Caribbean/African, 3=Chinese, 4=Asian/Sub-continent, 5=Multiple ethnic background, 6=White.

Table 6.1: Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models predicting punitiveness towards 'Unruly school pupils should receive tougher punishments' (n=3,637)¹²

Socio-demographic factors ¹¹ 0 ^a = reference category	Model 1	95% CI	Model 2	95% CI	Model 3	95% CI	Model 4	95% CI
Gender male (= 0)	.191**	0.67, 315	.248***	.122, .374	-.170*	-.305, -.034	-.160*	-.296, -.024
Gender female (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Age Range 25-34	.198	-.101, .496	.217	-.082, .516	-.258	-.574, .058	-.270	-.587, .046
Age Range 35-44	.474**	.163, .786	.492**	.181, .804	-.060	-.391, .271	-.071	-.402, .260
Age Range 45-54	.577***	.275, .879	.605***	.303, .908	-.159	-.483, .165	-.180	-.504, .144
Age Range 55-64	.437**	.127, .748	.459**	.148, .770	-.205	-.539, .129	-.219	-.553, .115
Age Range 65+	.394*	.083, .706	.423**	.111, .735	-.327	-.662, .008	-.350*	-.686, -.015
Age Range 16-24	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Income: £25,999 - £39,999	.139	-.019, .296	.144	-.013, .302	.072	-.096, .239	.073	-.095, .240
£40,000 - £59,999	.166	-.015, .348	.175	-.007, .357	.243*	.049, .437	.248*	.054, .442
£60,000 - £84,999	.290*	.036, .545	.308*	.053, .563	.420**	.148, .692	.431**	.158, .703
Over £85,000	-.044	-.381, .293	.005	-.333, .343	.187	-.173, .548	.198	-.163, .559
Income: below £24,999	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Education – below degree qualification	-.011	-.207, .186	.005	-.192, .201	.187	-.023, .396	.190	-.020, .400
Education – Degree	-.401***	-.612, -.191	-.376***	-.587, -.165	.229*	.003, .456	.242*	.015, .469
Education – no qualifications	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
No Religion (= 0)	-.215***	-.345, -.085	-.211***	-.341, -.081	.253***	.112, .394	.267***	.126, .409
Religion (= 1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Politics (0-10 scale; 10 = more conservative)	.185***	.157, .213	.187***	.159, -.215	-.007	-.042, .028	-.010	-.048, .027
Working class origin (=0)	.241***	.106, .377	.214**	.078, .350	.035	-.110, .180	.028	-.118, .175
Middle class origin (= 1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Relationship single (=0)	.034	-.131, .198	.038	-.127, .202	.191*	.015, .367	.186*	.009, .362
In relationship (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Universal Credit claimant (=0)	-.115	-.311, .080	-.139	-.335, .058	-.138	-.346, .070	-.139	-.347, .069
Non claimant (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
IMD 1st quartile	-.022	-.211, .167	.046	-.145, .238	.210*	.005, .414	.215*	.009, .421
IMD 2 nd quartile	-.047	-.227, .133	.013	-.169, .194	.134	-.060, .327	.145	-.049, .339
IMD 3 rd quartile	-.140	-.312, .032	-.098	-.271, .075	-.051	-.235, .134	-.049	-.233, .136
IMD 4 th quartile	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Ethnicity: Other (n=11)	.879	-.522, 2.281	.807	-.595, 2.210	-.494	-.1.979, .990	-.483	-.1.967, 1.002
Black Caribbean/African	-.231	-.742, .280	-.216	-.727, .295	-.495	-.1.003, .013	-.417	-.956, .122

¹² See p217 for details about the sample size.

(n=91)		.280		.295		.073		.122
Chinese (n=42)	-.434	-1.103, .235	-.498	-1.168, .172	-.942***	-1.646, -.239	-.961**	-1.665, -.257
Asian/Sub-continent (n=136)	-.100	-.552, .351	-.160	-.613, .292	-.278	-.753, .196	-.285	-.760, .191
Multiple ethnic background (n=72)	-.134	-.665, .397	-.154	-.685, .378	-.317	-.880, .246	-.303	-.868, .262
White ethnicity (n=5,174)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Crime related factors								
No victimisation (=0)			.063	-.111, .238	.122	-.064, .308	.127	-.059, .314
Victimisation (=1)			0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Fear of crime scale (1=very safe to 4=very unsafe)			.202***	.119, .284	.059	-.029, .148	.043	-.047, .133
Belief systems (high scores=increase in values)								
Neo-liberal values					-.009	-.032, .014	-.008	-.032, .016
Neo-conservative values					.536***	.507, .566	.520***	.488, .551
Nostalgia (high scores=increase in values)								
Social nostalgic values							.015	-.005, .035
Economic nostalgic values							.023	-.004, .050
Political nostalgic values							-.018	-.044, .008
Nagelkerke R-square								
	.094		.100		.468		.469	

0^a is the reference category and has a coefficient of 0.

*** p < .001, ** p < .01, * p < .05.

Most of the significant socio-demographic factors have slight variations in beta coefficients with the exception of *gender* which increases in effect size and becomes significant at the $p < .001$ level and the *over 65 age group* which also increases in effect size and becomes significant at the $p < .01$ level. In contrast, *class origin* decreases in both effect size and significance to the $p < .01$ level. This suggests that fear of crime slightly exacerbated the effects of working-class origin in Model 1. The Nagelkerke value of 10% suggests that there is a very slight increase from Model 1 in explaining the variance in punitiveness toward unruly school children.

Model 3: Belief Systems

When *neo-conservative values* and *neo-liberal values* were entered in Model 3, only *neo-conservative values* has a significant effect on punitive attitudes towards unruly school children (beta=.536, $p < .001$), whilst *neo-liberal values* has no significant effect. This suggests

that *neo-conservative values* has a strong effect on punitive attitudes towards unruly school children; as neo-conservative values increase so does support for tougher punishments for unruly school children.

The introduction of *neo-conservative values* in Model 3 has a notable effect on a number of socio-demographic factors. Firstly, *Chinese ethnicity* (beta=-.942,) increases in effect size and becomes significant at the $p < .001$ level, suggesting that this group is associated with lower levels of punitiveness when compared to those from white background. Although, it is worth noting that there are only 42 Chinese respondents and the 95% confidence intervals are very wide. Secondly, the effects of all *age ranges*, *politics*, and *class origin* diminish, suggesting that the neo-conservative values exacerbated the effects of age, self-identified political conservatism and class origin in the previous models. Thirdly, the effects of *degree education* (beta=.229, $p < .05$), *gender* (beta=-.170, $p < .05$), and *religion* (beta=.253, $p < .001$) reverse. Once neo-conservative values were introduced, the degree educated become more punitive when compared to those with no qualifications, being male is associated with less punitive attitudes when compared to females, and those with no religion were found to be more punitive when compared to those with a religion. Finally, the effects of some variables increase. *Income category £60,000 to £84,999* (beta=.420, $p < .01$) and *£40,000 to £59,999* (beta=.243, $p < .05$) increase in effect size and significance suggesting that those with household incomes within these income categories are more punitive when compared to the lowest income bracket. *Relationship* (beta=.191, $p < .05$) and *IMD 1st quartile* (beta=.210, $p = .05$) also become significant with those who are single being more punitive compared to those who are in a relationship and those in the lowest quartile being more punitive when compared to those in the highest quartile. The variance explained by Model 3 as a whole is 46.8%, an increase of 36.8% from Model 2.

Model 4: Nostalgia

The nostalgic values items in Model 4 have no significant effect on punitive attitudes toward unruly school children. The increase in variance explained by introducing the nostalgia items is very small shown by the Nagelkerke value of .001. The significance of Chinese ethnicity reduces to the $p < .01$ level whilst the over 65 age group (beta=-.350, $p < .05$) becomes significant and were found to be less punitive compared to those aged between 16 and 24

years old. The full model containing all predictors was statistically significant, χ^2 (32, N=3637) = 2057.44, $p < .001$, indicating that the model is significantly better at predicting punitive attitudes towards unruly school pupils than not fitting the model. The Nagelkerke value¹³ suggests that the model as a whole accounts for 46.9% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards unruly school pupils.¹⁴

The sample size reduced from 5,781 to 3,637 in the ordinal regression models due to the inclusion, and therefore missing data (item non-response), of some socio-demographic variables. Most notably, politics, income, class, ethnicity and religion resulted in item non-response, as follows: 'In politics people sometimes talk of left and right. Where would you place yourself on the following scale?' 1,252 answered 'don't know' and 140 said 'prefer not to say'; 'Which of all the following income brackets best represent your household income?' 689 respondents 'preferred not to say'; 'When you were growing up, would you say your family was middle class or working class?' 382 respondents answered 'don't know/other'; 'Which of the following categories would describe your ethnicity?' 200 respondents did not answer the question and 55 preferred not to say; and, when asked, 'What is your religion?' 127 respondents preferred not to say. Item non-response may occur with some socio-demographic questions when respondents feel the question is sensitive or feel they are unable to answer the question (Tourangeau et al., 2000). Web-based surveys may also result in a higher number of 'don't knows' (Heerwegh and Loosveldt (2008). However, the inclusion of socio-demographic variables is important theoretically (Friesen Ksiazkiewicz, 2014; McAndres, 2020). A further discussion on the limitations of item non-response in relation to this study is included in Chapter 10.

Summary

Findings suggest that support for tougher punishments for unruly school pupils are largely driven by neo-conservative values. Higher income, degree level education, no religion, being

¹³ The Nagelkerke value provides an indication of the amount of variance in the dependent variable explained by the model, from a minimum value of 0 to a maximum of approximately 1 (Pallant, 2016).

¹⁴ No concerns were raised with multicollinearity by viewing the correlation matrix of all variables included in the models. There are no correlations between independent variables greater than .9 which would indicate concerns with multicollinearity (Field, 2018) with the largest ($r = .552$, $p < .001$) between political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values. The largest correlation between the unruly school children variable and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r = .647$, $p < .000$).

single and those in the lowest IMD quartile are associated with higher levels of punitiveness, whilst being male and those over 65 years old appear to be associated with less punitive attitudes towards unruly school children. Whilst Chinese ethnicity is significant there are only 42 respondents in this category and the 95% confidence intervals are very wide. When confidence intervals are very wide the sample mean could be very different to the true mean and therefore suggests that this is a bad representation of the population (Field, 2018).

6.3. The need to punish?

The apparent desire, or aversion, to punish school pupils for rulebreaking behaviours became evident throughout the cognitive interviews. Some respondents were clearly supportive of tougher punishments for unruly school pupils,

‘They just deserve tough punishments sometimes, I think. I just feel like kids are more disruptive nowadays.’ (R2)

‘A lot of children from the school I went to would purposely get kicked out of class. Tougher punishments would be making them do what they don’t want to do, but what they have to do.’ (R6)

Whilst, some respondents were clearly opposed to the idea of punishing school children,

‘No, I’m not into punishing kids’. (R5)

‘I don’t think kids should be punished.’ (R11)

Others outlined boundaries to when they thought punishment was acceptable, which was a sentiment voiced by a few respondents,

‘If it’s a child that has no learning needs, then yeah, I do think we need to punish them, maybe not hit them but to do some sort of disciplinary action.’ (R17)

Support of tougher sanctions for certain types of indiscipline was found to be present in the majority (82%) of secondary school teachers in England and Wales (The Elton Report, 1989).

More recently in 2011, 71% of 2,014 teachers and 62% of school children agreed that *teachers should be allowed to be tougher when it comes to discipline* (Thompson, 2011).

'A wrap over the knuckles'

Personal accounts of being physically punished in school as children came to the fore in the cognitive interviews,

'I don't believe in corporal punishment. I was thinking back, and we did get punished, we really got hit. Teachers used to hit you on the back of the knuckles with rulers and believe me it did hurt that.' (R5)

'One of the teachers...he used to have a small cane...if you weren't behaving, he'd pick it up and wrap you. But you learnt to respect him. I do agree with corporal punishment. (R7)

Views on physical punishments in schools appeared to be driven by beliefs about whether physical punishments affect behavioural change. R7 noted how in school he learnt to behave himself due to witnessing some teachers throwing board rubbers at pupils or caning pupils who misbehaved. Others who were not in the education system when caning was used, also held views about the effectiveness of corporal punishments,

'I'm not talking about beating the child senseless or anything like that...but a quick tap is enough sometimes to make them go 'oh, I won't do that again', and just sit up and think.' (R8)

'I think sometimes it works, sometimes it was needed, I think. I wasn't in school at the time when it was, but if you got the cane, I think some people wouldn't do it again, would they?' (R11)

However, R11 also noted how she thought that punishments are sometimes not appropriate,

‘...if it is just a case of sitting down and sorting the kids out and finding out the reasons why, you know, quite often kids are like that for a reason. And if you can pinpoint that reason, then obviously you can sort it out without actually giving punishments...you get more of an understanding about kids by sitting down with them I think.’

The view that current school punishments fail to discipline school pupils was also evident in the cognitive interviews. This was apparent both with those who worked within the education system and those who had children at school,

‘I think we should bring back national service personally...if you don’t set down punishments for children, they walk all over you...at the moment it seems like they think the world owes them a living.’ (R8)

‘School punishments these days are not stopping the bad behaviour. That respect isn’t there. I think it is a really difficult thing for the teachers, I think their hands are tied now... I don’t really see how they [punishments] can get much stricter, bar hitting the children... all they can do is isolate them, or exclude them, or they can put them into after school detention, there’s not really much else they can do is there?’ (R12)

In contrast, others were vehemently opposed to the idea that teachers should physically punish children,

‘...producing a cane and battering them with it, but that is physical violence and no school teacher should be using physical violence on the kids.’ (R9)

Whilst the qualitative data is limited due to the purpose of the interviews being to test the questions rather than explore the attitudes of participants in greater depth, it became clear that many participants had a fundamental belief about whether the punishment of school pupils was acceptable or not, in particular in relation to physical punishments. Previous research also found that teachers’ views on whether they supported or opposed the punishment of school children was driven by their fundamental beliefs of whether

punishment should be used as a form of moral retribution or, whether children's rights should be recognised (Elton, 1989), rather than based on evidence of what works in schools.

6.4. Exploring support for the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils

*Model 1: Socio-demographic factors*¹⁵

As shown in Table 6.2, when socio-demographic factors are considered in isolation in Model 1, *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity* (beta=-.919, p<.001), *age group 45-54* (beta=.502, p<.001), *working class origin* (beta=.223, p<.001), *males* (beta=.213, p<.001) and *politics* (beta=.178, p<.001) have the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards permanent exclusion. This suggests that the Black Caribbean/African group are significantly less likely to hold punitive attitudes towards the permanent exclusion of school pupils when compared to the white ethnicity group, whilst the 45 to 54 age group are significantly more likely to hold punitive attitudes when compared to 16 to 24-year olds. The likelihood of holding punitive attitudes increases with working class origin when compared to middle class origin, being male compared to females and identifying as politically more conservative. Punitive attitudes also appear to increase with household incomes *above £40,000* when compared to the lowest income bracket, and with those *aged between 35 and 44* (beta=.387, p<.05) compared to the youngest age group. Additionally, punitiveness appears to decrease with *degree education* (beta=-.282, p<.01) when compared to those with no qualifications, and those with *no religion* (beta=-.130, p<.05) compared to those with a religion. The Nagelkerke value suggests that Model 1 accounts for 7.9% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils.

Model 2: Crime related factors

The next model introduced crime related factors. The *victimisation* variable asked if respondents had experienced any victimisation in the last 5 years. Those who have no experience of victimisation (beta=.221, p<.05) are more likely to hold more punitive views when compared to those who have been a victim of crime in the last five years. *Fear of crime* has a strong effect when introduced in Model 2 (beta = .155, p<.001) suggesting that punitive attitudes towards the permanent exclusion of school pupils increases as fear of

¹⁵ See page 204 for coding.

crime increases. There is very little effect from the introduction of victimisation and fear of crime on the socio-demographic factors in Model 2, with the exception of an increase in effect and significance on those aged between 35 and 44 ($\beta=.404$, $p<.01$), a decrease in effect size and significance on those from a working class origin ($\beta=.207$, $p<.01$), and a decrease in effect and significance of *degree* ($\beta=-.248$, $p<.05$). The Nagelkerke value of 8.4% suggests that Model 2 has a very small effect on the variance in attitudes towards permanent exclusion.

Model 3: Belief Systems

When belief systems were introduced in Model 3, *neo-conservative values* ($\beta=.289$, $p<.001$) has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards the permanent exclusion of school children, whilst neo-liberal values also has a significant but smaller effect ($\beta=.062$, $p<.001$). This suggests that as neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values increase, so do punitive attitudes towards permanent exclusion. *Victimisation* increases in effect size and significance ($\beta=.272$, $p<.01$) when neo-conservative and neo-liberal values are introduced to the model, whilst the effect and significance of *fear of crime* diminish. This suggests that beliefs systems inflated the effects of fear of crime in the previous model.

Neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values also have a notable effect on some socio-demographic variables. Most notably the effects of *gender*, *age*, *education*, *politics* and *working class origin* all diminish in Model 3 suggesting that neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values exacerbated the effects of these variables in the previous models. Additionally, punitive attitudes of those in income categories over £60,000 appear to increase once neo-conservative and neo-liberal values are introduced to the model. Finally, the effects of *no religion* ($\beta=.165$, $p<.05$) reverse suggesting that those with no religion are more likely to hold punitive attitudes than those with a religion once belief systems are introduced to the model. All other factors remain stable. The variance explained by Model 3 as a whole is 27.2%, an increase of 18.8% from Model 2.

Table 6.2: Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models predicting punitiveness towards 'School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded' (n=3,637)¹⁶

Socio-demographic factors 0 ^a = reference category	Model 1	95% CI	Model 2	95% CI	Model 3	95% CI	Model 4	95% CI
Gender male (=0)	.213***	.093, .333	.260***	.138, .383	.003	-.123, .129	.012	-.115, .138
Gender female (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Age Range 25-34	.240	-.052, .532	.252	-.041, .544	-.054	-.354, .245	-.076	-.377, .224
Age Range 35-44	.387*	.084, .691	.404**	.100, .708	.073	-.239, .385	.044	-.269, .357
Age Range 45-54	.502***	.207, .797	.511***	.216, .806	.119	-.187, .425	.106	-.201, .413
Age Range 55-64	.222	-.080, .525	.222	-.081, .526	-.128	-.443, .187	-.133	-.448, .183
Age Range 65+	.124	-.179, .428	.130	-.175, .434	-.272	-.588, .044	-.275	-.592, .042
Age Range 16-24	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Income: £25,999 - £39,999	.091	-.061, .244	.093	-.060, .245	.030	-.125, .186	.046	-.110, .201
£40,000 - £59,999	.212*	.036, .389	.220*	.044, .397	.217*	.037, .397	.241**	.061, .421
£60,000 - £84,999	.375**	.127, .622	.389**	.142, .637	.417***	.164, .670	.454***	.201, .708
Over £85,000	.384*	.055, .714	.420*	.090, .750	.466**	.126, .806	.485**	.145, .826
Income: below £24,999	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Education – Degree	-.282**	-.486, -.078	-.248*	-.453, -.044	.186	-.024, .397	.218*	.007, .429
Education – below degree qualification	-.071	-.260, .119	-.054	-.244, .136	.072	-.122, .266	.082	-.112, .276
Education – no qualifications	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
No Religion (=0)	-.130*	-.256, -.004	-.133*	-.259, -.007	.165*	.034, .296	.183**	.051, .314
Religion (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Politics (0-10 scale; 10 = more conservative)	.178***	.151, .205	.180***	.153, .207	.008	-.025, .040	.007	-.028, .041
Working class origin (=0)	.223***	.091, .354	.207**	.075, .339	.110	-.026, .246	.100	-.037, .236
Middle class origin (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Relationship single (=0)	.040	-.120, .199	.043	-.117, .203	.127	-.036, .291	.124	-.041, .288
In relationship (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Universal Credit claimant (=0)	.087	-.103, .277	.083	-.108, .274	.130	-.065, .326	.129	-.067, .324
Non claimant (= 1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
IMD 1 st quartile	.017	-.167, .200	.055	-.131, .240	.131	-.059, .321	.150	-.041, .342
IMD 2 nd quartile	-.118	-.292, .057	-.078	-.254, .098	-.015	-.228, .116	.005	-.176, .185
IMD 3 rd quartile	-.119	-.287, .048	-.089	-.257, .080	-.056	-.228, .116	-.060	-.233, .112
IMD 4 th quartile	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	

¹⁶ See P217 for details about the n-size

Ethnicity: Other (n=11)	.927	-434, 2.289	.881	-481, 2.242	.077	-1.308, 1.461	.168	1.216, 1.552
Black Caribbean/African (n=91)	-.919***	-1.414, -.423	-.911***	-1.407, -.415	-.972***	-1.477, -.466	-.887***	-1.394, -.381
Chinese (n=42)	.377	-1.031, .278	-.441	-1.096, .214	-.635	-1.302, .031	-.615	-1.282, .052
Asian/Sub-continent (n=136)	.066	-.374, .506	.015	-.426, .456	-.072	-.520, .377	-.089	-.538, .360
Multiple ethnic background (n=72)	.075	-.445, .595	.073	-.447, .594	.032	-.501, .566	.117	-.417, .651
White ethnicity (n=5,174)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Crime related factors								
No victimisation (=0)			.221*	.052, .391	.272**	.099, .446	.284***	.110, .458
Victimisation (=1)			0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Fear of crime (1=very safe...4=very unsafe)			.155***	.075, .235	.075	-.007, .157	.039	-.044, .122
Belief systems (high scores=increase in values)								
Neo-liberal values					.062***	.041, .084	.059***	.037, .081
Neo-conservative values					.289***	.265, .313	.264***	.238, .290
Nostalgia (high scores=increase in values)								
Social nostalgic values							.048***	.029, .066
Economic nostalgic values							-.010	-.036, .015
Political nostalgic values							.005	-.019, .029
Nagelkerke R-square	.079		.084		.272		.277	

0^a is the reference category and has a coefficient of 0.

*** p < .001, ** p < .01, * p < .05

Model 4: Nostalgia

Once the nostalgia items were introduced in Model 4, only social nostalgic values has a significant effect on punitive attitudes towards permanent exclusion (beta=.048, p<.001) suggesting that as social nostalgia increases, so does support for the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils. Social nostalgic values slightly reduces the effect of neo-conservative values (beta=.264, p<.001) and neo-liberal values (beta=.059, p<.001). Whereas *no victimisation* (beta=.284) becomes significant at the p<.001 level, suggesting that those who have not been victims of crime in the past five years are more likely to hold punitive attitudes than those who have been victimized. In Model 4, the effects on socio-demographic variables remain largely stable with the exception of *income bracket £40,000 to £59,999* and *no religion* becoming significant at the p<.01 level. Additionally, *degree*

education (beta=.218, $p < .05$) becomes significant suggesting that those with a degree education are more likely to hold punitive attitudes when compared to those with no qualifications once social nostalgic values are introduced to the model. The variance explained by Model 4 is 27.7%, an increase in variance of 0.5% from Model 3. The full model containing all predictors was statistically significant, $\chi^2(32, N=3637) = 1101.33, p < .001$, indicating that the model is significantly better at predicting punitive attitudes towards permanent exclusion than not fitting a model.¹⁷ The Nagelkerke value suggests that the model as a whole accounts for 27.7% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils.

Summary

Findings suggest that punitive attitudes towards the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school children are strongly influenced by neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values. This is demonstrated by the increase in the Nagelkerke R-Square value in Model 3 with neo-conservative values appearing to have the strongest effect. Additionally, those with no experience of victimisation, those having no religion, higher incomes, degree level education and social nostalgic values appear to be related to an increase in punitive attitudes. Whilst those from a Black Caribbean/African background appear to hold less punitive attitudes than those from a white background.

6.5. A Sense of Compassion

The implementation of permanent exclusion, a specific, extreme sanction, highlighted a sense of compassion towards school children by some participants in the cognitive interviews. Assertions that the circumstances of the child should be taken into account were prevalent, as were participants' reflections on their own experiences or work, family and friendships, which tended to illicit a more compassionate response. R8 reflected on her own experiences of working in a school and commented that her agreement with the use of permanent exclusion was dependant on whether the child has any other issues,

¹⁷ No concerns were noted with multicollinearity of independent variables as noted with the unruly school pupil's variable (the same independent variables are used in the analysis). The largest correlation between the permanent exclusion variable and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r = .441, p < .000$).

‘Are you just talking badly behaved kids that need a kick up the arse or are you actually talking about the educational special needs kids as well.’

Should the behaviour involve drugs then R8 thought they should be permanently excluded, but noted that she would have liked some clarification on the circumstances of the children,

‘If they have got some underlying thing, like dyslexia or behavioural problems then perhaps not, because they need the help and where are they going to get it if not at school.’

This was a sentiment that was also voiced by other respondents,

‘Maybe the child wants to engage but they can't, you know and that's why I say, if it's just a kid, who is just alright, got a good home, really don't have no problem, just being spoiled, then yeah I agree with the punishment but if there's other factors into play then it's not as clear cut to me.’ (R17)

Whilst some were completely opposed to the idea of permanent exclusion in any circumstance,

‘If they are being naughty, and I mean really naughty, there should be something they can do to punish them for it, but I don't think they should be permanently excluded. We are talking about school children, it's going to affect their lives as they get older if they get stopped from going to school.’ (R5)

‘That's an admission of failure by the school’ (R9)

‘A lot of children from the school I went to would purposely get kicked out of class, so I think it would be a better way of doing it to make them go into a class rather than kicking them out of it.’ (R6)

The responses obtained during the cognitive interviews suggests that participants were generally less supportive of the idea of an extreme sanction such as permanent exclusion, than compared to the non-specific notion of 'tougher punishments'. Respondents tended to deliberate more about the potential circumstances of the child in relation to permanent exclusion than when considering their responses to tougher punishments for unruly school pupils. This difference was also evident in the Teacher Voice Omnibus Survey (NFER, 2012), albeit with a much smaller difference in regards to secondary school children, which found 90% of primary and 96% of secondary school teachers considered it reasonable for a school to implement a fixed term exclusion for poor behavior; this figure reduced to 65% of primary and 87% of secondary teachers who considered it reasonable to permanently exclude pupils for poor behavior.

6.6. A comparison of support for tougher punishments and the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils

There are similarities in the factors related to both support for tougher punishments and support for permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils. Table 6.3 below shows the significant factors relating to each variable. The introduction of beliefs systems has the strongest effect on both variables, but with the greater effect on support for tougher punishments which is shown by the increase in R-Square of 36.8% compared to 27.2% for the permanent exclusion variable. Increased punitiveness towards both tougher punishments and the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils appears to be related to those earning between £40,000 and £59,999, although the effects appear to be stronger regarding support for permanent exclusion. Additionally, degree level education and having no religion also appear to be significant factors related to increased punitiveness towards tougher punishments and permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school pupils. Whilst higher educational attainment has generally been found to decrease punitiveness towards offenders (Spiranovic et al., 2012; Costelloe et al., 2009; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007), findings here suggest that higher education attainment increases punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils.

Neo-conservative values appears to be the most relevant factor related to support for tougher punishments for rulebreaking school pupils. Additionally, being female, being aged

16 to 24 years old (when compared to those aged over 65), being single, and those in the lowest IMD quartile (compared to highest quartile) also appear to be relevant factors. These findings are inconsistent with previous research relating to punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers. Males have been found to be more punitive than females in relation to offenders (Hough et al., 1988; Spiranovic et al., 2012; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007). Whilst punitiveness towards offenders has been generally found to increase with age (Hough and Moxon, 1985; Hough et al., 1988; Spiranovic et al., 2012; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007), although more recently King and Maruna (2009) found that age was not a significant predictor of punitiveness. Lastly, Costelloe et al. (2009) found that marriage was a significant predictor of an increased punitive attitude towards offenders.

Significant factors relating only to support for permanent exclusion appear to be neo-liberal values, social nostalgic values, no experience of victimisation, those from a white background (compared to those from a Black Caribbean/African background) and those earning incomes in excess of £85,000. These findings are consistent with previous criminological research which found Black Caribbean/African ethnicity (when compared to white ethnicity) to decrease punitiveness towards offenders (Unnever and Cullen, 2010; Useem et al., 2003; Costelloe et al., 2009). The overall model explains a greater amount of variance in punitiveness towards tougher punishments (46.9%) than towards permanent exclusion (27.7%).

Table 6.3 Summary: A comparison of significant factors relating to rulebreaking school pupils

Variables	Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments	School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded
Males gender (=0) (0 ^a – females=1)	* (beta=-.160) (Males less punitive than females)	X
Age Range 25-34 (0 ^a - 16-24)	X	X
Age Range 35-44	X	X
Age Range 45-54	X	X
Age Range 55-64	X	X
Age Range 65+	* (beta=-.350) (Less punitive than 16-24 year olds)	X
Income £25,999 - £39,999 (0 ^a - below £24,999)	X	X
£40,000 - £59,999	* (beta=.248) (More punitive than below £24,999)	** (beta=.241) (More punitive than below £24,999)
£60,000 - £84,999	** (beta=.431) (More punitive than below £24,999)	*** (beta=.454) (More punitive than below £24,999)
Over £85,000	X	** (beta=.485) (More punitive than below £24,999)
Degree Education (0 ^a - no qualifications)	* (beta=.242) (More punitive than no qualifications)	* (beta=.218) (More punitive than no qualifications)
Below degree education	X	X
No Religion (=0) (0 ^a – Religion=1)	*** (beta=.267) (No religion more punitive)	** (beta=.183) (No religion more punitive)
Political conservatism	X	X
Class Origin	X	X
Relationship single (0 ^a - In relationship=1)	* (beta=.186) (Single more punitive)	X
Universal Credit	X	X
IMD (0 ^a - 4 th quartile)	* (beta=.215) (1 st quartile more punitive than 4 th quartile)	X
Ethnicity (0 ^a – white ethnicity)	** (beta=-.961) (Chinese ethnicity less punitive)	*** (beta=-.887) (Black Caribbean/African less punitive)
No Victimization (=0) (0 ^a – Victimization)	X	*** (beta=.284) (No victimisation more punitive)
Fear of crime	X	X
Neo-liberal values	X	*** (beta=.059)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.520)	*** (beta=.264)
Social nostalgic values	X	*** (beta=.048)
Economic nostalgic values	X	X
Political nostalgic values	X	X
Nagelkerke R-Square Value	36.8%	27.2%

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05; 0^a is the reference category and has a coefficient of 0.

6.7. School Punitivity

This section explores general punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils through conducting multiple regression analysis¹⁸ (N=5,781) using the 'school punitivity' variable, which was constructed through factor analyzing *Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments* and *School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded*. Exploratory factor analysis was conducted using principle axis factoring, which does not assume normal distribution, with oblique rotation allowing for correlation between variables (Field, 2018). The KMO measure for sampling adequacy was .500 which is at the minimum acceptable level (Field, 2018). The variables for school punitivity correlated quite high with each other $r=.539$ and had a one factor solution explaining 76.96% of the variance. The school punitivity items have a fairly high reliability (Cronbach's $\alpha=.695$). Results from factor analysis and Cronbach's alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable (*School Punitivity*), which is also underpinned by theory, from the two items.

The sample size reduced from 5,781 to 2,090 in the multiple regression analyses due to the inclusion, and therefore missing data (item non-response), of some socio-demographic variables. Most notably, in relation to the religiosity variable. The religiosity question was preceded by the question: 'What is your religion?' If respondents answered 'none' to this question, then they were not asked the subsequent question, which asked, 'Would you consider yourself as extremely religious or extremely non-religious?'. Of the 5,781 respondents 2,453 respondents answered that they had no religion, so were not asked the subsequent religiosity question. Other socio-demographic variables, which also resulted in missing data (non-response items) included: 'In politics people sometimes talk of left and right. Where would you place yourself on the following scale?' 1,252 answered 'don't know' and 140 said 'prefer not to say'; 'Which of all the following income brackets best represent your household income?' 689 respondents 'preferred not to say'; 'When you were growing up, would you say your family was middle class or working class?' 382 respondents answered 'don't know/other'; and, finally, 'Which of the following categories would describe your

¹⁸ The large sample size ($n=5781$) is considered large enough to meet the sample size required to undertake Green (1991, in Tabacknick and Fidell, 2014:159) suggest $N \geq 50 + 8m$ (where m is the number of independent variables), so for the regression conducted in this section, 16 independent variables are used: $50 + (8)(16) = 178$ cases. If the dependent variable is skewed a larger sample is required as a small effect size or substantial measurement error is expected from less reliable variables (Tabacknick and Fidell, 2014).

ethnicity?' 200 respondents did not answer the question and 55 preferred not to say. Pairwise multiple regression was used to allow the inclusion in the analyses when the necessary information was available rather than unnecessarily limit the sample size (Pallant, 2016). Pairwise regression includes cases when they have the necessary information and only excludes cases if they are missing data for a specific analysis (Pallant, 2015). A further discussion on the impact of missing data on the empirical results in this study will be included in Chapter 10.

Model 1: Socio-demographic factors¹⁹

When socio-demographic factors were considered in isolation in Model 1 (Table 6.4), *politics* (beta=.253, $p < .001$) has the strongest effect on school punitivity. As respondents identify as more politically conservative their punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils increases. *Class origin* (beta= -.067) is also significant at the $p < .001$ level with punitiveness increasing with those from a working- class origin. *Education* (beta=.061, $p < .01$) and *religiosity* (beta=.056, $p < .01$) also appear to be relevant factors, suggesting that lower educational attainment and decreased religiosity are related to increased punitiveness towards school children. Finally, *gender* (beta=-.042, $p < .05$) and *income* (beta=.045, $p < .05$) suggest that being male and higher earnings are related to increased school punitivity. Model 1 as a whole accounts for 8.9% of the variance in school punitivity.

Model 2: Crime related factors

When crime-related factors were introduced in Model 2, *victimisation* has no significant effect, whilst *fear of crime* has a significant effect (beta = .079, $p < .001$) with punitive attitudes increasing as fear increases. *Fear of crime* has a small effect on *gender* and *class origin*. *Gender* (beta=-.058) becomes significant at the $p < .01$ level with male punitiveness increasing when fear of crime is introduced to the model, whilst the effects of working-class

¹⁹ These are coded as follows: Gender: 0=Male, 1=female; Age=1=16-24, 2=25-34, 3=35-44, 4=45-54, 5=55-64, 6=65-74, 7=75+; Income: 1=below £5,000, 2=£5,000-£9,999, 3=£10,000-£14,999, 4=£15,000-£19,999, 5=£20,000-£24,000, 6=£25,000-£29,999, 7=£30,000- £34,999, 8=£35,000-£39,999, 9=40,000-£44,999, 10=£45,000-£49,999, 11=£50,000-£59,999, 12=£60,000-£69,999, 13=70,000-£84,999, 14=£84,000-£99,999, 15=over £100,000; Education: 1=Degree level, 2=below degree level qualifications, 3=no qualifications; Religiosity scale: 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious; Politics scale: 0=left to 10=right; Class Origin: 0=working class, 1=middle class; Relationship status: 0=single, 1=in relationship; Universal Credit: 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant; IMD: 1=1st quartile, 2=2nd quartile, 3=3rd quartile, 4=4th quartile; Ethnicity: 0=Other, 1=White.

origin (beta=-.62) decrease in significance (p=<.01). All other socio-demographic factors remain stable. Model 2 accounts for 9.5% of the variance in school punitivity, with the R-Square change very small at .006.

Table 6.4: Beta weights for multiple linear regression models predicting ‘school punitivity’ (n=2,090)²⁰

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio-demographic factors¹⁹				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	-.042*	-.058**	-.014	-.015
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	.039	.041	-.031	-.027
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.045*	.052*	.056**	.060***
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.061**	.055**	-.028	-.032
Religiosity (1=extremely...7 unextremely)	.056**	.054**	.035*	.035*
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.253***	.254***	.016	.024
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.067***	-.062**	-.023	-.019
Relationship Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.020	.019	-.029	-.030
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	-.011	-.008	-.004	-.002
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=highest quartile)	.005	-.006	-.026	-.032
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	.003	.007	.029	.028
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.020	-.025	-.028
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.079***	.024	.016
Belief systems (high scores=more neo-con/neo-lib)				
Neo-liberal values			.061***	.063***
Neo-conservative values			.606***	.579***
Nostalgia (high score=more nostalgic)				
Social nostalgic values				.064**
Economic nostalgic values				-.018
Political nostalgic values				.035
R-square	.089***	.095***	.399***	.402**
Adjusted R-square	.085	.090	.395	.398
R-square change		.006	.304	.003

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Model 3: Belief Systems

When beliefs systems were introduced in Model 3, *neo-conservative values*²¹ (beta=.606, p=<.001) has the strongest effect on school punitivity, with neo-liberal values also having a significant effect at the p=<.001 level but with a much smaller effect size (beta=.061). This suggests that as neo-conservative and neo-liberal values increase, so does punitiveness

²⁰ See p230 for detail regarding the n-size

²¹ See Chapter 9.3 for an analysis of neo-conservative values.

towards rulebreaking school children. The introduction of neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values has a notable effect on a number of other factors in the model. The effects of *politics*, *fear of crime*, *class origin*, *education*, and *gender* diminish once belief systems are entered into the model. This suggests that neo-conservative and neo-liberal values inflated the effects of these factors in the previous model. The effect of *religiosity* (beta=.035, $p<.05$) also reduces once belief systems are introduced to the model. In contrast, the effect of *income* (beta=.056, $p<.01$) increases with those earning higher incomes holding more punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils. The variance explained by Model 3 as a whole is 39.9%, an increase of 30.4% from Model 2.

Model 4: Nostalgia

When nostalgia items were introduced in Model 4, social nostalgic values (beta=.064, $p<.01$) is the only significant factor, suggesting that as social nostalgia increases, so do punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils. Once the nostalgia items are introduced in Model 4, the effect size of neo-conservative values (beta=.579, $p<.001$) decreases slightly, which suggests that there may be a relationship between nostalgic values and neo-conservative values. All other factors remain stable except for *income* (beta=.060, $p<.001$) which increases suggesting that higher income becomes a more relevant factor once nostalgic values were entered into the model. The variance explained by the model as a whole is 40.2% with a very small R-square change of 0.3% ($p=.01$) from Model 3.

Summary

School punitivity appears to be strongly related to neo-conservative values, illustrated by the large increase in R-square change in Model 3 (30.4%) and the effect size of neo-conservative values (beta=.606). Other relevant factors appear to be neo-liberal values, those earning higher incomes, social nostalgic values and decreased religiosity, although the effect sizes of these variables suggest that their effect on increased punitiveness towards rulebreaking school children is substantially less than neo-conservative values. Table 6.5 below shows the statistically significant factors related to school punitivity.

Discussion

Findings suggest that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils. Analysis shows that separating the two measures draws out some notable differences between support for tougher punishments and support for the more punitive sanction of permanent exclusion. Most notably, this is that support for the general, non-specific sanction of 'tougher punishments' is predominately related to neo-conservative values. Support for the more extreme sanction of permanent exclusion appears to be related to a wider range of factors. Neo-conservative values has the strongest effect albeit a weaker one than for tougher punishments. Belief systems overall have a weaker effect on support for permanent exclusion than for tougher punishments. Secondly, neo-liberal values, social nostalgic values and those who have no experience of victimisation also appear to be relevant factors in the support for permanent exclusion.

Drawing on criminological literature, due to the lack of literature relating to attitudes towards school pupils, decreased religiosity also appears to be related to punitive attitudes towards offenders (King and Maruna, 2009; Unnever and Cullen, 2010; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007). There is conflicting research on the influence of income on punitive attitudes towards offenders. Those earning a higher income have been found to express more punitive views (King and Maruna, 2009), upper income has been found to be a significant predictor of a less punitive attitude (Spiranovic et al., 2012), whilst income has also been found to not be a relevant factor in punitive attitudes (Cullen et al., 1985; Costelloe et al., 2009). Findings here suggest that higher income is related to punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils. Finally, higher educational attainment has been found to be consistently related to decreased punitiveness towards offenders (King and Maruna, 2009; Costelloe et al., 2009; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Tyler and Boeckmann, 1997). Findings here suggest that punitive attitudes towards school pupils are not related to education when considering school punitivity.

Table 6.5: Summary table for relevant statistically significant factors for school punitivity

Variables	School Punitivity
Gender	X
Age Range 1=16-24 to 7=75+	X
Income 1=<£5000 to 15=>£100,000	*** (beta=.060, higher income)
Education 1=degree, 2 below degree level, 3=no qualifications	X
Religiosity 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious	* (beta=.035, decreased religiosity)
Political conservatism Scale: 1=left to 10=right	X
Class Origin 0=working class, 1=middle class	X
Relationship Status 0=single, 1=relationship	X
Universal Credit 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant	X
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	X
Ethnicity 0=white, 1=other	X
Victimisation 0=no, 1=victimised	X
Fear of crime 1=very safe to 4= very unsafe	X
Neo-liberal values	*** (beta=.063)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.579)
Social nostalgic values	** (beta=.064)
Economic nostalgic values	X
Political nostalgic values	X
R-Square Value	40.2%

* = p<.05, ** = p<.01, *** = p<.001

School Punitivity: Evaluating the multiple regression model

The full multiple regression model for school punitivity containing all the predictors was statistically significant ($p < .001$).²² The model summary (Table 6.6) shows the multiple correlation coefficients between school punitivity and the predictors in column one (labelled R), showing that when all predictors are included in Model 4 the multiple correlation coefficient is .634. The R-Square value in the second column measures how much variability in the outcome variable is explained for by the predictors (Field, 2018). The adjusted R-square indicates how well the model generalises with the figure in the final model between the R-square (.402) and adjusted R-square (.398) equalling .004 or 0.4% meaning that if the model were derived from the population as opposed to a sample the model would account for approximately 0.4% less variance in the outcome (Field, 2018). The F change statistic indicates that the change in R-square is significant at the $p < .001$ level for Model 1, 2 and 3, and significant at the $p < .01$ level for Model 4. The combined explanatory power of all Models is $R^2 = .402$ suggesting that the model overall explains 40.2% of the variance in school punitivity.

Table 6.6: Model summary for school punitivity

Model Summary									
Model	R	R Square	Adjusted R Square	Std. Error of the Estimate	R Square Change	Change Statistics			Sig. F Change
						F Change	df1	df2	
1	.299	.089	.085	.79976536	.089	22.477	11	2518	.000
2	.308	.095	.090	.79761778	.006	7.789	2	2516	.000
3	.631	.399	.395	.65038511	.304	635.035	2	2514	.000
4	.634	.402	.398	.64897490	.003	4.646	3	2511	.003

Normality, linearity, homoscedasticity and outliers

The histogram (Figure 6.1) shows that the normally distributed errors assumption is met with the mean (-0.01) very close to zero. The Normal Probability Plot (Figure 6.2) shows the data lie in a reasonably straight line suggesting no major deviations from normality.

²² The ANOVA table shows the F-Test of whether the model is significantly better at predicting the outcome than using no predictors (Field, 2018). The p-values ($p < .001$) indicates that all models significantly improve the ability to predict punitive attitudes compared to not fitting the models (Field, 2018).

Figure 6.1: Histogram for school punitivity

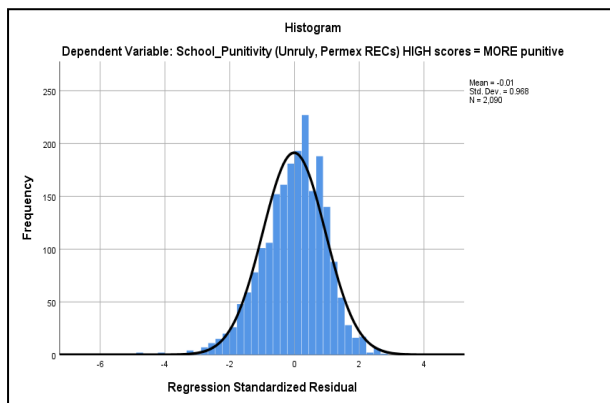
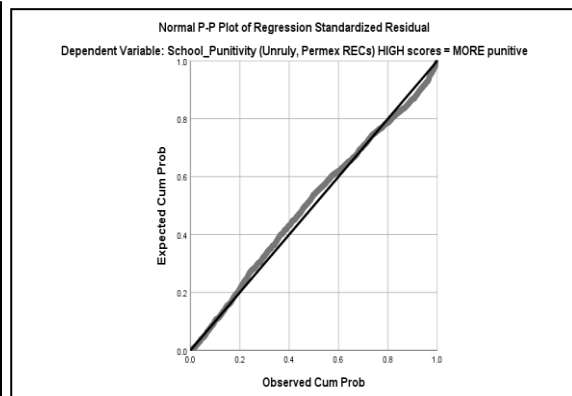


Figure 6.2: Normal P-P Plot for school punitivity



Casewise diagnostics

Casewise diagnostics shows that 8 cases (0.14% of the sample) have standardized residual values below -3 or above +3, which is below the 1% which would otherwise indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016; Field, 2018). Further investigation of these 8 cases suggests that no cases had a Cook's distance value²³ greater than 1 with the largest value of .01. Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances²⁴ shows 13 cases have Mahalanobis distances greater than 42.312 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013). Further examination of the DFBeta and Dffit statistics for the independent variables, which indicate problematic cases having an undue influence on the model parameters, highlight no concerns with no cases close to 1 (Field, 2018).

Collinearity Diagnostics

No preliminary concerns were raised with multicollinearity by viewing the correlation matrix of all dependent and independent variables. This shows with no correlations between independent variables are greater than .9 with the largest between political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values ($r=.552$). The largest correlation between the school punitivity variable and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r=.620$). All variance inflation factors (VIFs) are well below 10 which would indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the highest 2.030 (Economic nostalgic values) in any of the equations. No Tolerance values were below .10 which would also indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the

²³ Cook's distance indicates whether a case has an undue influence on the results with values above 1 suggesting a potential problem (Pallant, 2016).

²⁴ Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances allow identification of outliers (Pallant, 2016). To identify which cases are outliers, the critical chi-square value was determined using 18 independent variables as the degrees of freedom (Pallant, 2016) from the critical values chi-square table and an alpha level of .001 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013: 10).

lowest value of .493 (Economic nostalgic values), and the standard errors are low (highest .068 for ethnicity in Model 2). The average VIF in model 4 is 1.34 is also not substantially more than 1 (Field, 2018), therefore suggesting no concerns with multicollinearity.

6.8. Summary

This chapter began by conducting ordinal logistic regression to examine the relationship between the two items developed to measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils and socio-demographic factors, crime-related factors, political beliefs and nostalgic values. The data showed that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils, which was the case with both support for tougher punishments and support for permanent exclusion, although the model explained less variance in punitiveness towards permanent exclusion than towards tougher punishments.

Additional factors that appear to be related to support for tougher punishments are having no religion, being female, higher incomes, those with degree level qualifications, being single and those in the lowest IMD quartile. Whilst those over 65 years old appear to be less punitive. Punitive attitudes towards permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school children appear to also be influenced by neo-liberal values, no experience of victimisation, having no religion, higher incomes, degree level education, social nostalgic values and those from a white background (when compared to those from a Black Caribbean/African background).

Significant factors relating only to support for tougher punishments appear to be being female, being aged 16 to 24 years old (when compared to those aged over 65), being single, and those in the lowest IMD quartile (compared to highest quartile). Additionally, the overall model explains a greater amount of variance in punitiveness towards tougher punishments (46.9%) than towards permanent exclusion (27.7%). Whereas, significant factors relating only to support for permanent exclusion appear to be neo-liberal values, social nostalgic values, no experience of victimisation, those from a white background (compared to those from a Black Caribbean/African background) and those earning incomes in excess of £85,000. This suggests that there are different drivers for support for a specific extreme sanction than for

the non-specific idea of 'tougher punishments'. This is an aspect that will be explored further throughout subsequent analyses.

A multiple regression model was then conducted to examine the factors related to 'school punitivity' a variable consisting of the two items designed to measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils. Findings again suggest that school punitivity is strongly related to neo-conservative values. Other relevant factors appear to be neo-liberal values, those earning higher incomes, social nostalgic values and decreased religiosity, although the effect sizes of these variables suggest that their effect on increased punitiveness towards rulebreaking school children is substantially less than neo-conservative values.

This chapter also incorporated themes that emerged in the cognitive interviews. As with the quantitative data, qualitative responses to the two different statements appeared to elicit differing responses. Fundamental beliefs appeared to underlie attitudes toward the use of school punishments, particularly in relation to the use of physical punishments. Whilst responses towards the use of permanent exclusion tended to elicit more compassionate responses towards school pupils from participants which highlighted concerns about the use of punishments for children with special educational needs.

The focus will now turn to examining punitive attitudes towards welfare claimants, using the same structure developed throughout this chapter.

Chapter 7 Quantitative Analysis of punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants

7.1. Introduction

Chapter 6 explored punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils. Firstly, punitive attitudes were examined through conducting ordinal logistic regression using the two separate school pupil variables. Secondly, 'school punitivity' was examined (which merged the two individual school pupil items into one variable) by conducting multiple linear regression. Finally, qualitative data was included to highlight themes that emerged throughout the cognitive interviews. The analyses showed that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils with a greater influence on support for tougher punishments than permanent exclusion. The model explained less variance in support for the use of permanent exclusion than towards tougher punishments. The predominant factor relating to support for tougher punishments was neo-conservative values, whilst neo-liberal values, social nostalgic values and no experience of victimisation were also relevant factors in the support for permanent exclusion. This suggests that there is a difference in drivers between support for tougher punishments and the use of an extreme sanction, in this case permanent exclusion. A difference in attitudes was also apparent in the cognitive interviews.

This chapter aims to repeat the analyses conducted in Chapter 6 (see the introduction to Chapter 6 for more detail), but this time with the focus on rulebreaking welfare claimants. Chapter 5 detailed the development of the variables which will be used for the analyses, namely, *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer sentences*, and, *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped*. Following the same format as for rulebreaking school pupils in Chapter 6, the steps taken to examine the data are as follows:

1. Ordinal Logistic Regression was used to analyse the two separate welfare items: *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties*; and,

*Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped.*²⁵ (see Table 7.1 and Table 7.2).

2. Hierarchical multiple linear regression was then used to analyse *Welfare Punitivity*, a continuous variable constructed through factor analyzing *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties*, and *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped*.
3. Qualitative data from the cognitive interviews is included throughout the chapter aiming to provide some insight into public attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants not accessible through the quantitative data.
4. Previous welfare literature will also be considered in relation to the findings in this chapter.

7.2. Exploring support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants

*Model 1: Socio-demographic factors*²⁶

As shown in Table 7.1, higher income, age, education, class, gender, self-identified political conservatism, ethnicity and receipt of universal credit appear to be significant factors relating to punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants when considering support for stiffer penalties. Those earning *above £25,999* appear to be more likely to hold punitive attitudes when compared to those earning below £24,999, those *aged between 45 and 54* (beta=.508, p<.001) and those *aged over 65* (beta=.507, p<.001) appear to be more punitive when compared to those *aged under 24*, those from a *working class origin* (beta=.262, p<.001) appear to be more likely to hold punitive views when compared to those from a middle class origin, and *self-identified political conservatism* (beta=.211,

²⁵ Response codes were: 1=Strongly disagree, 2=disagree, 3=neither agree nor disagree, 4=agree, 5=strongly agree.

²⁶ These are coded as follows: Gender: 0=Male, 1=female; Age=1=65+, 2=55-64, 3=45-54, 4=35-44, 5=25-34, 6=16-24; Income: 1=£85,000+, 2=£60,000-£84,999, 3=£40,000-£59,999, 4=£25,000-£39,999, 5=below £24,999; Education: 1=Degree level, 2=below degree level qualifications, 3=no qualifications; Religion: 0=No, 1=Yes; Politics scale is continuous from 0=left to 10=right; Class Origin: 0=working class, 1=middle class; Relationship status: 0=single, 1=in relationship; Universal Credit: 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant; IMD: 1=1st quartile, 4=last quartile; Ethnicity: 1=Other, 2=Black Caribbean/African, 3=Chinese, 4=Asian/Sub-continent, 5=Multiple ethnic background, 6=White.

$p < .001$) appears to be related to increased punitive attitudes. Whilst those with *degree education* ($\beta = -.538$, $p < .001$) appear to be less punitive when compared to those with no qualifications, being a *universal credit claimant* ($\beta = -.300$, $p < .01$) appears to decrease punitiveness when compared to non-claimants of universal credit, those with a *Black Caribbean/African background* ($\beta = -.732$, $p < .01$) appear to be less punitive than those with a white background, and *males* ($\beta = -.157$, $p < .05$) appear to be less likely to hold punitive attitudes when compared to females. No other factors in Model 1 were statistically significant. The Nagelkerke R-Square value suggests that socio-demographic factors as a whole account for 12.9% of the variance in punitiveness towards stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants.

Model 2: Crime related factors

When crime related factors were introduced in Model 2, *victimisation* (victims of crime within the last five years) has no significant effect. *Fear of crime* (*How safe do you feel walking around in the area you live in after dark?*) has a significant effect ($\beta = .090$, $p < .05$) with punitive attitudes increasing as fear increases. *Fear of crime* has very little impact on the socio-demographic variables in Model 2, with the exception of small changes in effect size and significance of gender, those earning in excess of £85,000 and those from a Chinese background. *Gender* becomes not significant, those earning *over £85,000* increases slightly in effect size and becomes significant at the $p < .001$ level, whilst *Chinese ethnicity* ($\beta = -.691$) becomes significant at the $p < .05$ level, suggesting that those of Chinese ethnicity ($n = 42$) are less punitive when compared to white ethnicity. The Nagelkerke value of 13.1% suggests that there is a very slight increase from Model 1 in explaining the variance in punitiveness.

Model 3: Belief Systems

When neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values were introduced in Model 3, *neo-conservative values* ($\beta = .273$, $p < .001$) has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards welfare claimants. *Neo-liberal values* also has a significant effect at the $p < .001$ level with a much smaller effect size ($\beta = .038$). This suggests that as neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values increase, so do punitive attitudes towards stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants.

Table 7.1: Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models predicting punitiveness towards 'Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties' (n=3,637)²⁷

Socio-demographic factors ²⁰ 0 ^a = reference category	Model 1	95% CI	Model 2	95% CI	Model 3	95% CI	Model 4	95% CI
Gender male (=0)	-.157*	-.286, -.028	-.130	-.261, .001	-.414***	-.552, -.276	-.393***	-.532, -.254
Gender female (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Age Range 25-34	.135	-.167, .438	.141	-.161, .444	-.139	-.452, .174	-.153	-.466, .160
Age Range 35-44	.261	-.055, .577	.270	-.046, .586	-.061	-.389, .267	-.064	-.393, .265
Age Range 45-54	.508***	.200, .816	.512***	.203, .820	.085	-.237, .408	.031	-.292, .354
Age Range 55-64	.313	-.002, .629	.312	-.004, .628	-.008	-.340, .324	-.044	-.376, .289
Age Range 65+	.507**	.189, .826	.507**	.189, .826	.157	-.177, .491	.083	-.253, .418
Age Range 16-24	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Income: £25,999 - £39,999	.361***	.197, .524	.362***	.198, .526	.339***	.171, .508	.338***	.168, .508
£40,000 - £59,999	.559***	.370, .910	.562***	.371, .753	.643***	.445, .841	.644***	.445, .843
£60,000 - £84,999	.640***	.370, .910	.651***	.380, .921	.730***	.450, 1.010	.731***	.450, 1.012
Over £85,000	.570**	.214, .927	.592***	.235, .949	.711***	.337, 1.085	.726***	.351, 1.100
Income below £24,999	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Education – Degree	-.538***	-.759, -.318	-.520***	-.741, -.299	-.136	-.336, .093	-.126	-.357, .105
Education – below degree qualification	-.037	-.244, .170	-.029	-.236, .178	.112	-.102, .326	.109	-.107, .324
Education – no qualifications	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
No Religion (=0)	-.131	-.265, .004	-.133	-.268, .002	.137	-.005, .279	.164*	.021, .307
Religion (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Politics (0-10 scale; 10 = more conservative)	.211***	.181, .240	.213***	.184, .242	.069***	.033, .105	.030	-.008, .068
Working class origin (=0)	.262***	.121, .402	.253***	.111, .394	.164*	.017, .311	.194**	.046, .343
Middle class origin (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Relationship single (=0)	-.012	-.180, .157	-.011	-.179, .158	.076	-.098, .251	.056	-.120, .232
In Relationship (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Universal Credit claimant (=0)	-.300**	-.498, -.102	-.300**	-.498, -.101	-.312**	-.516, -.109	-.312**	-.517, -.108
Non claimant (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
IMD 1st quartile	.040	-.158, .237	.062	-.139, .263	.153	-.055, .360	.115	-.095, .324
IMD 2 nd quartile	-.099	-.286, .088	-.075	-.263, .114	.015	-.179, .210	.001	-.195, .197
IMD 3 rd quartile	-.166	-.344, .012	-.148	-.327, .031	-.073	-.258, .112	-.085	-.272, .101
IMD 4 th quartile	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Ethnicity: Other (n=11)	1.113	-.385, 2.612	1.086	-.412, 2.583	.385	-.1.183, 1.954	.373	-.1.183, 1.930
Black Caribbean/African (n=91)	-.732**	-.1.241, -.222	-.720**	-.1.229, -.210	-.830**	-.1.351, -.310	-.779**	-.1.301, -.257
Chinese	-.654	-.1.326, 0	-.691*	-.1.363, 0	-.940**	-.1.624, 0	-.1.023**	-.1.710, 0

²⁷ See p217 for details about the n-size

(n=42)		.018		-.018		-.256		-.336
Asian/Sub-continent (n=136)	-.182	-.642, .278	-.217	-.677, .244	-.292	-.765, .180	-.213	-.685, .259
Multiple ethnic background (n=72)	.406	-.158, .970	.408	-.157, .973	.430	-.156, 1.016	.469	-.118, 1.056
White ethnicity (n= 5,781)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Crime related factors								
No victimisation (=0)			.133	-.111, .238	.155	-.031, .341	.157	-.030, .344
Victimisation (=1)			0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Fear of crime (1=very safe...4=very unsafe)			.090*	.005, .176	-.006	-.096, .084	-.032	-.124, .059
Belief systems (high scores=increase in values)								
Neo-liberal values					.038***	.015, .062	.031*	.006, .055
Neo-conservative values					.273***	.248, .299	.250***	.222, .278
Nostalgia (high scores=increase in values)								
Social nostalgic values							.011	-.010, .031
Economic nostalgic values							.070***	.042, .098
Political nostalgic values							-.107***	-.135, -.080
Nagelkerke R-square	.129		.131		.276		.290	

0^a is the reference category and has a coefficient of 0.

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

The effect of fear of crime diminishes once neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values are introduced to the model, suggesting that neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values inflated the effects of fear of crime on punitive attitudes in the previous model. When neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values are introduced in Model 3 the effects of having a degree and age diminish. Whilst the effect size of *self-identified political conservatism* (beta=.069) reduces substantially but remains significant at the p=<.001 level, and the effects of *working class origin* (beta=.164, p=<.05) reduce. In contrast, the effects of *gender* (beta=-.414, p=<.001), *income in excess of £40,000*, *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity* (beta=-.830, p=<.01) and *Chinese ethnicity* (beta=-.940, p=<.01) increase. This suggests that those earning higher incomes are more likely to hold punitive views when compared to the lowest income bracket, whilst males are more likely to hold less punitive views when compared to females and those with a Black Caribbean/African and Chinese background are more likely to hold less punitive views when compared to those with a white background. All

other variables remain stable. The variance explained by Model 3 as a whole is 27.6%, an increase of 14.5% from Model 2.

Model 4: Nostalgia

When the nostalgic items are introduced in Model 4, political nostalgic values²⁸ (beta=-.107, p=<.001) and economic nostalgic values (beta=.070, p=<.001) have a significant effect on punitive attitudes towards welfare claimants. This suggests that as economic nostalgia increases so do punitive attitudes towards welfare claimants, whilst punitive attitudes decrease as political nostalgia increases. Social nostalgic values in contrast appears to have no effect on punitiveness towards welfare claimants in this model. The effect size of neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values reduce slightly once the nostalgia items are introduced to the model with neo-conservative values remaining significant at the p=<.001 level whilst neo-liberal values reduces in significance to the p=<.05 level. The effect of *politics* diminishes once nostalgic items are introduced to the model, whilst the effect of *working class origin* (beta=.194, p=<.01) and *no religion* (beta=.164, p=<.05) increase, suggesting that those from a working class origin are more likely to hold more punitive attitudes than those from a middle class origin and those with no religion are more likely to hold punitive attitudes than those with a religion. The nostalgia items have very little effect on all other variables in Model 4. The Nagelkerke value increases by 1.4% from Model 3. The full model containing all predictors was statistically significant, $\chi^2(32, N=3637) = 1092.99, p=<.001$, indicating that the model is significantly better at predicting punitive attitudes supportive of stiffer penalties towards rulebreaking welfare claimants than not fitting the model. The Nagelkerke value²⁹ suggests that the model as a whole accounts for 29% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards welfare claimants.³⁰

²⁸ Political nostalgic values: as agreement with the questions increases, punitiveness decreases.

²⁹ The Nagelkerke value provides an indication of the amount of variance in the dependent variable explained by the model, from a minimum value of 0 to a maximum of approximately 1 (Pallant, 2016).

³⁰ No concerns were raised with multicollinearity by viewing the correlation matrix of all variables included in the models. There are no correlations between independent variables greater than .9 which would indicate concerns with multicollinearity (Field, 2018) with the largest ($r=-.530, p=<.001$) between political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values. The largest correlation between the support for welfare stiffer penalties variable and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r=.448, p=<.001$).

Summary

Findings suggest that support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants are largely driven by neo-conservative values shown by the relatively large increase in R-square value of Model 3. Additionally, political nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, working class origin, no religion, higher incomes and neo-liberal values appear to be related to increased punitive attitudes, whilst being male, those in receipt of universal credit and Black Caribbean/African and Chinese ethnicity appear to be related to decreased punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. Although there are only 42 Chinese respondents and the 95% confidence intervals are very wide suggesting that this may be a poor representation of the population (Field, 2018).

7.3. Who are welfare claimants perceived to be?

Distinct themes emerged from the cognitive interviews in relation to perceptions about the identities of welfare claimants. Terms used to describe welfare claimants generally fell into one of two categories; generic, neutral descriptors for welfare claimants, or in contrast, specific descriptors. The former tended to consist of responses such as ‘those who claim public funds’ (R2), ‘Any money that somebody gets from the government to help them out’ (R11) and ‘Could be unemployed, could be old age pensioners, could be people with learning or physical disabilities that require support.’ (R9).

Whilst, the latter comprised of the following perceptions,

‘Immigrants...they come in, get everything out of the system, and put nothing in.’ (R4)

‘You can go in the Post Office...you’ll see a lot of Asians. They get a lot of money...they send it home to their families, and they get what they can out of the system. The Town Hall is full of people wanting to know what they can get. Scroungers. Anyone who is scrounging...coloured or white. People who try to get something out of the system and don’t appreciate it.’ (R7)

‘People who don’t tend to get jobs because they don’t look for them.’ (R6)

‘People on benefits that sign on...like the ones that are just doing it to get everything they can, so they don’t have to go to work.’

There are commonalities between these specific descriptors of welfare claimants in the cognitive interviews and observations in literature in recent years. Tinsley (2013:12) suggests a ‘rhetoric of division’ has re-emerged over the past decade or so towards the characterisation of unemployed people. Common terms used by politicians include ‘scroungers’ and ‘workers and shirkers’ (Tinsley, 2013:12). Over recent decades, certain politicians have espoused the existence of a culture of worklessness within families and communities (Tinsley, 2013; The Guardian, 2012). On becoming Prime Minister in 1997, Tony Blair referred to the ‘workless class’ and to ‘households where three generations have never had a job’ (Blair, 1997). More recently, the Secretary of State for Work and Pensions between 2010 and 2016, Iain Duncan Smith, referred to families where ‘three generations are unemployed’ (Tinsley, 2013; The Guardian, 2012). Despite these frequent assertions, MacDonald et al. (2013:213) found it ‘impossible’ to locate families where ‘three generations have never worked’. Additionally, in recent years it has been suggested by those in favour of reducing immigration that the welfare system attracts some migrants to the UK (Taylor-Gooby and Taylor, 2015). The British Social Attitudes Survey found that whilst support for additional spending on pensions and child benefit has increased since the 1980s, support for extra spending on the unemployed remains low with just 13% supporting benefits for the unemployed to be one of the top two priorities for additional spending (Taylor-Gooby and Taylor, 2015). Findings from the cognitive interviews indicates that these issues continue to dominate some respondents’ discourse towards welfare claimants with connections made between welfare and migrants, ‘scroungers’ and the belief that some claimants are reluctant to go to work.

7.4. Exploring support for permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants

Model 1: Socio-demographic factors³¹

When socio-demographic factors are considered in isolation in Model 1 (Table 7.2), *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity* (beta=-.807, p<.001), *education* in particular *degree education* (beta=-.681, p<.001), *universal credit claimant* (beta=-.358, p<.001), *incomes* between £25,000 and £85,999, *gender* (beta=-.240, p<.001) and *politics* (beta=.214, p<.001) appear

³¹ See page 230 for coding.

to be relevant factors relating to punitiveness towards permanently stopping welfare payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants. This suggests that punitive attitudes increase with those earning *over £25,999* when compared to those in the lowest income bracket, and with those who *self-identity as politically conservative*. Whilst punitive attitudes towards welfare claimants appear to decrease with *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity* when compared to white ethnicity, those *with qualifications* when compared to those with no qualifications, *universal credit claimants* when compared to non-claimants, and *being male* when compared to females. Additionally, those from a *working class origin* (beta=.162, $p<.05$) appear to be more punitive when compared to those from a middle class origin, whilst those with *no religion* (beta=-.163, $p<.05$) appear to be less punitive when compared to those with a religion. The Nagelkerke value suggests that Model 1 accounts for 11.7% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards permanently stopping welfare for rulebreaking claimants.

Model 2: Crime related factors

When crime-related factors are introduced in Model 2, *victimisation* (any victimisation in the past five years) has no significant effect. Whilst *fear of crime* (beta=.127, $p<.01$) appears to be a relevant factor with punitive attitudes increasing as fear increases. Apart from some small changes in effect sizes, there is very little effect from the introduction of crime-related factors on the socio-demographic factors in Model 2, with the exception of *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity* reducing in significant to the $p<.01$ level. The Nagelkerke value of 12% suggests that Model 2 has a very small effect on explaining the variance in punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants with an increase of 0.3% from Model 1.

Model 3: Belief Systems

When belief systems are introduced in Model 3, neo-conservative values (beta=.265, $p<.001$) has the strongest effect on increased support for permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants. Neo-liberal values is also significant at the $p<.001$ with a smaller effect size (beta=.115). Once belief systems are introduced, the effects of *victimisation* increases slightly (beta=.201, $p<.05$) suggesting that those who have no experience of victimisation in the past five years are more likely to hold more punitive attitudes than those who have victimized, whilst the effect and significance of fear of crime diminish.

Table 7.2: Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models predicting punitiveness towards ‘Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped’ (n=3,637)³²

Socio-demographic factors 0 ^a = reference category	Model 1	95% CI	Model 2	95% CI	Model 3	95% CI	Model 4	95% CI
Gender male (=0)	-.240***	-.362, -.118	-.203***	-.327, -.079	-.497***	-.627, -.367	-.477***	-.608, -.347
Gender female (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Age Range 25-34	-.070	-.364, .225	-.058	-.352, .237	-.349*	-.655, -.044	-.373*	-.679, -.067
Age Range 35-44	-.036	-.343, .270	-.025	-.331, .282	-.323*	-.641, -.004	-.339*	-.658, -.020
Age Range 45-54	.034	-.263, .331	.039	-.259, .336	-.312*	-.624, .001	-.368*	-.681, -.055
Age Range 55-64	-.230	-.535, .075	-.232	-.538, .073	-.535***	-.856, -.214	-.578***	-.900, -.257
Age Range 65+	-.245	-.551, .062	-.244	-.551, .063	-.569***	-.892, -.247	-.643***	-.967, -.320
Age Range 16-24	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Income: £25,999 - £39,999	.330***	.175, .485	.330***	.175, .485	.339***	.171, .508	.303***	.143, .462
£40,000 - £59,999	.420***	.240, .600	.425***	.245, .604	.643***	.445, .841	.480***	.294, .666
£60,000 - £84,999	.282*	.031, .532	.292*	.041, .543	.730***	.450, 1.010	.335*	.076, .594
Over £85,000	.289	-.046, .623	.318	-.017, .653	.711***	.337, 1.085	.348*	3.511, .697
Income below £24,999	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Education – Degree	-.681***	-.890, -.471	-.656***	-.866, -.447	-.282*	-.499, -.064	-.270*	-.488, -.052
Education – below degree qualification	-.231*	-.426, -.035	-.218*	-.414, -.022	-.090	-.291, .111	-.091	-.293, .112
Education – no qualifications	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
No Religion (=0)	-.163*	-.291, -.036	-.166*	-.294, -.038	.113	-.021, .247	.145*	.011, .279
Religion (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Politics (0-10 scale; 10 = more conservative)	.214***	.187, .242	.217***	.189, .245	.020	-.014, .053	-.002	-.038, .034
Working class origin (=0)	.162*	.028, .295	.148*	.014, .282	.089	-.050, .228	.099	-.041, .239
Middle class origin (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Relationship single (=0)	-.089	-.250, .072	-.087	-.248, .074	.017	-.149, .183	-.001	-.168, .166
In relationship (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Universal Credit claimant (=0)	-.358***	-.548, -.168	-.363***	-.554, -.172	-.367***	-.562, -.171	-.360***	-.556, -.164
Non claimant (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
IMD 1st quartile	.124	-.062, .311	.159	-.030, .348	.260**	.066, .455	.242*	.046, .438
IMD 2 nd quartile	-.016	-.193, .160	.020	-.158, .198	.143	-.041, .326	.139	-.045, .324
IMD 3 rd quartile	-.074	-.243, .095	-.048	-.218, .123	.053	-.123, .228	.051	-.125, .227
IMD 4 th quartile	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Ethnicity: Other (n=11)	.738	-.638, 2.114	.703	-.675, 2.080	-.089	-1.503, 1.325	-.092	-1.502, 1.318
Black Caribbean/African (n=91)	-.807***	-1.300, -.313	-.794**	-1.287, -.300	-.960***	-1.464, -.456	-.881***	-1.386, -.376

³² See p217 for details about the n-size

Chinese (n=42)	.004	-.660, .669	-.037	-.703, .629	-.216	-.895, .463	-.252	-.933, .429
Asian/Sub-continent (n=136)	-.030	-.475, .416	-.070	-.516, .377	-.254	-.712, .204	-.208	-.667, .250
Multiple ethnic background (n=72)	.406	-.133, .944	.404	-.136, .944	.401	-.160, .963	.411	-.149, .972
White ethnicity (n=5,781)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Crime related factors								
No victimisation (=0)			.171	-.001, .342	.201*	.025, .378	.212*	.035, .389
Victimisation (=1)			0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Fear of crime (1=very safe...4=very unsafe)			.127**	.046, .209	.054	-.030, .138	.032	-.053, .118
Belief systems (high scores=increase in values)								
Neo-liberal values					.115***	.093, .138	.114***	.091, .137
Neo-conservative values					.265***	.241, .289	.238***	.212, .265
Nostalgia (high scores=increase in values)								
Social nostalgic values							.014	-.005, .033
Economic nostalgic values							.063***	.037, .089
Political nostalgic values							-.074***	-.099, -.049
Nagelkerke R-square	.117		.120		.304		.313	

0^a is the reference category and has a coefficient of 0.

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values have a notable effect on many of the socio-demographic factors in Model 3. Age becomes a relevant factor. All age ranges increase in effect size and significance with *age range 55 to 64* (beta=-.535, p=<.001) and *over 65 year olds* (beta=-.569, p=<.001) being the most relevant suggesting that higher age groups are more likely to hold less punitive attitudes towards the permanent cessation of payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants when compared to those aged under 25. There is a substantial increase in effect size of *incomes over £40,000* in Model 3, with those earning in excess of *£85,000* (beta=.711, p=<.001) becoming a significant factor once belief systems are introduced. This suggests that those earning higher incomes are more punitive than those in the lowest income bracket of below £25,000. Those in the *lowest IMD quartile* (beta=.260, p=<.01) appear to be more punitive when compared to those in the highest quartile in Model 3. The effect size of *gender* (beta=-.497, p=<.001) and *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity* (beta=.960, p=<.001) also increase with males being less punitive than females, and those from a Black Caribbean/African background being less punitive than those from a white

background. The effect of *education, religion, politics* and *class origin* all diminish once belief systems are introduced to the model suggesting that neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values inflated the effects of these factors in the previous model. The variance explained by Model 3 as a whole is 30.4%, an increase of 18.4% from Model 2.

Model 4: Nostalgia

When nostalgia items are introduced in Model 4 *economic nostalgic values* (beta=.063, $p<.001$) and *political nostalgic values*³³ (beta=-.074, $p<.001$) have a significant effect on punitive attitudes towards welfare claimants, whilst *social nostalgic values* has no effect. This suggests that as economic nostalgic values increase so do punitive attitudes, whilst punitive attitudes decrease as political nostalgia increases. The effect size of neo-conservative values reduces slightly but remains significant at the $p<.001$ level once the nostalgia items are entered in Model 4, whilst the effects of neo-liberal values remain stable. The introduction of nostalgic values in Model 4 has the most notable effect on *age, income, religion, IMD* and *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity*. The effect sizes of age ranges *above 45 to 54* increase notably, suggesting that these age groups are less punitive than those under 25 years old. The effect sizes of incomes in *excess of £40,000* decrease substantially. Those in the *lowest IMD quartile* also decreases in effect size and significance (beta=.242, $p<.05$) and *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity* also decreases in effect size. Finally, *no religion* (beta=.145, $p<.05$) becomes a relevant factor in the final model with those having no religion being more punitive than those with a religion. The increase in variance explained by Model 4 is 0.9% from Model 3. The full model containing all predictors was statistically significant, $\chi^2(32, N=3637) = 1263.23, p<.001$, indicating that the model is significantly better at predicting punitive attitudes towards permanent exclusion than not fitting a model³⁴. The Nagelkerke value suggests that the model as a whole accounts for 31.3% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants.

³³ Political nostalgic values: as agreement with the questions increases, punitiveness decreases.

³⁴ No concerns were noted with multicollinearity of independent variables as noted with the stiffer sentences for welfare claimants variable (see note 3-the same independent variables are used in the analysis). The largest correlation between the permanently stopping welfare payments and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r=.447, p<.001$).

Summary

Findings suggest that support for permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants is largely influenced by neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values shown by the increase in the Nagelkerke R-square value in Model 3. Other relevant factors also appear to be being female, those under 25 years old, incomes below £25,000, white ethnicity (in comparison to Black Caribbean/African ethnicity), not being in receipt of universal credit, having no religion, having no qualifications, belonging to the lowest IMD quartile, no experience of victimisation, economic nostalgic values and political nostalgic values.

7.5. 'A fair share of the money': Fairness and deservingness

A sense of fairness and deservingness expressed by some respondents in the cognitive interviews is a theme prominent in political discourse in recent years (Taylor-Gooby and Taylor, 2015). Contentious changes have been made to the welfare system with a view to ensure its fairness to society as a whole (Taylor-Gooby and Taylor, 2015). When asked to reflect on the permanency element of *welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped*, cognitive interview participants who had strongly agreed with the statement continued to assert that those who cheat the system should have their benefits permanently withdrawn,

'We go to work, you go to work...don't give them nowt, just stop it.' (R3)

'If nothing happens to them, they just carry on doing it. They should stop all their money and not give them anything.' (R4)

'If they are swinging the lead you can't have your benefits. They don't get no more' (R8).

In contrast, the majority of those who had agreed with the original statement when completing the survey tended to soften their response when asked to reflect on the permanency of the statement,

'Maybe that's a bit strict...I think that is a bit too harsh. I'm in two minds about that then really.' (R2)

'They should be stopped to some degree...but mostly people are trying to get benefits because they are really needy, so I don't think they should be permanently stopped.'(R5)

'...it shouldn't be stopped but they shouldn't get as much'. (R6)

'Deservingness' and 'fairness' were prominent themes expressed by participants who strongly agreed or agreed with permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants,

'Why should people get benefits if they don't really deserve them and the people that do, don't get them?' (R1)

'There are more people out there who need it, who are honest who need it, instead of like people who are lying and getting it through money like that, yeah they should just stop it. They don't deserve it.' (R2)

'They only get their hand slapped, so they keep on doing it, and keep dragging money out of the system, that they are not entitled to, and if nothing happens to them, they just carry on doing it' (R4)

'...they shouldn't get as much as they are because they should learn from their actions. Everybody else needs a fair share of the money.' (R6)

'A lot of people that go to work and work really hard get no support at all.' (R8)

These findings are consistent with previous research that has found that the general public tend to implicitly link welfare and 'deservingness' (Stanley and Hartman, 2016). Despite agreeing that rulebreaking welfare claimants should have their payments permanently stopped, some respondents made concessions to the circumstances of rulebreaking welfare claimants,

‘But mostly people are trying to get benefits because they are really needy and there are a lot of people like that.’ (R5)

‘They would still need some form of money to survive.’ (R6)

‘That would depend on what they had used the money for...there must be a reason why they have done it in the first place.’ (R11)

Whilst participants who had disagreed or strongly disagreed with the permanent cessation of welfare payments tended to be more compassionate,

‘Human beings have a right to live...you can’t leave people stranded.’ (R9)

‘It just sets them back even further, it’s not beneficial to the person... it doesn’t benefit anybody actually’ (R12).

‘People Like Me’

Some participants who expressed punitive attitudes towards welfare claimants were themselves in receipt of benefits. These findings echo a qualitative study involving unemployed people by Tinsley (2013), which found evidence of a divisive attitude amongst Jobseeker Allowance (JSA) claimants towards other JSA claimants. The majority of jobseekers were found to have a negative view of other jobseekers commenting that others could find work if they really wanted to or did not need the benefits they so claimed (Tinsley, 2013). Distinctions were also made between their own deservingness of the support they received and the undeservingness of others on benefits (Tinsley, 2013). These attitudes were also evident in the cognitive interviews.

However, the quantitative analyses undertaken in this chapter suggests that universal credit claimants are significantly less punitive towards rulebreaking welfare claimants than those who are not in receipt of universal credit. The introduction of universal credit has led to increased financial difficulties for many claimants (Schmuecker, 2016; Dwyer and Wright, 2014). Universal credit has also been the focus of numerous Work and Pension Committee

inquiries in recent years (see Work and Pensions Committee, 2020), which have found that universal credit claimants have experienced acute financial ongoing difficulties initiated by the initial six-week wait for their first payment (Work and Pensions Committee, 2017). A longitudinal survey of universal credit claimants commissioned by the Department for Work and Pensions (DWP) (2018b) sought to understand the experiences of claimants who used their online universal credit account to manage their claims. Over half of universal credit claimants in the survey were found to be experiencing ongoing difficulties meeting financial commitments. Four in ten universal credit participants continued to experience financial difficulties eight months into their universal credit claim. Two-thirds of those who had fallen into arrears with their bills and credit commitments reported that this had happened after their universal credit claim had commenced. Around half of the claimants reported having to find additional funds obtained from family, friends, payment advances from the Jobcentre Plus, bank overdrafts and high-risk sources such as payday loans (DWP, 2018b). Additionally, in 2017, 25% of all new claims for universal credit were paid late, this equates to around 113,000 new claims paid on average four weeks late (Comptroller and Auditor General, 2018). It is possible then, that those who have experience of the universal credit system sympathise with others receiving welfare who may be experiencing financial difficulties. On consideration of the use of the extreme sanction of permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants, there appeared to be some softening of attitudes in comparison to the general idea of support for stiffer penalties. Although this softening did not always result in participants disagreeing with permanently stopping payments, it did tend to result in some participants acknowledging the circumstances of those rulebreaking claimants.

7.6. A comparison of support for stiffer penalties and permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants

There are similarities in factors related to both support for stiffer penalties and support for permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants. Table 7.3 below shows the significant factors relating to each variable. The introduction of belief systems to the model has the largest effect on punitiveness towards both support for stiffer sentences and permanently stopping benefits for rulebreaking welfare claimants. This is consistent with previous welfare literature that has found values and beliefs to be relevant factors relating to

punitiveness towards welfare claimants (Deeming, 2015; Schofield and Butterworth, 2015; Baumberg et al., 2012; Baumberg Geiger, 2017). Being female, higher incomes, having no religion, not being in receipt of universal credit, white ethnicity, economic and political nostalgia also appear to be related to both statements. Consistent with previous research, higher income has been found to be related to lower support of welfare (Taylor-Gooby and Martin, 2008; Deeming, 2015), and those with religious beliefs have been found to believe that welfare conditionality is too harsh (Deeming, 2015).

The only factor relating exclusively to punitiveness towards support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants appears to be being from a working-class origin. Deeming (2015) found that class (measured by occupation) was a relevant factor in beliefs about the welfare system with unskilled workers being less likely to believe that welfare benefits are too generous than other occupational groups. Professionals were also more likely to believe that welfare benefits have weak conditionality than unskilled workers (Deeming, 2015).

Factors relating only to the more extreme sanction of permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants appear to be younger age, specifically those aged under 25, having no qualifications, those in the lowest IMD quartile and having no experience of victimisation. Deeming (2015) also found that young adults (aged 15-24 years old) were more likely than older people to believe that unemployment benefits are too high, and that welfare conditionality is weak in the British welfare system. Deeming (2015) also found that those with no qualifications were more likely to believe that benefits are too generous and that the welfare system disincentivizes the unemployed from working than those with a university degree. Additionally, not being in receipt of universal credit and neo-liberal values have a bigger effect on punitiveness towards permanently stopping welfare claimants than towards support for stiffer penalties.

Table 7.3 Summary: A comparison of significant factors relating to rulebreaking welfare claimants

Variables	Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties	Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped
Gender male (=0) (0 ^a – females=1)	*** (beta=-.393) (males less punitive than females)	*** (beta=-.477) (males less punitive than females)
Age Range 25-34 (0 ^a - 16-24 year olds)	X	*(beta=-.373) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Age Range 35-44	X	*(beta=-.339) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Age Range 45-54	X	*(beta=-.368) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Age Range 55-64	X	*** (beta=-.578) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Age Range 65+	X	*** (beta=-.643) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Income £25,999 - £39,999 (0 ^a - below £24,999)	*** (beta=.338) (more punitive than below £24,999)	*** (beta=.303) (more punitive than below £24,999)
£40,000 - £59,999	*** (beta=.644) (more punitive than below £24,999)	*** (beta=.480) (more punitive than below £24,999)
£60,000 - £84,999	*** (beta=.731) (more punitive than below £24,999)	*(beta=.335) (more punitive than below £24,999)
Over £85,000	*** (beta=.726) (more punitive than below £24,999)	*(beta=.348) (more punitive than below £24,999)
Degree Education (0 ^a - no qualifications)	X	*(beta=-.270) (less punitive than no qualifications)
Below degree education	X	X
No Religion (0 ^a – Religion=1)	*(beta=.164) (no religion more punitive)	*(beta=.145) (no religion more punitive)
Political conservatism	X	X
Working class origin (=0) (0 ^a - middle class=1)	** (beta=.194) (working class more punitive than middle class)	X
Relationship	X	X
Universal Credit claimant=0 (0 ^a – non claimant=1)	** (beta=-.312) (Claimant less punitive than non-claimant)	*** (beta=-.360) (Claimant less punitive than non-claimant)
IMD (0 ^a - 4 th quartile)	X	*(beta=.242) (first quartile more punitive than 4th)
Black Caribbean ethnicity (0 ^a – white ethnicity)	** (beta=-.779) (Black Caribbean/African less punitive than white)	*** (beta=-.881) (Black Caribbean/African less punitive)
Chinese ethnicity (0 ^a – white ethnicity)	** (beta=-1.023) (Chinese less punitive)	X
No Victimization (=0) (0 ^a – Victimization=1)	X	*(beta=.212) (no victimisation more punitive)
Fear of crime	X	X
Neo-liberal values	*(beta=.031)	*** (beta=.114)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.250)	*** (beta=.238)
Social nostalgic values	X	X

Economic nostalgic values	*** (beta=.070)	*** (beta=.063)
Political nostalgic values	*** (beta=-.107)	*** (beta=-.074)
Nagelkerke R-Square Value	29%	31.3%

0^a is the reference category and has a coefficient of 0.

* = p<.05, ** = p<.01, *** = p<.001

7.7. Welfare punitivity

The ‘welfare punitivity’ variable was constructed through factor analyzing ‘*Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties*’ and ‘*Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped*’ (the construction of this variable is discussed in more detail below). The variables for welfare punitivity correlated quite high with each other $r=.615$, had a one factor solution explaining 80.76% of the variance with a high reliability (Cronbach’s $\alpha=.750$). Results from factor analysis and Cronbach’s alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable (*Welfare Punitivity*) from the two items. The large sample size ($n=5,781$) is considered large enough to meet the sample size required to undertake regression analysis.³⁵

Model 1: Socio-demographic factors³⁶

When socio-demographic factors are considered in isolation in Model 1 (Table 7.4), *politics* (beta=.268, $p<.001$) has the strongest effect on welfare punitivity. As respondents self-identify as more politically conservative their punitive attitudes increase towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. *Lower educational attainment* (beta=.090, $p<.001$), *higher incomes* (beta=.073, $p<.001$), *females* (beta=.067, $p<.001$), *decreased religiosity* (beta=.066, $p<.001$), *working-class origin* (beta=-.066, $p<.001$) and *not being in receipt of*

³⁵ Green (1991, cited in Tabacknick and Fidell, 2014:159) suggest $N \geq 50 + 8m$ (where m is the number of independent variables), so for the regression conducted in this section, 18 independent variables are used: $50 + (8)(18) = 194$ cases. If the dependent variable is skewed a larger sample is required as a small effect size or substantial measurement error is expected from less reliable variables (Tabacknick and Fidell, 2014).

³⁶ These are coded as follows: Gender: 0=Male, 1=female; Age=1=16-24, 2=25-34, 3=35-44, 4=45-54, 5=55-64, 6=65-74, 7=75+; Income: 1=below £5,000, 2=£5,000-£9,999, 3=£10,000-£14,999, 4=£15,000-£19,999, 5=£20,000-£24,000, 6=£25,000-£29,999, 7=£30,000-£34,999, 8=£35,000-£39,999, 9=£40,000-£44,999, 10=£45,000-£49,999, 11=£50,000-£59,999, 12=£60,000-£69,999, 13=£70,000-£84,999, 14=£84,000-£99,999, 15=over £100,000; Education: 1=Degree level, 2=below degree level qualifications, 3=no qualifications; Religiosity scale: 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious; Politics scale: 0=left to 10=right; Class Origin: 0=working class, 1=middle class; Relationship status: 0=single, 1=in relationship; Universal Credit: 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant; IMD: 1=1st quartile, 2=2nd quartile, 3=3rd quartile, 4=4th quartile; Ethnicity: 0=Other, 1=White.

universal credit (beta=.059, $p < .01$) are also related to increased punitivity. Model 1 as a whole accounts for 12.7% of the variance in explaining punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants.

Model 2: Crime related factors

When crime-related factors are introduced in Model 2 *victimisation* has no effect, whereas *fear of crime* (beta=.062, $p < .01$) appears to be related to increased punitiveness, with punitive attitudes increasing as fear increases. The majority of all other factors in Model 2 remain stable, except for a decrease in effect size and significance for *gender* (beta=.054, $p < .01$) and an increase in effect size for *politics* (beta=.287, $p < .001$). This suggests that fear of crime slightly inflated the effects of gender in Model 1. The R-Square change in Model 2 is very small at .003, with Model 2 explaining 13.1% of the variance in welfare punitiveness, an increase of 0.3% from Model 1.

Model 3: Belief Systems

In Model 3, *neo-conservative values*³⁷ has the strongest effect on welfare punitivity (beta=.476, $p < .001$), with *neo-liberal values* also having a significant effect (beta=.080, $p < .001$). This suggests that as neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values increase, so do punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. The effects of *fear of crime* and *education* diminish once neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values are introduced to the model, whilst the effects of *class origin* (beta=-.034, $p < .05$) and *politics* (beta=.082, $p < .001$) reduce substantially and *religiosity* (beta=.050, $p < .01$) reduces slightly. This suggests that neo-conservative and neo-liberal values inflated the effects of these factors in the previous model. Whilst the effects of *being female* (beta=.089, $p < .001$) increase in Model 3. Finally, *IMD* (beta=-.046, $p < .01$) becomes a relevant factor in Model 3 with punitive attitudes increasing with lower quartiles, and *universal credit* becoming significant at the $p < .001$ level. The variance explained by Model 3 as a whole is 32.7%, an increase of 19.6% from Model 2.

³⁷ See Chapter 9.3 for an analysis of neo-conservative values

Table 7.4: Beta weights for multiple linear regression models predicting 'welfare punitivity' (n=2,090)³⁸

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio-demographic factors³⁶				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	.067***	.054**	.089***	.088***
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	.019	.021	-.033	-.043*
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.073***	.078***	.081***	.081***
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree, 3=no quals)	.090***	.086***	.018	.018
Religiosity (1=extremely...7 unextremely)	.066***	.065***	.050**	.047**
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.268***	.287***	.082***	.061**
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.066***	-.062***	-.034*	-.037*
Relationship Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.041	.040	.001	.003
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	.059**	.061**	.064***	.062***
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=highest quartile)	-.021	-.029	-.046**	-.041*
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.001	.002	.020	.019
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.014	-.018	-.018
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.062**	.019	.016
Belief systems (high scores=more neo-con/neo-lib)				
Neo-liberal values			.082***	.081***
Neo-conservative values			.476***	.453***
Nostalgia (high score=more nostalgic)				
Social nostalgic values				.008
Economic nostalgic values				.074***
Political nostalgic values				-.100***
R-square	.127***	.131**	.327***	.333**
Adjusted R-square	.124	.126	.323	.328
R-square change		.003	.196	.006

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Model 4: Nostalgia

When nostalgia items are introduced in Model 4, *economic nostalgic values* (beta=.074, p<.001) appears to be related to increased welfare punitiveness, whilst increased *political nostalgic values* (beta=-.100, p<.001) appears to be related to decreased punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. *Social nostalgic values* has no effect on welfare punitiveness. *Neo-conservative values* (beta=.453, p<.001) continues to have the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. There is very little effect on all other variables when nostalgic values are introduced to the model, with the exception of *age* (beta=-.043, p<.05), *politics* (beta=.061, p<.01), and *IMD* (beta=-.041, p<.05). *Age*

³⁸ See P230 for more detail regarding the n-size

becomes significant once the nostalgia items are entered into the model with punitiveness increasing with younger age, whilst the effect size of *politics* decreases once the nostalgia items are introduced, and *IMD* reduces to in significance ($p < .05$). The increase in variance explained by Model 4 is 0.6% from Model 3. The R-square indicates that the model as a whole explains 33.3% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants.

Summary

Findings suggest that punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants is strongly related to neo-conservative values, which has the largest effect size of all the tested variables and the biggest increase in R-Square change when neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values were entered in Model 3. Additionally, political nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, being female, neo-liberal values, higher income, non-universal credit claimants, those identifying as more politically conservative, decreased religiosity, younger age, working class origin and lower IMD quartile also appear to be related to increased punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. Table 7.5 below shows the statistically significant factors related to welfare punitivity.

Discussion

Findings here suggest that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. Again, as with the rulebreaking school pupils items, analysis shows that separating the two measures draws out some notable differences between support for stiffer penalties and support for the more punitive sanction of permanently stopping welfare benefits. Most notably, in relation to the values based variables, support for the general, non-specific sanction of 'stiffer penalties' is predominately related to neo-conservative values, with political nostalgic values with economic nostalgic values also having a smaller effect. Support for the more extreme sanction of permanently stopping welfare payments appears to be related to neo-conservative values, neo-liberal values and no experience of victimisation, with political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values having a smaller effect.

A very small amount of empirical research has sought to understand public attitudes towards welfare claimants through exploring socio-demographic factors. This available research also does not explore punitive attitudes as operationalized here but generally explores attitudes towards welfare and its claimants more broadly. However, despite this limitation, there are some similarities between the findings in this chapter and previous research towards welfare claimants. Younger age (aged between 18 and 34) has been found to be least supportive of welfare spending for the poor (Taylor-Gooby and Martin, 2008), and those aged between 15 and 24 were more likely to believe that unemployment benefits were too high, and that welfare conditionality is weak in the British welfare system (Deeming, 2015). Taylor-Gooby and Martin (2008) also found that those earning lower incomes were more supportive for increased welfare spending, whilst Deeming (2015) found that as household income increased so does the belief that welfare benefits are too generous. Those with religious beliefs have been found to believe that welfare conditionality is too harsh (Deeming, 2015). Those who self-identify as more politically conservative are less supportive of increased welfare spending (Taylor-Gooby and Martin, 2008), more likely to believe that welfare benefits disincentivize claimants and that the welfare system has weak conditionality (Deeming, 2015).

Welfare Punitivity: Evaluating the multiple regression model

The full multiple regression model for welfare punitivity containing all the predictors was significant ($p < .001$).³⁹ The model summary (Table 7.6) shows the multiple correlation coefficients between welfare punitivity and the predictors in column one (labelled R), showing that when all predictors are included in Model 4 the multiple correlation coefficient is .577. The R-Square value in the second column measures how much variability in the outcome variable is explained for by the predictors (Field, 2018). The adjusted R-square indicates how well the model generalises with the figure in the final model between the R-square (.333) and adjusted R-square (.328) equalling .005, or 0.5%, meaning that if the model were derived from the population as opposed to a sample the model would account for approximately 0.5% less variance in the outcome (Field, 2018). The F change statistic

³⁹ The ANOVA table shows the F-Test of whether the model is significantly better at predicting the outcome than using no predictors (Field, 2018). The p-values ($p < .001$) indicates that all models significantly improve the ability to predict punitive attitudes compared to not fitting the models (Field, 2018).

shows that the change in R-square is significant at the $p < .001$ level for model 1, 3 and 4, and significant at the $p < .01$ level for model 2. The combined explanatory power of all models is $R^2 = .333$ suggesting that the model overall explains 33.3% of the variance in welfare punitivity.

Table 7.5: Summary table for relevant statistically significant factors for punitivity towards rulebreaking welfare claimants in Model 4

Variables	Welfare Punitivity
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	*** (beta=.088, females)
Age Range 1=16-24 to 7=75+	* (beta=-.043, younger age)
Income 1=<£5000 to 15=>£100,000	*** (beta=.081, higher income)
Education 1=degree, 2 below degree level, 3=no qualifications	X
Religiosity 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious	** (beta=.047, decreased religiosity)
Political conservatism Scale: 1=left to 10=right	** (beta=.061)
Class Origin 0=working class, 1=middle class	* (beta=-.037, working class)
Relationship Status 0=single, 1=relationship	X
Universal Credit 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant	*** (beta=.062, non-claimant)
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	* (beta=-.041, lower quartiles)
Ethnicity 0=white, 1=other	X
Victimisation 0=no, 1=victimised	X
Fear of crime 1=very safe to 4= very unsafe	X
Neo-liberal values	*** (beta=.081)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.453)
Social nostalgic values	X
Economic nostalgic values	*** (beta=.074)
Political nostalgic values	*** (-.100)
R-Square Value	33.3%

*** $p < .001$, ** $p < .01$, * $p < .05$

Table 7.6: Model Summary for welfare punitivity

Model	R	R Square	Adjusted R Square	Std. Error of the Estimate	Change Statistics				
					R Square Change	F Change	df1	df2	Sig. F Change
1	.357	.127	.124	.81650784	.127	33.403	11	2518	.000
2	.362	.131	.126	.81524563	.003	4.902	2	2516	.008
3	.572	.327	.323	.71763056	.196	366.513	2	2514	.000
4	.577	.333	.328	.71485802	.006	7.513	3	2511	.000

Normality, linearity, homoscedasticity and outliers

The histogram (Figure 7.1) shows that the normally distributed errors assumption is met with the mean (-0.03) very close to zero. The Normal Probability Plot (Figure 7.2) shows the data lie in a reasonably straight line suggesting no major deviations from normality.

Figure 7.1: Histogram for welfare punitivity

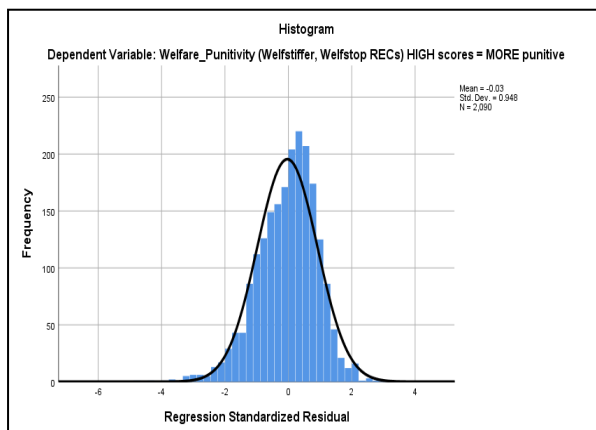
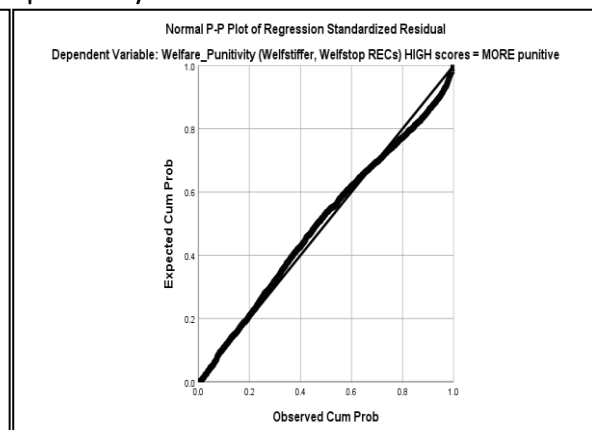


Figure 7.2: Normal P-P Plot for welfare punitivity



Casewise diagnostics

Casewise diagnostics shows that 15 cases (0.3% of the sample) have standardized residual values below -3 or above +3, which is below the 1% which would otherwise indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016; Field, 2018). Further investigation of these 15 cases suggests that no cases are have a Cook’s distance value⁴⁰ greater than 1 with the largest value of .01. Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances⁴¹ shows 30 cases have Mahalanobis distances greater than 42.312

⁴⁰ Cook’s distance indicates whether a case has an undue influence on the results with values above 1 suggesting a potential problem (Pallant, 2016).

⁴¹ Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances allow identification of outliers (Pallant, 2016). To identify which cases are outliers, the critical chi-square value was determined using 18 independent variables as the degrees of

(Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013). Further examination of the DFBeta and DfFit statistics for the independent variables, which indicate problematic cases having an undue influence on the model parameters, highlight no concerns with no cases close to 1 (Field, 2018).

Collinearity Diagnostics

No preliminary concerns were raised with multicollinearity by viewing the correlation matrix of all dependent and independent variables. This shows with no correlations between independent variables are greater than .9 with the largest between political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values ($r=.552$). The largest correlation between welfare punitivity and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r=.528$, $p<.001$). All variance inflation factors (VIFs) are well below 10 which would indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the highest 2.030 (Economic nostalgic values) in any of the equations. No Tolerance values were below .10 which would also indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the lowest value of .493 (Economic nostalgic values), and the standard errors are low (highest .070 for *ethnicity* in Model 2). The average VIF in model 4 is 1.35 is also not substantially more than 1 (Field, 2018), therefore suggesting no concerns with multicollinearity.

7.8. Summary

This chapter began by conducting ordinal logistic regression to examine the relationship between the two items designed to measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants and a range of factors, including socio-demographic factors, crime-related factors, political beliefs and nostalgia. The data showed that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants, which was the case with both support for stiffer penalties and support for permanently stopping welfare payments, with the model explaining a similar amount of variance in both measures of welfare punitiveness. Additional factors that appear to be related to punitive attitudes towards stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants appears to be political nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, white ethnicity, higher incomes, being female, working class origin, those not in receipt of universal credit and those with no religion. Additional factors that appear to be related to punitive attitudes towards permanently

freedom (Pallant, 2016) from the critical values chi-square table and an alpha level of .001 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013: 10).

stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants appears to be neo-liberal values, being female, those under 25 years old, incomes below £25,000, white ethnicity, not being in receipt of universal credit, having no religion, having no qualifications, belonging to the lowest IMD quartile, no experience of victimisation, economic nostalgic values and political nostalgic values.

The only factor relating exclusively to punitiveness towards support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants appears to be being from a working-class origin. Whereas, factors relating to the more extreme sanction of permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants appear to be younger age, specifically those aged under 25, having no qualifications, those in the lowest IMD quartile and having no experience of victimisation. Additionally, not being in receipt of universal credit and neo-liberal values have a bigger effect on punitiveness towards permanently stopping welfare claimants than towards support for stiffer penalties. This suggests that some socio-demographic factors are more relevant to support for the more extreme sanction of ceasing payments of rulebreaking welfare claimants than support for the more general idea of stiffer penalties.

A multiple regression model was then conducted to examine the factors related to 'Welfare punitivity' a variable consisting of the two items designed to measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants through both support for stiffer penalties and permanently stopping welfare payments. As found in the ordinal regression models, welfare punitivity is strongly related to neo-conservative values. Other relevant factors relating to increased punitiveness appear to be political nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, being female, neo-liberal values, higher income, non-universal credit claimants, those identifying as more politically conservative, decreased religiosity, younger age, working class origin and lower IMD quartiles.

This chapter also incorporated themes that emerged during the cognitive interviews. As with the quantitative data, qualitative responses to the two different statements appeared to elicit different themes. In relation to attitudes towards stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants, some respondents' discourse towards welfare claimants appeared to be dominated by connections made between welfare and migrants, 'scroungers'

and the belief that some claimants are reluctant to go to work. Deservingness and fairness were evident in the cognitive interviews in consideration of permanently ceasing welfare payments. Parallels were drawn between the discourse used by the cognitive interview respondents and political discourse. There was also some evidence of some softening of attitudes on reflection of the impacts of permanently stopping payments. Punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants were displayed by people who were themselves on benefits. However, the quantitative analyses undertaken in this chapter suggests that universal credit claimants are significantly less punitive towards rulebreaking welfare claimants than those who are not in receipt of universal credit.

Attention now turns to examining punitive attitudes towards the final group of rulebreakers, namely criminal rulebreakers, using the same structure developed throughout the previous two chapters.

Chapter 8 Quantitative Analysis of punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers

8.1. Introduction

Chapters 6 and 7 examined punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils and rulebreaking welfare claimants, respectively. Firstly, the independent variables designed to measure punitiveness towards school pupils and welfare claimants were examined through conducting ordinal logistic regression. Secondly, multiple linear regression analyses were undertaken to examine 'school punitivity' and 'welfare punitivity'; this analysis merged the two separate items for each rulebreaker into one single variable. Analyses shows that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards both rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants, but with a much larger effect on rulebreaking school pupils. The model also explained a larger amount of variance in punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils than rulebreaking welfare claimants. Additionally, the model explained less variance in support for the use of permanent exclusion than towards tougher punishments for school pupils but explained a similar amount of variance between the two rulebreaking welfare claimant measures. This suggests that the model is more predictive of support for broad, non-specific sanctions for rulebreaking school pupils than it is for support for specific, extreme sanctions for school pupils and for any sanctioning of welfare claimants.

There also appears to be some difference in drivers between support for broad, non-specific sanctions and specific, extreme sanctions for both rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants. Most notably, support for non-specific sanctions for rulebreaking school pupils is largely driven by neo-conservative values, whilst support for the specific, extreme sanction of permanent exclusion is related to a broader range of factors, namely, neo-conservative values, neo-liberal values, victimisation, and social nostalgic values. Support for general, non-specific sanctions for rulebreaking welfare claimants appears to be related to neo-conservative values, political nostalgic values, and to a lesser extent, economic nostalgic values. Support for the specific sanction of permanently stopping welfare payments appears to be related to neo-liberal values, having no experience of victimisation and to a lesser extent political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values. Differences in attitudes

between general, non-specific sanctions and specific, extreme sanctions were also evident throughout the cognitive interviews.

This chapter repeats the analyses conducted in the previous two chapters (see the introduction to Chapter 6 for more detail), analysing public attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers in the same way as for rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants enabling comparisons to be made. Following the same format as Chapters 6 and 7, the steps taken to examine the data are as follows:

1. Ordinal Logistic Regression was used to analyse the two separate items with ordinal outcomes designed to measure punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers, namely, *People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences*, and *For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence*.⁴²
2. Hierarchical multiple linear regression was then used to analyse *Law Punitivity*, a continuous variable, which was factor analysed, consisting of *People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences*, and *For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence*.
3. Previous literature is considered in light of the findings in this chapter, which is included in the analysis of *Law Punitivity*. Previous research has generally combined both separate items in this chapter into a single variable (often with other variables as well) to explore punitive attitude towards offenders. Therefore, previous research is more relevant to the *Law Punitivity* analysis. Of note, there is no qualitative data from the cognitive interviews included in this chapter as with the school pupils and welfare claimants chapters. The questions used to analyse attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers have been used by the British Social Attitudes Survey since 1983 and are well tested and fielded questions; as such, they were not tested in the cognitive interviews.

⁴² Response codes were: 1=Strongly disagree, 2=disagree, 3=neither agree nor disagree, 4=agree, 5=strongly agree.

8.2. Exploring support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers

*Model 1: Socio-demographic factors*⁴³

As shown in Table 8.1, *education* (beta= -.686, $p < .001$) and *age range*, particularly *45 to 54 year olds* (beta= .607, $p < .001$) and *over 65 year olds* (beta=.513, $p < .001$) have the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers. This suggests that those with a degree level education are more likely to hold less punitive views than those with no qualifications, and older people are more likely to be more punitive than those under 25 years old. Additionally, *class origin* (beta=.321), *no religion* (beta= -.283) and *politics* (beta=.227) also appear to be relevant factors at the $p < .001$ level suggesting those from a working class origin are more likely to hold punitive views compared to those from a middle class origin, those with no religion are less likely to hold punitive attitudes than those with a religion, and self-identified political conservatism increases punitive attitudes. Additionally, those from a Black Caribbean/African background (beta=-.673, $p < .01$) appear to be less punitive than those from a white background and those from the middle IMD quartiles appear to be less punitive than those from the highest quartile. All other factors in Model 1 were not significant. The Nagelkerke R-Square value suggests that socio-demographic factors as a whole account for 13.8% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers.

Model 2: Crime related factors

The next model introduced crime related factors. *Victimisation*, those who had experienced any victimisation in the last 5 years, has no effect in Model 2, whilst *fear of crime* (*How safe do you feel walking around in the area you live in after dark?*) has a strong effect (beta=.299, $p < .001$) with punitive attitudes increasing as fear increases. *Fear of crime* has very little impact on the socio-demographic variables in Model 2, with the exception of a decrease in effect size and significance level for *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity*, and the middle *IMD*

⁴³ These are coded as follows: Gender: 0=Male, 1=female; Age=1=65+, 2=55-64, 3=45-54, 4=35-44, 5=25-34, 6=16-24; Income: 1=£85,000+, 2=£60,000-£84,999, 3=£40,000-£59,999, 4=£25,000-£39,999, 5=below £24,999; Education: 1=Degree level, 2=below degree level qualifications, 3=no qualifications; Religion: 0=No, 1=Yes; Politics scale is continuous from 0=left to 10=right; Class Origin: 0=working class, 1=middle class; Relationship status: 0=single, 1=in relationship; Universal Credit: 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant; IMD: 1=1st quartile, 2=2nd quartile, 3=3rd quartile, 4=4th quartile; Ethnicity: 1=Other, 2=Black Caribbean/African, 3=Chinese, 4=Asian/Sub-continent, 5=Multiple ethnic background, 6=White.

quartiles become non-significant. This suggests that *fear of crime* inflated the effects of these factors in Model 1. The Nagelkerke value of 15.1% suggests a 1.3% increase in explaining the variance in punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers from Model 1.

Table 8.1: Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models towards ‘People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences’ (n=3,637)⁴⁴

Socio-demographic factors ⁴³ 0 ^a = reference category	Model 1	95% CI	Model 2	95% CI	Model 3	95% CI	Model 4	95% CI
Gender male (=0)	-.047	-.169, .076	.043	-.081, .168	-.349***	-.482, -.215	-.319***	-.453, -.185
Gender female (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Age Range 25-34	.432**	.136, .727	.455**	.159, .751	.130	-.179, .439	.101	-.210, .412
Age Range 35-44	.423**	.116, .730	.449**	.142, .757	.064	-.259, .387	.039	-.285, .364
Age Range 45-54	.607***	.309, .906	.634***	.335, .934	.177	-.140, .493	.118	-.200, .437
Age Range 55-64	.379*	.072, .685	.399*	.092, .706	.035	-.292, .361	.001	-.327, .329
Age Range 65+	.513***	.205, .822	.542***	.233, .851	.149	-.179, .476	.087	-.243, .418
Age Range 16-24	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Income: £25,999 - £39,999	.116	-.040, .271	.124	-.032, .280	.035	-.128, .199	.048	-.117, .212
£40,000 - £59,999	.166	-.014, .346	.180	-.001, .360	.224*	.035, .414	.242*	.051, .433
£60,000 - £84,999	.220	-.032, .472	.250	-.003, .502	.296*	.030, .561	.322*	.056, .589
Over £85,000	-.097	-.430, .235	-.030	-.363, .303	-.063	-.413, .287	-.016	-.368, .336
Income: below £24,999	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Education – Degree	-.686***	-.896, -.476	-.659***	-.869, -.448	-.141	-.364, .081	-.109	-.333, .116
Education – below degree qualification	-.093	-.289, .103	-.076	-.273, .120	.106	-.101, .313	.115	-.094, .323
Education – no qualifications	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
No Religion (=0)	-.283***	-.411, -.155	-.270***	-.399, -.141	.093	-.044, .231	.144*	.005, .282
Religion (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Politics (0-10 scale; 10 = more conservative)	.227***	.198, .255	.233***	.205, .261	.012	-.022, .047	.002	-.035, .039
Working class origin	.321***	.187, .455	.285***	.150, .419	.194**	.052, .336	.174*	.031, .318
Middle class origin (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Relationship single (=0)	-.117	-.279, .046	-.117	-.280, .046	.003	-.168, .174	-.010	-.182, .163
In relationship (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Universal Credit claimant (=0)	-.001	-.194, .193	.028	-.222, .167	-.018	-.222, .185	-.026	-.231, .179
(Non-claimant (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
IMD 1st quartile	-.179	-.367, .008	-.086	-.276, .104	.010	-.190, .210	.028	-.174, .230
IMD 2nd quartile	-.181*	-.359, -.002	-.095	-.276, .085	.022	-.168, .211	.044	-.147, .236
IMD 3rd quartile	-.195*	-.366, -.024	-.131	-.303, .041	-.071	-.253, .110	-.077	-.260, .106

⁴⁴ See p217 for details about the n-size

IMD 4 th quartile	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Ethnicity: Other (n=11)	.950	-.429, 2.330	.843	-.535, 2.221	-.234	-1.704, 1.236	-.181	-1.643, 1.282
Black Caribbean/African (n=91)	-.673**	-1.173, -.174	-.630*	-1.130, -.130	-.774**	-1.292, -.256	-.639*	-1.161, -.118
Chinese (n=42)	.028	-.636, .693	-.041	-.707, .625	-.205	-.897, .486	-.261	-.956, .434
Asian/Sub-continent (n=136)	.208	-.242, .658	.139	-.312, .590	.044	-.429, .516	.029	-.444, .503
Multiple ethnic background (n=72)	.343	-.191, .876	.321	-.215, .857	.268	-.294, .831	.309	-.254, .873
White ethnicity (n=5,154)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Crime related factors								
No victimisation (=0)			.140	-.033, .313	.214*	.033, .396	.240**	.058, .423
Victimisation (=1)			0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Fear of crime (scale: 1=very safe ...4=very unsafe)			.299***	.217, .382	.207***	.119, .294	.147***	.057, .236
Belief systems (high scores=increase in values)								
Neo-liberal values					.080***	.058, .103	.084***	.060, .108
Neo-conservative values					.408***	.381, .434	.352***	.324, .381
Nostalgia (high scores=increase in values)								
Social nostalgic values							.056***	.036, .075
Economic nostalgic values							.078***	.051, .105
Political nostalgic values							-.065***	-.091, -.039
Nagelkerke R-square	.138		.151		.429		.446	

0^a is the reference category and has a coefficient of 0.

*** p < .001, ** p < .01, * p < .05

Model 3: Belief Systems

When belief systems were introduced in Model 3, *neo-conservative values* (beta=.408, p<.001) has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers.

Neo-liberal values also has a significant effect at the p<.001 level, but with a much smaller effect size (beta=.080). This suggests that as neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values increase, so does support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers. Once belief systems are introduced, the effect size of *fear of crime* reduces (beta=.207) but remains significant at the p<.001 level. Whereas *victimisation* becomes a relevant factor (beta=.214, p<.05) in Model 3 suggesting that those who have no experience of victimisation in the last five years are more punitive than those who have experienced victimisation within this timeframe. The introduction of belief systems also has a notable effect on some socio-demographic factors.

Firstly, the effects of *age*, *education*, *religion* and *politics* diminish, suggesting that the effects of neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values inflated the effects of these factors in the previous models. Additionally, the effect size and significance of *class origin* also reduce (beta=.194, p<.01). Secondly, *gender* (beta=-.349, p<.001) and *income category £40,000 to £59,999* (beta=.224, p<.05) and *income category £60,000 to £84,999* (beta=.296, p<.05) become relevant factors in Model 3. This suggests that males are more likely to be less punitive than females and those earning between £40,000 and £84,999 are more punitive than those earning below £24,999 when considering support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers. Finally, the effect of those from a *Black Caribbean/African background* (beta=-.774, p<.01) increases once belief systems are introduced to the model. The variance explained by Model 3 as a whole is 42.9%, an increase of 27.8% from Model 2.

Model 4: Nostalgia

When nostalgic values were introduced in Model 4, economic nostalgic values (beta=.078), political nostalgic values⁴⁵ (beta= -.065) and social nostalgic values (beta=.056) were all significant at the p<.001 level. This suggests that as economic and social nostalgia increases, so does support for stiffer sentences, whilst punitive attitudes decrease as political nostalgia increases. The effect size of *neo-conservative values* reduces (beta=.352) but remains significant at the p<.001 level, whilst the effect of *neo-liberal values* remains stable. The effect of *victimisation* increases (beta=.240, p<.01), whilst the effect size of fear of crime reduces (beta=.147, p<.001). There is little effect on the socio-demographic factors, with the exception of *religion* (beta=.144) which becomes significant at the p<.05 level suggesting that those with no religion are more punitive than those with a religion. Additionally, *working class origin* (beta=.174, p<.05) and *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity* (beta=-.639, p<.05) reduce in effect size and significance. The increase in variance explained by Model 4 is 1.7% from Model 3. The Nagelkerke R-Square value⁴⁶ suggests that the Model as a whole explains 44.6% in the variance in punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers when considering support for stiffer sentences. The full model containing all predictors was statistically significant, $\chi^2(32, N=3637) = 1940.13, p<.001$, indicating that the model is

⁴⁵ Political nostalgic values: as agreement with the questions increases, punitiveness decreases.

⁴⁶ The Nagelkerke value provides an indication of the amount of variance in the dependent variable explained by the model, from a minimum value of 0 to a maximum of approximately 1 (Pallant, 2016).

significantly better at predicting punitive attitudes supportive of stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers than not fitting the model.⁴⁷

Summary

Neo-conservative values has by far the strongest effect on punitive attitudes in this analysis measured through support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers. Findings suggest that being female, fear of crime, neo-liberal values, economic, political and social nostalgic values, no experience of victimisation, working class origin, having no religion, middle incomes (between £40,000 and £85,000) and white ethnicity (compared to Black Caribbean/African ethnicity) also appear to be relevant factors in punitiveness when measured through support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers.

8.3. Exploring support for the death penalty

Model 1: Socio-demographic factors⁴⁸

A range of socio-demographic factors appear to be related to punitiveness towards the use of the death penalty, when considered in isolation in Model 1 (Table 8.2.). *Education* (beta=-.921, p<.001) has by far the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards the death penalty, with those with degree level education being significantly less punitive than those with no qualifications. *No Religion* (beta= -.430, p<.001), *working class origin* (beta=.417, p<.001), *IMD* (particularly, *first quartile*, beta= -.398, p<.001), *relationship* (beta= -.379, p<.001), *politics* (beta=.279, p<.001), and *male gender* (beta=.223, p<.001) also appear to be relevant factors towards support for the death penalty. This suggests that those with no religion are less punitive than those with a religion, working class origin increases punitiveness, belonging to lower IMD quartiles decreases punitiveness when compared to the highest IMD quartile, those who are single are less punitive than those in a marriage-type relationship, political conservatism increases punitive attitudes, and males are more likely to hold punitive attitudes than females. *Age range 55 to 64* (beta=-.428, p<.01), *those aged*

⁴⁷ No concerns were raised with multicollinearity by viewing the correlation matrix of all variables included in the models. There are no correlations between independent variables greater than .9 which would indicate concerns with multicollinearity (Field, 2018) with the largest ($r=-.530$, $p<.001$) between political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values. The largest correlation between the dependent variable and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r=.591$, $p<.001$).

⁴⁸ See coding on page 259.

over 65 (beta=-.417, $p<.01$), *Black Caribbean/African ethnicity* (beta=-.713, $p>.01$), and *universal credit claimant* (beta=.289, $p<.01$) also appear to be relevant factors, with punitiveness decreasing with those aged over 55 when compared to those under 25 years old, with Black Caribbean/African ethnicity when compared to those from a white background, and those in receipt of universal credit are more likely to be punitive than non-claimants, The Nagelkerke value suggests that Model 1 explains 19.7% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards the use of the death penalty.

Model 2: Crime related factors

When crime related factors are introduced in Model 2, *victimization*, those who have experienced victimization in the last five years, has no effect on punitive attitudes towards the death penalty. In contrast, *fear of crime* (beta=.226) is significant at the $p<.001$ level, suggesting that punitive attitudes increase as fear increases. This suggests that perceptions about crime are more relevant than actual experiences of victimisation. *Fear of crime* has very little impact on the socio-demographic factors in the model with small changes in effect sizes for some factors. Most notably, the effect of higher age groups decreases once fear of crime is introduced to the model. The Nagelkerke value of 20.3% suggests an increase of 0.6% from Model 1 in explaining the variance in support for the death penalty for criminal rulebreakers.

Model 3: Belief Systems

When belief systems are introduced in Model 3, *neo-conservative values* (beta=.357, $p<.001$) has the strongest effect on support for the death penalty. *Neo-liberal values* (beta=.066, $p<.001$) is also a significant factor but with a much smaller effect size. The effect size of *fear of crime* reduces but remains significant at the $p<.001$ level once belief systems are introduced to the model, suggesting that neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values inflated the effect of fear of crime a little in the previous model. The introduction of belief systems has a notable effect on some socio-demographic factors. The effect size and significance of all *age groups* increases to the $p<.001$ level suggesting that those aged over 25 are significantly less punitive than those aged under 25 when considering support for the death penalty, with those aged over 65 being the least punitive (beta=-.988).

Table 8.2: Beta coefficients for ordinal regression models towards ‘For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence’ (n=3,637)⁴⁹

Socio-demographic factors ⁵⁰ 0 ^a = reference category	Model 1	95% CI	Model 2	95% CI	Model 3	95% CI	Model 4	95% CI
Gender male (=0)	.223***	.102, .344	.284***	.160, .407	-.008	-.138, .122	.027	-.103, .158
Gender female (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Age Range 25-34	-.177	-.472, .118	-.149	-.444, .147	-.609***	-.920, -.297	-.643***	-.955, -.330
Age Range 35-44	-.281	-.587, .026	-.253	-.560, .053	-.798***	-.1.122, -.474	-.840***	-.1.165, -.515
Age Range 45-54	-.220	-.518, .077	-.183	-.481, .115	-.843***	-.1.162, -.525	-.884***	-.1.203, -.565
Age Range 55-64	-.428**	-.734, -.122	-.390*	-.696, -.083	-.941***	-.1.268, -.613	-.988***	-.1.318, -.659
Age Range 65+	-.417**	-.724, -.110	-.379*	-.686, -.071	-.988***	-.1.317, -.659	-.1.031***	-.1.362, -.700
Age Range 16-24	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Income: £25,999 - £39,999	.068	-.085, .222	.068	-.086, .222	.007	-.153, .166	.023	-.138, .183
£40,000 - £59,999	.090	-.087, .267	.091	-.086, .269	.119	-.067, .304	.150	-.036, .337
£60,000 - £84,999	.137	-.111, .385	.157	-.092, .406	.155	-.104, .414	.198	-.062, .458
Over £85,000	-.167	-.496, .162	-.122	-.451, .208	-.156	-.505, .192	-.112	-.461, .237
Income: below £24,999	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Education – Degree	-.921***	-.1.129, -.714	-.898***	-.1.106, -.690	-.501***	-.718, -.284	-.453***	-.672, -.235
Education – below degree qualification	-.187	-.380, .006	-.168	-.361, .025	-.032	-.232, .169	-.030	-.232, .172
Education – no qualifications	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
No Religion (=0)	-.430***	-.557, -.303	-.419***	-.399, -.141	-.119	-.253, .015	-.075	-.210, .060
Religion (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Politics (0-10 scale; 10 = more conservative)	.279***	.251, .308	.282***	.254, .311	.107***	.073, .140	.093***	.057, .129
Working class origin (=0)	.417***	.284, .549	.390***	.257, .523	.328***	.188, .468	.328***	.186, .469
Middle class origin (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Relationship single (=0)	-.379***	-.540, -.218	-.385***	-.546, -.223	-.377***	-.546, -.208	-.406***	-.577, .236
In relationship (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
Universal Credit claimant (=0)	.289**	.097, .481	.258**	.065, .451	.317**	.115, .519	.312**	.109, .515
Non claimant (=1)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a	
IMD 1st quartile	-.398***	-.583, -.212	-.317***	-.505, -.130	-.249*	-.444, -.053	-.236*	-.433, -.038
IMD 2 nd quartile	-.246**	-.422, -.070	-.181*	-.359, -.003	-.096	-.282, .090	-.073	-.261, .114
IMD 3 rd quartile	-.218*	-.387, -.029	-.172*	-.342, -.002	-.095	-.273, .083	-.112	-.291, .062

⁴⁹ See p217 for details about the n-size

⁵⁰ These are coded as follows: Gender: 0=Male, 1=female; Age=1=65+, 2=55-64, 3=45-54, 4=35-44, 5=25-34, 6=16-24; Income: 1=£85,000+, 2=£60,000-£84,999, 3=£40,000-£59,999, 4=£25,000-£39,999, 5=below £24,999; Education: 1=Degree level, 2=below degree level qualifications, 3=no qualifications; Religion: 0=No, 1=Yes; Politics scale is continuous from 0=left to 10=right; Class Origin: 0=working class, 1=middle class; Relationship status: 0=single, 1=in relationship; Universal Credit: 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant; IMD: 1=1st quartile, 4=last quartile; Ethnicity: 1=Other, 2=Black Caribbean/African, 3=Chinese, 4=Asian/Sub-continent, 5=Multiple ethnic background, 6=White.

IMD 4 th quartile	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		
Ethnicity: Other (n=11)	.986	-.354, 2.327	.894	-.444, 2.233	-.129	-1.494, 1.236	-.015	-1.375, 1.346	
Black Caribbean/African (n=91)	-.713**	-1.208, -.218	-.686**	-1.181, -.191	-.942***	-1.458, -.426	-.797**	-1.313, -.281	
Chinese (n=42)	.502	-.158, 1.163	.455	-.205, 1.115	.382	-.286, 1.051	.344	-.322, 1.010	
Asian/Sub-continent (n=136)	-.010	-.450, .430	-.052	-.493, .389	-.161	-.525, .582	-.170	-.622, .282	
Multiple ethnic background (n=72)	.032	-.493, .557	.010	-.517, .537	.029	-.525, .582	.154	-.395, .702	
White ethnicity (n=5,174)	0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		0 ^a		
Crime related factors									
No victimisation (=0)				-.030	-.201, .142	-.008	-.188, .171	.019	-.161, .200
Victimisation (=1)			0 ^a			0 ^a		0 ^a	
Fear of crime (scale: 1=very safe...4=very unsafe)				.226***	.145, .307	.164***	.079, .249	.097*	.010, .183
Belief systems (high scores=increase in values)									
Neo-liberal values						.066***	.043, .088	.058***	.035, .081
Neo-conservative values						.357***	.331, .382	.303***	.276, .331
Nostalgia (high scores=increase in values)									
Social nostalgic values								.084***	.065, .103
Economic nostalgic values								.019	-.007, .046
Political nostalgic values								-.040**	-.065, -.015
Nagelkerke R-square	.197		.203		.415		.431		

0^a is the reference category and has a coefficient of 0.

*** p < .001, ** p < .01, * p < .05

The effect size of *gender* and *religion* diminish in Model 3, suggesting that neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values inflated the effects of gender and religion in Model 2. Additionally, the effect sizes of *degree education* (beta=-.501, p<.001) and *politics* (beta=.107, p<.001) reduce somewhat in Model 3. The effects of *IMD* also reduce substantially and only *IMD 1st quartile* (beta=-.249, p<.05) remains significant. Whilst the effect size of *universal credit* (beta=.317, p<.01) and *Black Caribbean/African* (beta=-.942, p<.001) increase. The variance explained by Model 3 as a whole is 41.5%, an increase of 21.2 from Model 2.

Model 4: Nostalgia

When nostalgic values are introduced in Model 4, *social nostalgic values* (beta=.084, $p<.001$) has the strongest effect on support for the death penalty, with *political nostalgic values* (beta=-.040, $p<.01$) also being a significant factor. This suggests that as social nostalgia increases so does punitiveness towards the death penalty, whilst increased political nostalgia decreases punitive attitudes. The effect size of *neo-conservative values* reduces slightly but remains significant at the $p<.001$ level once the nostalgia items are entered in Model 4, whilst the effects of *neo-liberal values* remain relatively stable. The effect size and significance level of *fear of crime* reduces somewhat in Model 4 (beta=.097, $p<.05$). This suggests that the nostalgic values inflated the effects of fear of crime in the previous models. The introduction of nostalgic values has very little impact on the socio-demographic factors, with the exception of increases in effect size for all age groups. The increase in variance explained by Model 4 is 1.6% from Model 3. The Nagelkerke value suggests that the model as a whole explains 43.1% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards support for the death penalty. The full model containing all predictors was statistically significant, $\chi^2(32, N=3637) = 1930.46, p<.001$, indicating that the model is significantly better at predicting punitive attitudes towards the use of the death penalty than not fitting a model.⁵¹

Summary

Support for the use of the death penalty appears to be largely driven by neo-conservative values, as shown by its effect size and the large increase in variance explained by Model 3. Being aged under 25 and having no qualifications also appears to increase death penalty support. Additionally, being in a relationship, working class origin, being a universal credit claimant, white ethnicity (compared to Black Caribbean/African ethnicity), self-identifying as politically more conservative, social nostalgic values, neo-liberal values, fear of crime, political nostalgic values and belonging to the highest IMD quartile also appear to be relevant factors in attitudes supportive of the death penalty.

⁵¹ No concerns were noted with multicollinearity of independent variables as noted with the stiffer sentences for law breakers variable (the same independent variables are used in the analysis). The largest correlation between support for the death penalty and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r=.549, p<.001$).

8.4. A comparison of support for stiffer sentences and the death penalty

There are similarities in factors related to both measures of punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers, with the overall model explaining a similar amount of variance in punitive attitudes for both measures. Table 8.3 below shows the significant factors relating to each variable. The introduction of belief systems to the model has the largest effect on punitiveness in both models, with a stronger effect on support for stiffer sentences shown by the larger increase in variance explained by Model 3. Previous research has found that factors unrelated to crime are more relevant in explaining punitiveness towards offenders (King and Maruna, 2009; Gerber and Jackson, 2016; Unnever and Cullen, 2010). Neo-conservative values is strongly related to both measures of punitiveness. Neo-liberal values also appears to be related to both measures of punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers, although to a lesser extent than neo-conservative values. Additionally, social nostalgic values and political nostalgic values also appear to be relevant factors to both forms of punitiveness. Working class origin and white ethnicity (compared to Black Caribbean/African ethnicity) appear to be relevant socio-demographic factors to both measures of punitiveness. Working class origin has consistently been found to be a significant factor related to punitiveness (King and Maruna, 2009; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007), whilst Black Caribbean/African ethnicity (when compared to white ethnicity) has been found to decrease punitiveness towards offenders (Unnever and Cullen, 2010; Useem et al., 2003; Costelloe et al., 2009). In terms of crime related factors, fear of crime appears to have a small, but significant, effect when considering both support for stiffer sentences and the death penalty, with the largest effect in relation to support for stiffer sentences. This is consistent with previous research that has generally found fear of crime to have a small effect on increased punitiveness towards offenders (Hogan et al., 2005; Sprott and Doob, 1997; Spironovic et al., 2012).

When considering punitive attitudes through support for the non-specific term 'stiffer sentences', relevant factors appear to be being female, having no experience of criminal victimisation, higher incomes (between £40,000 and £59,999) and economic nostalgic values. A considerable amount of research has failed to find victimisation a significant predictor of punitive attitudes towards offenders (King and Maruna, 2009, Unnever et al., 2007; Costelloe et al., 2009). Findings in this chapter suggest that when considering any victimisation in the last five years, victimisation is relevant in relation to support for stiffer sentences once belief

systems and nostalgic values are introduced to the model. Punitiveness measured through support for the extreme sanction of the death penalty appears to be related to those aged below 25 years old, those with no qualifications, self-identified political conservatism, being in a relationship, being in receipt of universal credit and belonging to the fourth IMD quartile (compare to the first IMD quartile). Additionally, crime-related factors appear to be more relevant to support for stiffer sentences than for the death penalty, whilst socio-demographic factors appear to be more relevant to support for the death penalty.

Previous research has generally combined two measures of support for stiffer sentences and support for the death penalty into one variable (and often in addition to other variables) to measure punitive attitudes towards offenders (King and Maruna, 2009; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Spironovic et al., 2012; Costelloe et al., 2009; Useem et al., 2003; Gerber and Jackson, 2016). This analysis suggests that there are some factors that are only relevant to each individual measure; either support for a non-specific sanction, or support for a specific extreme sanction. Previous research has generally found punitiveness towards offenders to increase with age (Hough et al., 1988; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Spiranovic et al., 2012). However, when support for a specific punitive sanction was measured in America, Tyler and Boeckmann (1997) found the young to be more punitive in relation to support for the 'three strikes' initiatives ($\beta = .22, p < .01$). In this study, age is not found to be a relevant factor when punitiveness is measured alone through support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers. However, when punitiveness is measured through support for the death penalty, age is found to have a strong effect on punitiveness with those aged between 16 and 24 years old being significantly more punitive when compared to all other age groups. Gender has consistently been found to be a relevant factor with males being more punitive than females (Hough et al., 1988; Cullen et al., 1985; Robert and Indermauer, 2007). Findings here suggest that gender is not a relevant factor when considering support for the death penalty alone, but when considering support for stiffer sentences females are found to be significantly more punitive than males. There is some inconsistency with regards to the effect of income on punitiveness. Those earning higher incomes have been found to be more punitive (King and Maruna, 2009), less punitive (Spironovic et al., 2012), or alternatively, no relationship has been found between income and punitive attitudes (Cullen et al., 1985; Costelloe et al., 2009). Findings here suggest that

income is a relevant factor when considering support for stiffer sentences in isolation but is not a relevant factor when considering support for the death penalty. Higher educational attainment has consistently been found to decrease punitiveness towards offenders (Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Spiranovic et al, 2012; Costelloe et al., 2009); this is the case here when considering punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers in relation to support for the death penalty, but education is not found to be a relevant factor when considering support for stiffer sentences. Religion or religiosity has been found to be relevant in decreased punitiveness towards offenders (King and Maruna, 2009; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Unnever and Cullen, 2010). Those with no religion were found to be more punitive than those with a religion when considering support for stiffer sentences, whilst religion did not appear to be a significant factor in relation to support for the death penalty. Several previous studies have found that self-identified political conservatism endorses tougher sentences (King and Maruna, 2009; Costelloe et al., 2009; Unnever and Cullen, 2010). This study is consistent with these previous findings when considering support for the death penalty, but not for support for stiffer sentences in the final model. Finally, Costelloe et al. (2009) found that married people are more punitive than those who are single; findings here suggest that those in a marriage-type relationship are more punitive than those who are single when considering support for the death penalty, but not when considering support for stiffer sentences.

Table 8.3. Summary: A comparison of significant factors relating to criminal rulebreakers

Variables	People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences	For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence
Gender male (=0), (0 ^a – females=1)	*** (beta=-.319) (males less punitive than females)	X
Age Range: 25-34 (0 ^a – 16-24)	X	***(beta=-.643) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Age Range: 35-44	X	***(beta=-.840) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Age Range: 45-54	X	***(beta=-.884) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Age Range: 55-64	X	***(beta=-.988) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Age Range: over 65	X	***(beta=-1.031) (less punitive than 16-24 year olds)
Income £25,999 - £39,999 (0 ^a below £24,999)	X	X
£40,000 - £59,999	*(beta=.242) (more punitive than below £24,999)	X
£60,000 - £84,999	*(beta=.322) (more punitive than below £24,999)	X
Over £85,000	X	X
Degree Education (0 ^a - no qualifications)	X	***(beta=-.453) (less punitive than no qualifications)
Below degree education	X	X
No Religion (=0) (0 ^a – Religion)	*(beta=.144) (no religion more punitive than religion)	X
Political conservatism	X	***(beta=.093)
Working Class Origin (=0) (0 ^a – middle class origin)	*(beta=.174) (working class more punitive)	***(beta=.328) (working class more punitive)
Relationship single (=0) (0 ^a - In relationship=1)	X	***(beta=-.406) (single less punitive)
Universal Credit claimant (=0) (0 ^a – non-claimant=1)	X	** (beta=.312) (claimant more punitive)
IMD (0 ^a - 4 th quartile)	X	*(beta=-.236) (1 st quartile less punitive than 4 th quartile)
Ethnicity (0 ^a – white ethnicity)	*(beta=-.639) (Black Caribbean/African less punitive)	** (beta=-.797) (Black Caribbean/African less punitive)
No victimisation (=0) (0 ^a - victimisation=1)	** (beta=.240) (No victimisation more punitive)	X
Fear of crime	*** (beta=.147)	*(beta=.097)
Neo-liberal values	*** (beta=.084)	*** (beta=.058)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.352)	*** (beta=.303)
Social nostalgic values	*** (beta=.056)	*** (beta=.084)
Economic nostalgic values	*** (beta=.078)	X
Political nostalgic values	*** (beta=-.065)	** (beta=-.040)
Nagelkerke R-Square Value	44.6%	43.1%

* = p<.05, ** = p<.01, *** = p<.001; 0^a is the reference category and has a coefficient of 0.

8.5. Law punitivity

The 'law punitivity' variable was constructed through factor analyzing 'People who break the law should receive stiffer sentences' and 'For some crime the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence'. The variables for law punitivity correlated quite high with each other $r=.503$, have a one factor solution explaining 75.13% of the variance and have a reasonably high reliability (Cronbach's $\alpha=.626$). Results from factor analysis and Cronbach's alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable (*Law Punitivity*) from the two items.⁵²

*Model 1: Socio-demographic factors*⁵³

When socio-demographic factors were considered in isolation in Model 1 (Table 8.4), *politics scale* ($\beta=.348$, $p<.001$) has the strongest effect with punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers increasing as respondents self-identify as more politically conservative. *Lower educational attainment* ($\beta=.162$, $p<.001$), *decreased religiosity* ($\beta=.100$, $p<.001$), *working class origin* ($\beta= -.096$, $p<.001$), *being in a relationship* ($\beta=.095$, $p<.001$) and belonging to *higher IMD quartiles* also appear to be related to increased punitivity towards criminal rulebreakers. These findings are consistent with recent research in Britain, suggesting that those who self-identify as politically more conservative and those with lower educational attainment are more punitive towards offenders when socio-demographic factors are considered in isolation (King and Maruna, 2009). The R-square value suggests that Model 1 explains 19% of the variance in punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers. Previous research suggests that when socio-demographic factors are considered in isolation they explain between 10% and 13% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards offenders (Cullen et al., 2009; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007). With the addition of conservative ideology and

⁵² The large sample size ($n=5781$) is considered large enough to meet the sample size required to undertake regression analysis. Green (1991, in Tabacknick and Fidell, 2014:159) suggest $N \geq 50 + 8m$ (where m is the number of independent variables), so for the regression conducted in this section, 18 independent variables are used: $50 + (8)(18) = 194$ cases. If the dependent variable is skewed a larger sample is required as a small effect size or substantial measurement error is expected from less reliable variables (Tabacknick and Fidell, 2014).

⁵³ These are coded as follows: Gender: 0=Male, 1=female; Age=1=16-24, 2=25-34, 3=35-44, 4=45-54, 5=55-64, 6=65-74, 7=75+; Income: 1=below £5,000, 2=£5,000-£9,999, 3=£10,000-£14,999, 4=£15,000-£19,999, 5=£20,000-£24,000, 6=£25,000-£29,999, 7=£30,000- £34,999, 8=£35,000-£39,999, 9=40,000-£44,999, 10=£45,000-£49,999, 11=£50,000-£59,999, 12=£60,000-£69,999, 13=70,000-£84,999, 14=£84,000-£99,999, 15=over £100,000; Education: 1=Degree level, 2=below degree level qualifications, 3=no qualifications; Religiosity scale: 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious; Politics scale: 0=left to 10=right; Class Origin: 0=working class, 1=middle class; Relationship status: 0=single, 1=in relationship; Universal Credit: 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant; IMD: 1=1st quartile, 2=2nd quartile, 3=3rd quartile, 4=4th quartile; Ethnicity: 0=Other, 1=White.

religiosity, King and Maruna (2009) found that socio-demographic factors in their research explained 25.4% of the variance in punitiveness. Therefore, socio-demographic factors in this study explain less of the variance in *Law Punitivity* than in King and Maruna's (2009) study.

Table 8.4: Beta weights for multiple linear regression models predicting 'law punitivity' (n=2,090)⁵⁴

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio -demographic factors⁴¹				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	.012	-.009	.033*	.029*
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	-.013	-.008	-.073***	-.077***
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	-.010	-.001	.003	.010
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.162***	.152***	.072***	.062***
Religiosity (1=extremely...7 unextremely)	.100***	.099***	.082***	.079***
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.348***	.348***	.109***	.099***
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.096***	-.089***	-.054***	-.048***
Marital Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.095***	.094***	.047**	.048**
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	-.036	-.031	-.028	-.025
IMD (scale: 1=1 st quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	.063***	.048*	.028	.021
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.022	-.017	.005	.003
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.005	-.010	-.015
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.107***	.056***	.035*
Belief systems				
Neo-liberal values			.086***	.088***
Neo-conservative values			.572***	.485***
Nostalgia				
Social nostalgic values				.142***
Economic nostalgic values				.054**
Political nostalgic values				-.044*
R-square Value	.190***	.200***	.478***	.497***
Adjusted R-square	.186	.196	.475	.493
R-square change		.010	.278	.019

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Model 2: Crime related factors

When crime related factors were introduced in Model 2, experiences of *criminal victimisation* in the last five years have no effect. This is consistent with the findings from previous research, which has failed to find support for the hypothesis that victimization is a significant predictor of punitive attitudes (King and Maruna, 2009; Costelloe et al., 2009). *Fear of crime* (beta=.107, p<.001) does appear to be a significant factor relating to increased punitiveness

⁵⁴ See page 230 for more detail on the n-size

towards criminal rulebreakers, albeit a small effect as shown by the 1% increase in R-square change in Model 2. This finding is again consistent with previous research findings, which have generally found *fear of crime* to have a small, but significant, effect on punitive attitudes towards offenders (King and Maruna, 2009; Hogan et al., 2005; Spironovic et al., 2012). *Fear of crime* has very little impact on the socio-demographic factors in the model, with the exception of IMD, which reduces in both effect size and significance. This suggests that *fear of crime* inflated the effects of *IMD* in the previous model.

Model 3: Belief Systems

*Neo-conservative values*⁵⁵ (beta=.572, p<.001) has the strongest effect by far on punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers when belief systems are introduced in Model 3. *Neo-liberal values* (beta=.086, p<.001) also appears to be a significant factor but with a much smaller effect size. This suggests that as neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values increase, so do punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers. Previous findings have also found factors external to real threats of crime to be more relevant factors in explaining punitive attitudes towards offenders (King and Maruna, 2009; Tyler and Boeckmann, 1997; Hough et al., 1988). The effect size of *fear of crime* (beta=.056, p<.001) reduces but remains significant at the p<.001 level. *Age* (beta= -.073, p<.001) and *gender* (beta=.033, p<.05) become significant factors once neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values are entered into the model, with punitiveness increasing as age decreases and with being female. In contrast, the effects of *education* (beta=.072, p<.001), *relationship status* (beta=.047, p<.01), *class origin* (beta=-.054, p<.001), and *politics* (beta=.109, p<.001) reduce in Model 3, whilst the effects of *IMD* diminish. Several previous studies have also found that those who self-identify as politically more conservative endorse tougher sentences (King and Maruna, 2009; Costelloe et al., 2009; Unnever and Cullen, 2010). The R-Square value suggests that the variance explained by Model 3 as a whole is 47.8%, an increase of 27.8% from Model 2.

Model 4: Nostalgia

When nostalgic values are introduced in Model 4, *social nostalgic values* (beta=.142, p<.001) has the strongest effect, with *economic nostalgic values* (beta=.054, p<.01) and

⁵⁵ See Chapter 9.3 for an analysis of neo-conservative values

political nostalgic values (beta=-.044, $p<.05$) also appearing to be relevant factors. However, *neo-conservative values* (beta=.485, $p<.001$) continues to have the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers. The effect of *fear of crime* (beta=.035, $p<.05$) reduces somewhat once nostalgic values are introduced to the model suggesting that nostalgic values inflated the effects of fear of crime in Model 3. The effects of all other factors remain largely stable in Model 4. The increase in variance explained by Model 4 is 1.9% from Model 3, suggesting nostalgia has a very small effect on punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers. The R-square indicates that the model as a whole explains 49.7% of the variance in punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers.

Summary

Findings suggest that *Law Punitivity* is strongly related to neo-conservative values as shown by the effect size and the large increase in R-square value in Model 3. Additionally, social nostalgic values, those who self-identify as politically more conservative, neo-liberal values, decreased religiosity, younger age, lower educational attainment, working class origin, economic nostalgic values, being in a relationship, political nostalgic values, fear of crime and being female also appear to be related to increased punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers. Table 8.5 below shows the statistically significant factors related to law punitivity.

Table 8.5: Summary table for relevant statistically significant factors for punitivity towards criminal rulebreakers in Model 4

Variables	Law punitivity
Gender 0=male, 1=female	* (beta=.029, females)
Age Range Scale: 1=16-24 to 7=75+	*** (beta=-.077, younger age)
Income Scale= 1=<£5000 to 15=>£100,000	X
Education 1=degree, 2 below degree level, 3=no qualifications	*** (beta=.062, no qualifications)
Religiosity 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious	*** (beta=.079, decreased religiosity)
Political conservatism Scale: 1=left to 10=right	*** (beta=.099)
Class Origin 0=working class, 1=middle class	*** (beta=-.048, working class)
Relationship Status 0=single, 1=relationship	** (beta=.048, in relationship)
Universal Credit 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant	X
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	X
Ethnicity 0=white, 1=other	X
Victimisation 0=no, 1=victimised	X
Fear of crime 1=very safe to 4= very unsafe	* (beta=.035)
Neo-liberal values	*** (beta=.088)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.485)
Social nostalgic values	*** (beta=.142)
Economic nostalgic values	** (beta=.054)
Political nostalgic values	* (beta=-.044)
R-Square Value	49.7%

* = p<.05, ** = p<.01, *** = p<.001

Discussion

Findings here suggest that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers. Again, as with the rulebreaking school pupils and

rulebreaking welfare claimants items, analysis shows that separating the two measures draws out some notable differences between support for stiffer sentences and support for the specific, extreme sanction of the death penalty. Socio-demographic factors appear to be more relevant to support for the death penalty than for support for stiffer sentences. Support for the extreme sanction of the death penalty appears to be related to those aged below 25 years old, those with no qualifications, self-identified political conservatism, being in a relationship, being in receipt of universal credit and belonging to the fourth IMD quartile (compare to the first IMD quartile). Whilst crime-related factors appear to be more relevant to support for stiffer sentences than for the death penalty, in addition to being female. In relation to the value-based variables, support for the general, non-specific sanction of stiffer sentences is predominately related to neo-conservative values with neo-liberal values, economic nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values and political nostalgic values all being relevant factors. Whilst support for the more extreme sanction of the death penalty appears to be related to neo-conservative values, social nostalgic values and, to a lesser extent, political nostalgic values.

Consistent with previous research (Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Spiranovic et al, 2012; Costelloe et al., 2009), higher educational attainment is found to decrease punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers when considering law punitivity. Working class origin has consistently been found to be a relevant factor predicting punitiveness towards offenders (King and Maruna, 2009; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007), with punitiveness increasing with those from a working class origin. Findings here also suggest working class origin is a related to law punitivity. Decreased religiosity appears to be related to law punitivity, which is also evident in previous research (King and Maruna, 2009; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Unnever and Cullen, 2010). Findings suggest that those in a marriage-type relationship are more punitive than those who are single in relation to law punitivity, which is consistent with Costelloe et al.'s (2009) findings.

Despite these similarities with previous research, there are some differences. In this analysis, law punitivity appears to decrease as age increases, this is inconsistent with previous research that has generally found punitiveness to increase with age (Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Spiranovic et al., 2012). Additionally, males have consistently been found

to be more punitive than females (Hough et al., 1988; Cullen et al., 1985; Robert and Indermauer, 2007), however, findings here suggest that females are more punitive than males, albeit with a small effect.

Law Punitivity: Evaluating the multiple regression model

The full multiple regression model for law punitivity containing all the predictors was significant ($p < .001$).⁵⁶ The model summary (Table 8.6) shows the multiple correlation coefficients between law punitivity and the predictors in column one (labelled R), showing that when all predictors are included in Model 4 the multiple correlation coefficient is .705. The R-Square value in the second column measures how much variability in the outcome variable is explained for by the predictors (Field, 2018). The adjusted R-square indicates how well the model generalises with the figure in the final model between the R-square (.497) and adjusted R-square (.493) equalling .004, or 0.4%, meaning that if the model were derived from the population as opposed to a sample the model would account for approximately 0.4% less variance in the outcome (Field, 2018). The F change statistic shows that the change in R-square is significant at the $p < .001$ level for all four models. The combined explanatory power of all models is $R^2 = .497$ suggesting that the model overall explains 49.7% of the variance in law punitivity.

Table 8.6: Model summary for law punitivity

Model	R	R Square	Adjusted R Square	Std. Error of the Estimate	R Square Change	Change Statistics			Sig. F Change
						F Change	df1	df2	
1	.435	.190	.186	.73718905	.190	53.555	11	2518	.000
2	.447	.200	.196	.73284696	.010	15.963	2	2516	.000
3	.692	.478	.475	.59198682	.278	670.894	2	2514	.000
4	.705	.497	.493	.58166626	.019	31.001	3	2511	.000

⁵⁶ The ANOVA table shows the F-Test of whether the model is significantly better at predicting the outcome than using no predictors (Field, 2018). The p-values ($p < .001$) indicates that all models significantly improve the ability to predict punitive attitudes compared to not fitting the models (Field, 2018).

Normality, linearity, homoscedasticity and outliers

The histogram (Figure 8.1) shows that the normally distributed errors assumption is met with the mean (0.02) very close to zero. The Normal Probability Plot (Figure 8.2) shows the data lie in a reasonably straight line suggesting no major deviations from normality.

Figure 8.1: Histogram for law punitivity

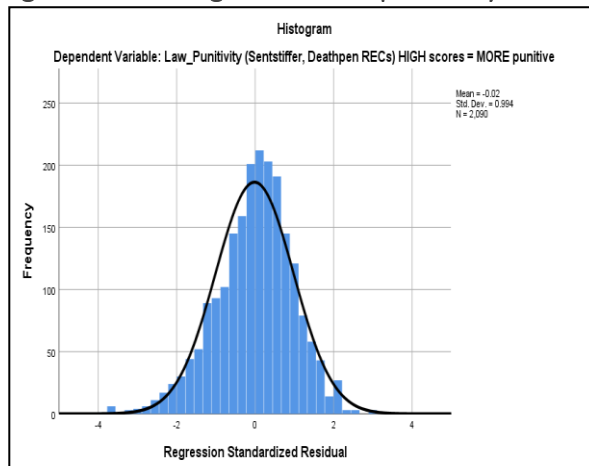
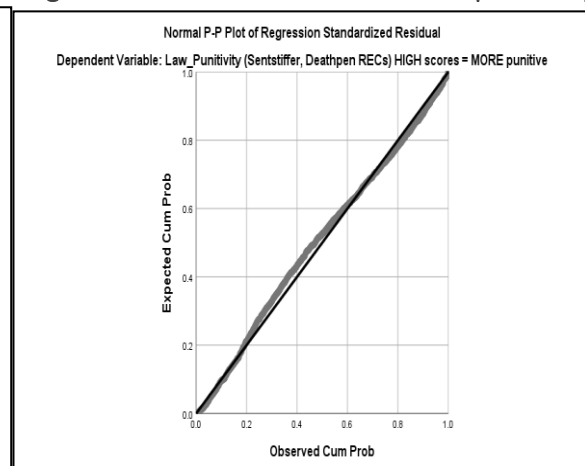


Figure 8.2: Normal P-P Plot for law punitivity



Casewise diagnostics

Casewise diagnostics shows that 14 cases (0.2% of the sample) have standardized residual values below -3 or above +3, which is below the 1% which would otherwise indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016; Field, 2018). Further investigation of these 14 cases suggests that no cases are have a Cook's distance value⁵⁷ greater than 1 with the largest value of .01. Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances⁵⁸ shows 35 cases have Mahalanobis distances greater than 42.312 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013). Further examination of the DFBeta and DfFit statistics for the independent variables, which indicate problematic cases having an undue influence on the model parameters, highlight no concerns with no cases close to 1 (Field, 2018).

Collinearity Diagnostics

⁵⁷ Cook's distance indicates whether a case has an undue influence on the results with values above 1 suggesting a potential problem (Pallant, 2016).

⁵⁸ Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances allow identification of outliers (Pallant, 2016). To identify which cases are outliers, the critical chi-square value was determined using 18 independent variables as the degrees of freedom (Pallant, 2016) from the critical values chi-square table and an alpha level of .001 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013: 10).

No preliminary concerns were raised with multicollinearity by viewing the correlation matrix of all dependent and independent variables. This shows with no correlations between independent variables are greater than .9 with the largest between political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values ($r=.509$). The largest correlation between law punitivity and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r=.657$, $p<.001$). All variance inflation factors (VIFs) are well below 10 which would indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the highest 1.933 (Economic nostalgic values) in any of the equations. No Tolerance values were below .10 which would also indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the lowest value of .517 (Economic nostalgic values), and the standard errors are low (highest .045 for *universal credit* in Model 2). The average VIF in model 4 is 1.39 is also not substantially more than 1 (Field, 2018), therefore suggesting no concerns with multicollinearity.

8.6. Summary

This chapter commenced by conducting ordinal logistic regression to examine the relationship between the two items designed to measure punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers. This analysis examined the relevance of socio-demographic factors, crime-related factors, political beliefs and nostalgia. The data showed that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers, which was the case with both support for stiffer sentences and support for the death penalty, with the model explaining a similar amount of variance in both measures of criminal punitiveness.

There were factors which related specifically to each separate item. Factors relating exclusively to support for the non-specific sanctions of stiffer sentences appear to be being female, no experience of victimisation, incomes between £40,000 and £59,999 and economic nostalgic values appear to be related only to punitiveness towards support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers. Whilst, factors relating to punitiveness towards the specific extreme sanction of the death penalty, appears to be related to those aged below 25 years old, those with no qualifications, self-identified political conservatism, those in a relationship, being in receipt of universal credit, belonging to the fourth IMD quartile (compare to the first IMD quartile). Additionally, crime-related factors appear to be more relevant to support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers, whilst socio-demographic factors appear to be more relevant to support for the death penalty.

'Law punitivity', a variable consisting of the two separate criminal rulebreaker items, was then examined by conducting multiple regression. As found in the ordinal regression models, law punitivity is strongly related to neo-conservative values. Additionally, social nostalgic values, those who self-identify as politically more conservative, neo-liberal values, decreased religiosity, younger age, lower educational attainment, working class origin, economic nostalgic values, being in a relationship, political nostalgic values, fear of crime and being female also appear to be related to increased punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers.

Throughout the last three chapters, punitiveness towards 'rulebreakers' as distinct groups has been considered. The next chapter commences by bridging these separate chapters together through examining how punitive attitudes vary towards the different groups of rulebreakers.

Chapter 9 Punitiveness towards ‘Rulebreakers’

9.1. Introduction

The previous three chapters (Chapters 6 to 8) analysed punitive attitudes towards the three distinct groups of rulebreakers. This chapter commences by bringing together these three distinct chapters by examining the variation in punitive attitudes towards the different groups of rulebreakers, asking the question, ‘How do punitive attitudes vary towards different groups of rulebreakers and what are the different influences?’ This analysis draws on the following three variables (the construction and separate analyses of these individual variables are detailed in the previous three respective chapters):

- School punitivity: A measure combining *Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments* and *School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded*.
- Welfare punitivity: A measure combining *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties* and *Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped*.
- Law punitivity: *People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences* and *For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence*.

A summary of the models discussed to compare the three rulebreaking groups from Chapters 6 to 8 is presented in Table 9.1. Following this initial analysis, this chapter will then progress to merge these three distinct groups of rulebreakers to examine punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers as a collective group. ‘Tiered Punitiveness’ will then be introduced suggesting that punitiveness is not one distinct attitude but can be separated into two discrete levels, specifically, ‘basic’ and ‘ultimate’ punitiveness. Finally, the chapter undertakes Structural Equation Modelling to explore ‘Basic Punitiveness’, ‘Ultimate Punitiveness’ and ‘Collective Punitiveness’ towards rulebreakers. The chapter concludes by presenting a discussion on the contributions of this thesis to theories of punitiveness.

9.2. Examining punitive attitudes towards the distinct groups of rulebreakers

This section draws together the separate analyses conducted in Chapters 6 to 8 in relation to punitive attitudes towards the three groups of rulebreakers: *school punitivity*, *welfare punitivity* and *law punitivity*. A summary of the factors relevant to each rulebreaker (in Model 4) is shown in Table 9.1. below.

Model 1 – Socio-demographic factors

Socio-demographic factors have the strongest effect on criminal rulebreakers (19%) compared to 12.7% on rulebreaking welfare claimants and 8.9% on rulebreaking school pupils. *Gender* has a significant effect on both punitive attitudes towards school pupils (beta=-.042, $p<.05$) and welfare recipients (beta=.067, $p<.001$), but not on lawbreakers, with males being more punitive towards rulebreaking school pupils and females being more punitive towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. *Age* has no significant effect on any group of rulebreakers. *Higher income* has the strongest effect on welfare claimants (beta=.073, $p<.001$) with a smaller effect on school pupils (beta=.045, $p<.05$), and no effect on lawbreakers. *Education* appears to be a relevant factor for all three rulebreakers, with lower levels of education increasing punitiveness towards rulebreakers, with the strongest effect on criminal lawbreakers (beta=.162, $p<.001$). *Religiosity (Would you describe yourself as extremely religious or extremely non-religious?)* also has a significant effect on all rulebreakers, with the strongest effect on lawbreakers (beta=.100, $p<.001$) suggesting that punitive attitudes increase as respondents describe themselves as less religious. *Politics* has a strong effect at the $p<.001$ level on all three groups of rulebreakers with the strongest effect on lawbreakers (beta=.348) suggesting as respondents self-identify as more politically conservative, their punitive attitudes increase. *Class origin* has a similar effect on all rulebreakers ($p<.001$) with the strongest effect on lawbreakers (beta=-.096) suggesting that punitive attitudes increase with those from a working-class origin. *Marital status* only appears to be a relevant factor for lawbreakers (beta=.095, $p<.001$) suggesting that those who are in a marital type relationship are more punitive than those who are single. *Universal credit* (beta=.059, $p<.01$) appears only to be relevant factor in welfare punitivity, suggesting that punitive attitudes increase with those not in receipt of universal credit. Whilst *IMD* appears to only be related to law punitivity (beta=.063, $p<.001$) with punitiveness increasing

with higher IMD quartiles. Lastly, *ethnicity* does not appear to be a relevant factor for any group of rulebreaker.

Model 2: Crime related factors

Crime related factors have the strongest effect on law punitivity (R-square = 1%).

Victimisation has no effect on any group of rulebreakers, whilst *fear of crime* appears to have a small, but significant, effect on all three groups of rulebreakers with the strongest effect on increased punitivity towards lawbreakers (beta=.107, $p < .001$) suggesting that as fear of crime increases, so too do punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers.

Fear of crime has a small effect on *gender* and *class origin* for school punitivity. *Gender* (beta=-.058) becomes significant at the $p < .01$ level) with male punitiveness increasing when fear of crime is introduced to the model, whilst the effects of working-class origin (beta=-.062) decreases in significance ($p < .01$). All other socio-demographic factors remain stable for law punitivity. The majority of all other factors in Model 2 for welfare punitivity remain stable, with a decrease in effect size and significance for *gender* (beta=.054, $p < .01$) and an increase in effect size for *politics* (beta=.287, $p < .001$). This suggests that fear of crime slightly inflated the effects of gender in Model 1, with welfare punitivity increasing with being female. Finally, for law punitivity *fear of crime* has very little impact on the socio-demographic factors in Model 2, with the exception of IMD, which reduces in both effect size and significance (beta=.048, $p < .05$). This suggests that *fear of crime* inflated the effects of *IMD* in the previous model. Model 2 as a whole accounts for a greater amount of variance towards lawbreakers (20%) compared to 13.1% for welfare rulebreakers and 9.5% for rulebreaking school pupils.

Model 3: Belief Systems

Belief systems appear to have the strongest effect on punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils (R-square change= 30.4%), with a slightly smaller effect on law punitivity (27.8%) and the smallest effect on welfare punitivity (19.6%). *Neo-liberal values* appears to be a relevant factor towards all groups of rulebreakers with a similar effect on lawbreakers (beta=.086, $p < .001$) and welfare rulebreakers (beta=.082, $p < .001$), and a smaller effect on rulebreaking school pupils (beta=.061, $p < .001$). *Neo-conservative values* has a very strong

effect on all three groups of rulebreakers, with the strongest effect on school punitivity (beta=.606, $p<.001$), followed by law punitivity (beta=.572, $p<.001$) and welfare punitivity (beta=.476, $p<.001$).

The introduction of neo-conservative and neo-liberal values has a notable effect on a number of other factors in Model 3 for all rulebreaking groups. For school punitivity the effects of *politics*, *fear of crime*, *class origin*, *education*, and *gender* diminish once belief systems are entered into the model. This suggests that neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values inflated the effects of these factors in the previous model. In contrast, the effects of *income* (beta=.056, $p<.056$) increase with those earning higher incomes holding more punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils, whilst the effects of *religiosity* (beta=.035, $p<.05$) decrease. For welfare punitivity, the effects of *fear of crime* and *education* diminish once neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values are introduced to the model, whilst the effects of *class origin* (beta=-.034, $p<.05$) and *politics* (beta=.082, $p<.001$) reduce substantially and *religiosity* (beta=.050, $p<.01$) reduces slightly. This suggests that neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values inflated the effects of these factors in the previous model. Whilst the effects of *gender* (beta=.089, $p<.001$) and *universal credit* (beta=.064, $p<.001$) increase in Model 3. Finally, *IMD* (beta=-.046, $p<.01$) becomes a relevant factor in Model 3 with punitive attitudes increasing with those belonging to lower IMD quartiles. Lastly, for law punitivity the effect size of *fear of crime* (beta=.056) reduces substantially but remains significant at the $p<.001$ level. *Age* (beta= -.073, $p<.001$) and *gender* (beta=.033, $p<.05$) become significant factors once neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values are entered into the model, with punitiveness increasing as age decreases and with being female. In contrast, the effects of *education* (beta=.072, $p<.001$), *relationship status* (beta=.047, $p<.01$) and *class origin* (beta=-.054, $p<.001$) reduce in Model 3, whilst the effects of *IMD* diminish. Additionally, the effect size of *politics* (beta=.109, $p<.001$) reduces somewhat. The variance explained by the model as a whole is 47.8% for lawbreakers, 39.9% for rulebreaking school pupils and 32.7% for rulebreaking welfare claimants.

Model 4: Nostalgia

The final model introduces social, economic and political nostalgic values, which have the strongest effect on law punitivity (R-Square change = 1.9%) followed by welfare punitivity

(0.6%) and school punitivity (0.3%). *Social nostalgic values* appears to be relevant to law punitivity (beta=.142, $p < .001$) and school punitivity (beta=.064, $p < .01$), but no effect on welfare punitivity. This appears then to indicate that increased punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils and criminal lawbreakers is related to attitudes feeling that the country is in decline, that it has changed for the worse and which provoke a sense of sadness. *Economic nostalgic values* has the strongest effect on welfare punitivity (beta=.074, $p < .001$), with a weaker, but significant, effect on law punitivity (beta=.054, $p < .01$), and no effect on school punitivity. This appears to suggest that punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants and criminal rulebreakers is related to views disagreeable with the loss of industry and community spirit and the increase in the dominance of profit and money. Finally, political nostalgic values appears to have the strongest effect on welfare punitivity (beta= -.100) with a weaker effect on law punitivity (beta=-.044, $p < .05$) and no effect on rulebreaking school pupils. This appears to indicate that punitiveness towards welfare and criminal rulebreakers is related to a disagreement that Margaret Thatcher's governments has had a lasting detrimental impact on ordinary people's lives. Whilst nostalgic values appears to have varying degrees of relevance to punitiveness for the three rulebreaking groups, it is worth highlighting that these effects are very small as seen by the R-square changes in each model.

Once the nostalgia items are introduced in Model 4 for school punitivity, the effect size of neo-conservative values (beta=.579, $p < .001$) decreases slightly, which suggests that there may be a relationship between social nostalgic values and neo-conservative values. All other factors remain stable with the exception of *income* (beta=.060, $p < .001$), which increases suggesting that higher income becomes a more relevant factor once social nostalgic values is entered into the model. For welfare punitivity, *neo-conservative values* (beta=.453, $p < .001$) continues to have the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. There is very little effect on all other variables when nostalgic values are introduced to the model, with the exception of *age* (beta=-.043, $p < .05$) and *politics* (beta=.061, $p < .01$). *Age* becomes significant once the nostalgia items are entered into the model with punitiveness increasing with younger age, whilst the effect size and significance of *politics* (beta=.061, $p < .01$) reduces once the nostalgia items are introduced. Lastly, for law punitivity *neo-conservative values* (beta=.485, $p < .001$) continues to have the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers. The effects of *fear of crime*

(beta=.035, $p < .05$) reduce somewhat once nostalgic values are introduced to the model suggesting that nostalgic values inflated the effects of fear of crime in Model 3. The effects of all other factors remain largely stable in Model 4.

Summary

The model as a whole explains the largest amount of variance in punitive attitudes towards lawbreakers explaining 49.7% of the variance in law punitivity, 40.2% of the variance in school punitivity and 33.3% of the variance in welfare punitivity. This suggests that the model is a better predictor of punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers than for the rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants. This is perhaps not surprising as the theoretical framework for the models is largely shaped by a criminological foundation.

There are some similarities in the factors related to all three groups of rulebreakers, shown in Table 9.1 below. Firstly, belief systems appear to have the most notable effect on punitive attitudes towards all three groups of rulebreakers shown by the increase in R-Square value for Model 3 for each group, with the largest effect on rulebreaking school pupils (30.4%). *Neo-conservative values* has the strongest effect on all groups of rulebreakers, with the strongest effect on rulebreaking school pupils, closely followed by criminal rulebreakers. Whilst, *neo-liberal values* also appears to be related to all three rulebreaking groups with the strongest effect on criminal rulebreakers. The only other factor relating to all three rulebreakers is *religiosity*, with the strongest effect on law punitivity.

Additionally, punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils appears to be related to social nostalgic values and increased income. Welfare punitivity appears to be influenced by political nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, being female, higher income, those not receiving universal credit, increased political conservatism, younger age, working class origin and lower IMD. Whilst law punitivity appears to be related to social nostalgic values, increased political conservatism, younger age, lower education attainment, working class origin, economic nostalgic values, being in a marital type relationship, political nostalgic values, fear of crime and being female. School punitivity appears to be related to the least amount of significant factors (five), whereas welfare and law punitivity appear to have a more complex mix of factors with twelve and thirteen significant factors respectively.

Table 9.1. Summary: Relevant factors for punitivity towards different groups of rulebreakers (Model 4)

		School punitivity	Welfare punitivity	Law punitivity
Non-attitudinal factors	Gender	X	*** (beta=.088, female)	* (beta=.029, female)
	Age Range	X	* (beta=-.043, younger age)	*** (beta=-.077, younger age)
	Income	*** (beta=.060, increased income)	*** (beta=.081, increased income)	X
	Education	X	X	*** (beta=.062, lower education more punitive)
	Religiosity	* (beta=.035, less religiosity)	** (beta=.047, less religiosity)	*** (beta=.079, less religiosity)
	Political conservatism	X	** (beta=.061)	*** (beta=.099)
	Working Class Origin	X	* (beta=-.037)	*** (beta=-.048)
	Marital Status	X	X	** (beta=.048, in relationship more punitive)
	Universal Credit	X	*** (beta=.062, non-claimants more punitive)	X
	IMD	X	* (beta=-.041, lower quartiles)	X
	Ethnicity	X	X	X
Crime factors	Victimisation	X	X	X
	Fear of crime	X	X	* (beta=.035)
Political Values	Neo-liberal values	*** (beta=.063)	*** (beta=.081)	*** (beta=.088)
	Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.579)	*** (beta=.453)	*** (beta=.485)
Nostalgic Values	Social nostalgic values	** (beta=.064)	X	*** (beta=.142)
	Economic nostalgic values	X	*** (beta=.074)	** (beta=.054)
	Political nostalgic values	X	*** (beta=-.100)	* (beta=-.044)
	R-Square Value	40.2%	33.3%	49.7%

* = p<.05, ** = p<.01, *** = p<.001

9.3. Neo-conservative Values

Throughout the previous models, analyses suggest that neo-conservative values is consistently related to all groups of rulebreakers. Additionally, when neo-conservative values is added to the models it appears to have a notable effect on other variables, in particular socio-demographic variables. A multiple regression analysis (pairwise, $n=2,090$)⁵⁹ was conducted with neo-conservative values as the dependent variable to explore what variables predicts this variable and to explain some of the main changes that occur when it is added to the models throughout this thesis (Appendix G).

Model 1: Socio-demographic factors

Socio-demographic factors appear to be important explaining 20.4% of the variance in neo-conservative values. Most notably, politics scale, education and age range appear to have a strong effect suggesting that political conservatism, older age and less education are related to neo-conservatism. Additionally, working class origin, being in a relationship, being male, higher IMD and non-white ethnicity appear to be related to increased neo-conservative values.

Model 2: Crime-related factors

When victimisation and fear of crime are entered into the model, victimisation has no effect on neo-conservative values. Whilst fear of crime has a relatively strong effect suggesting that as fear of crime increases, so too do neo-conservative values. However, the R-Square change (.8%) suggests that this effect is very small.

Model 3: Belief systems

Neo-liberal values have a significant effect when entered into the model suggesting that as neo-liberal values increase so does neo-conservative values. However, the R-Square change is quite small at 3.9%.

⁵⁹ See P230 for information about the n-size

Model 4: Nostalgic values

Nostalgic values appear to be relevant factors related to neo-conservative values shown by the relatively large R-Square change of 17.8% when entered in Model 4. Social nostalgic values appear to have the strongest effect suggesting that neo-conservative values increase as social nostalgia increases. This is perhaps not surprising as neo-conservatism is inherently socially conservative. Economic nostalgia also has a strong effect with neo-conservative values increasing as people feel more economically nostalgic. Lastly, political nostalgic values have the smallest effect from the nostalgia items, with neo-conservatism decreasing as political nostalgia increases. As people agree that Margaret Thatcher had a negative impact on ordinary life and communities, they are less likely to hold neo-conservative values.

Socio-demographic variables generally remain consistent across the models, with some beta coefficients reducing but remaining significant in Model 4, suggesting that these socio-demographic variables (being male, older age, lower education, self-identified political conservatism, working class origin, and being in a relationship) are important in understanding neo-conservative values. This explains the notable impact on some socio-demographic variables when neo-conservative values is added to the punitiveness models throughout this thesis.

9.4. Exploring collective punitiveness towards rulebreakers

This next section examines rulebreakers as a collective group. Collective punitiveness was explored through constructing a new 'punitiveness' variable, consisting of the six rulebreaker variables below. The questions were designed with the aim of tapping into people's desire for both harsher sanctions (questions 1,3,5) and people's desire for the most extreme sanctions (questions 2,4,6).

1. Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments.
2. School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded.
3. Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties.
4. Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped.
5. People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences.

6. For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence.

Collective Punitiveness then is operationalised as a person’s level of support for harsher penalties towards rulebreakers, with an emphasis on a desire for both tougher punishments and extreme sanctions across three regulatory systems. Models of punitivity were estimated using standard multiple regression allowing for exploration of interrelationships among sets of variables (Pallant, 2016).⁶⁰ Exploratory factor analysis was conducted using principle axis factoring with oblique rotation. The KMO=.825 verified the sampling adequacy for the analysis falling into the range of ‘meritorious’ (Kaiser and Rice, 1974) and all KMO values for individual items were greater than .80. One factor had eigenvalues over Kaiser’s criterion of 1 and in combination explained 53.28% of the variance, with the scree plot confirming retaining 1 factor. The collective punitiveness items have a high reliability (Cronbach’s α =.806). Results from factor analysis and Cronbach’s alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable from the six items (*Collective Punitiveness*). Table 9.2. shows the factor loadings for each item.

Table 9.2: Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for ‘Collective Punitiveness’ items	Factor 1
Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments	.693
School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded	.577
Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties	.681
Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped	.700
People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences	.750
For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence	.570

⁶⁰ Multiple regression also explores how much variance in punitivity can be explained by the independent variables entered in each model (Pallant, 2016). Tests for violations of assumptions did not reveal any apparent problems. Due to the large sample size of this study (n=5781) sample size is not considered problematic. Tabachnick and Fidell (2013:123) provide a formula to assess adequacy of sample size: $N > 50 + 8m$ (m= number of independent variables). In this case, $N > 50 + 8 \times 16$ (independent variables), equating to a minimum of 178 cases, with more cases required if the dependent variable is skewed (Pallant, 2016).

*Model 1: Socio-demographic factors*⁶¹

When socio-demographic factors are considered in isolation in Model 1 (Table 9.3), *politics* (beta=.347, $p<.001$) has the strongest effect on collective punitiveness suggesting that as respondents self-identify as more politically conservative, punitivity increases. *Education* (beta=.122), *class origin* (beta=-.091), and *religiosity* (beta=.086) are also significant at the $p<.001$ level suggesting that lower educational attainment, working class origin and decreased religiosity increase punitiveness towards rulebreakers. Additionally, being in a *marital-type relationship* (beta=.059, $p<.01$) and *higher income* (beta=.045, $p<.05$) also appear to be related to increased punitiveness towards rulebreakers. The R-square value for Model 1 suggests that socio-demographic factors explain 17.3% of the variance of collective punitiveness towards rulebreakers.

Model 2: Crime related

When crime-related factors are introduced to the model, *victimisation* has no effect. Whereas *fear of crime* (*How safe do you feel walking around in the area you live in after dark?*) does have a significant effect (beta =.099, $p<.001$) with punitive attitudes increasing as fear of crime increases. *Fear of crime* has very little effect on the socio-demographic factors, with the exception of increasing the effect of *income* (beta=.054, $p<.01$) which increases in effect size and significance. The R-Square change in Model 2 is small at .009, with Model 2 as a whole accounting for 18.2% of the variance in punitiveness.

⁶¹ These are coded as follows: Gender: 0=Male, 1=female; Age=1=16-24, 2=25-34, 3=35-44, 4=45-54, 5=55-64, 6=65-74, 7=75+; Income: 1=below £5,000, 2=£5,000-£9,999, 3=£10,000-£14,999, 4=£15,000-£19,999, 5=£20,000-£24,000, 6=£25,000-£29,999, 7=£30,000-£34,999, 8=£35,000-£39,999, 9=£40,000-£44,999, 10=£45,000-£49,999, 11=£50,000-£59,999, 12=£60,000-£69,999, 13=£70,000-£84,999, 14=£84,000-£99,999, 15=over £100,000; Education: 1=Degree level, 2=below degree level qualifications, 3=no qualifications; Religiosity scale: 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious; Politics scale: 0=left to 10=right; Class Origin: 0=working class, 1=middle class; Relationship status: 0=single, 1=in relationship; Universal Credit: 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant; IMD: 1=1st quartile, 2=2nd quartile, 3=3rd quartile, 4=4th quartile; Ethnicity: 0=Other, 1=White.

Table 9.3: Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting collective punitiveness (n=2,090)⁶²

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio-demographic factors⁶¹				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	.024	.004	.054***	.051***
Age Range (1=16-24... 5=75+)	.029	.033	-.046**	-.050**
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.045*	.054**	.058***	.062***
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no qualifications)	.122***	.116***	.022	.018
Religiosity (1=extremely...7 unextremely)	.086***	.085***	.063***	.061***
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.347***	.348***	.074***	.065***
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.091***	-.084***	-.042**	-.040**
Marital Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.059**	.058**	.003	.004
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	.011	.015	.019	.020
IMD (scale: 1=1 st quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	.014	.000	-.023	-.025
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.009	-.004	.021	.020
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.017	-.023	-.026
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.099***	.038**	.027
Belief systems (high scores=more values)				
Neo-liberal values			.086***	.090***
Neo-conservative values			.673***	.620***
Nostalgia (high score=more nostalgic)				
Social Nostalgic Values				.067***
Economic Nostalgic Values				.062***
Political Nostalgic Values				-.053**
R-square	.173***	.182***	.563***	.570***
Adjusted R-square	.169	.177	.560	.560
R-square change		.009	.381	.007

*** p < .001, ** p < .01, * p < .05

Model 3: Belief Systems

When beliefs systems are introduced in Model 3, *neo-conservative values* has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes (beta=.673, p<.001), whilst *neo-liberal values* also has a significant, but much smaller, effect (beta=.086, p<.001). These effects suggest that as neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values increase, so do punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers. The introduction of neo-liberal values and neo-conservative values does have a notable effect on some of the socio-demographic variables. *Gender* (beta=.054, p<.001) and *age* (beta=-.046, p<.01) become significant factors suggesting that increased punitiveness is related to being female and being younger. *Income* (beta=.058) also becomes significant at the p<.001 level. In contrast, the effects of *education* and *marital status* diminish suggesting

⁶² See page 230 for more detail on the sample size

that neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values inflated their effects in Model 2. *Politics* remains significant at the $p < .001$ level but reduces substantially in effect size ($\beta = .074$), suggesting that whilst neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values inflated the effect size of politics in Model 2 those identifying as politically more conservative remains a relevant factor. Finally, *class origin* ($\beta = -.042$, $p < .01$) and *fear of crime* ($\beta = .038$, $p < .01$) also reduce in effect size and significance. The R-Square value suggests that Model 3 explains 56.3% of the variance in punitiveness towards rulebreakers, an increase of 38.1% from Model 2.

Model 4: Nostalgia

All nostalgic items in Model 4 have a significant effect on punitive attitudes with *social nostalgic values* ($\beta = .067$, $p < .001$) and *economic nostalgic values* ($\beta = .062$, $p < .001$) having a stronger effect than political nostalgic values ($\beta = -.053$, $p < .01$). Once the nostalgia items are introduced in Model 4, the effect size of neo-conservative values reduces slightly ($\beta = .620$, $p < .001$). This suggest that the nostalgia items inflated the effect of neo-conservative values a little in Model 3. The effects of *fear of crime* diminish in Model 4, suggesting that the nostalgia items inflated the effect of fear of crime in Model 3. There is very little impact on the remaining factors in Model 4. The R-Square change of 0.7% suggests that whilst nostalgia items appear to be significant factors, they do in fact have a very small effect on explaining the variance in punitiveness towards rulebreakers. The Model as a whole explains 57% of the variance in collective punitiveness towards rulebreakers.

Summary

Findings suggest that punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers are largely driven by neo-conservative values; this is illustrated by the large increase in R-square value in Model 3 (38.1%) and the effect size of neo-conservative values ($\beta = .620$). Additional relevant factors appear to be neo-liberal values, social and economic nostalgic values, self-identified political conservatism, decreased religiosity, higher income, political nostalgic values, being female, younger age and lower-class origin. Table 9.4 below shows the statistically significant factors related to collective punitiveness towards rulebreakers.

Table 9.4: Summary of relevant statistically significant factors for punitivity towards rulebreakers in Model 4

Variables	General Punitivity
Female	*** (beta=.051, females more punitive)
Age Range	** (beta=-.050, younger age more punitive)
Higher Income	*** (beta=.062)
Lower educational attainment	X
Decreased religiosity	*** (beta=.061)
Political conservatism	*** (beta=.065)
Working Class Origin	** (beta=-.040)
Marital Status	X
Universal Credit	X
IMD	X
Ethnicity	X
Victimisation	X
Fear of crime	X
Neo-liberal values	*** (beta=.090)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.620)
Social nostalgic values	*** (beta=.067)
Economic nostalgic values	*** (beta=.062)
Political nostalgic values	** (beta=-.053)
R-Square Value	57%

* = p<.05, ** = p<.01, *** = p<.001

Collective Punitiveness: Evaluating the multiple regression model

The full model containing all the predictors was significant ($p < .001$).⁶³ The model summary (Table 9.5) shows the multiple correlation coefficients between punitiveness and the predictors in column one (labelled R), showing that when all predictors are included in Model 4 the multiple correlation coefficient is .755. The R-Square value in the second column measures how much variability in the outcome variable is explained for by the predictors (Field, 2018). The adjusted R-square indicates how well the model generalises with the figure in the final model between the R-square (.570) and adjusted R-square (.567) equalling .003 or 0.3% meaning that if the model were derived from the population as opposed to a sample the model would account for approximately 0.3% less variance in the outcome (Field, 2018). The F change statistic shows that the change in R-square is significant at the $p < .001$ level for models. The combined explanatory power of all models is $R^2 = .570$ suggesting that the model overall explains 57% of the variance in punitivity.

Table 9.5: Model summary for collective punitiveness

Model Summary									
Model	R	R Square	Adjusted R Square	Std. Error of the Estimate	R Square Change	Change Statistics			Sig. F Change
						F Change	df1	df2	
1	.416	.173	.169	.83236937	.173	47.846	11	2518	.000
2	.426	.182	.177	.82834183	.009	13.273	2	2516	.000
3	.750	.563	.560	.60583045	.381	1094.785	2	2514	.000
4	.755	.570	.567	.60109505	.007	14.255	3	2511	.000

Normality, linearity, homoscedasticity and outliers

The histogram (Figure 9.1) shows that the normally distributed errors assumption is met with the mean (-0.03) very close to zero. The Normal Probability Plot (Figure 9.2) shows the data lie in a reasonably straight line suggesting no major deviations from normality.

⁶³ The ANOVA table shows the F-Test of whether the model is significantly better at predicting the outcome than using no predictors (Field, 2018). The p-values ($p < .001$) indicates that all models significantly improve the ability to predict punitive attitudes compared to not fitting the models (Field, 2018).

Figure 9.1: Histogram for collective punitiveness

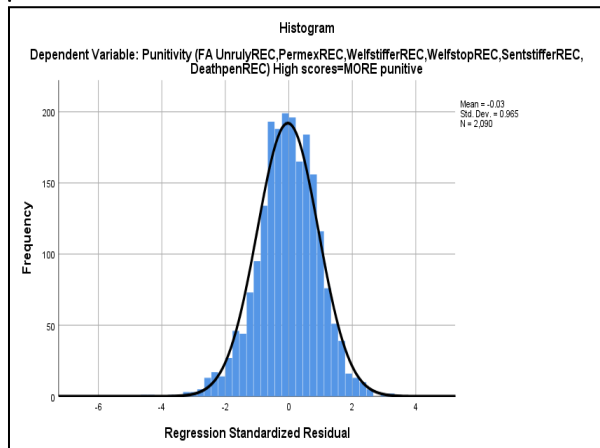
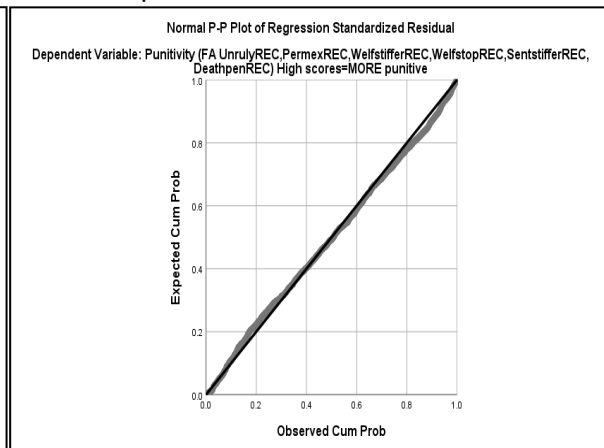


Figure 9.2: Normal P-P Plot for collective punitiveness



Casewise diagnostics

Casewise diagnostics shows that 12 cases (0.2% of the sample) have standardized residual values below -3 or above +3, which is below the 1% which would otherwise indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016; Field, 2018). Further investigation of these 12 cases suggests that no cases are have a Cook’s distance value⁶⁴ greater than 1 with the largest value of .016. Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances⁶⁵ shows 64 cases have Mahalanobis distances greater than 42.312 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013). Further examination of the DFBeta and DfFit statistics for the independent variables, which indicate problematic cases having an undue influence on the model parameters, highlight no concerns with no cases close to 1 (Field, 2018).

Collinearity Diagnostics

No preliminary concerns were raised with multicollinearity by viewing the correlation matrix of all dependent and independent variables. This shows with no correlations between independent variables are greater than .9 with the largest between political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values ($r=.509$). The largest correlation between the punitivity variable and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r=.728, p<.000$). All variance inflation factors (VIFs) are well below 10 which would indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the highest 1.933 (Economic nostalgic values) in any of the equations. No

⁶⁴ Cook’s distance indicates whether a case has an undue influence on the results with values above 1 suggesting a potential problem (Pallant, 2016).

⁶⁵ Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances allow identification of outliers (Pallant, 2016). To identify which cases are outliers, the critical chi-square value was determined using 18 independent variables as the degrees of freedom (Pallant, 2016) from the critical values chi-square table and an alpha level of .001 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013: 10).

Tolerance values were below .10 which would also indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the lowest value of .517 (Economic nostalgic values), and the standard errors are low (highest .071 for *ethnicity* in Model 2). The average VIF in model 4 is 1.39 is also not substantially more than 1 (Field, 2018), therefore suggesting no concerns with multicollinearity.

9.5. 'Tiered Punitiveness'

This section explores the concept of 'tiered punitiveness'. Analysis of the frequencies for the separate variables shows a reduction in punitive attitudes once questions specify an extreme, permanent sanction when compared to the questions referring to a general increase in punishment. Table 9.6. shows the differences in agreement between the statements referring to increased, non-specific punishments (second column) and the statements referring to specific, extreme sanctions (column three). The right-most column shows the reduction in agreement once an extreme, permanent sanction is included.

Additionally, detailed analyses over the previous three chapters appears to show differences in influences towards support for the general toughening of sanctions compared to support for specific, extreme sanctions. Based on this difference, the collective punitiveness variable has been separated into two categories: 'Basic Punitiveness' and 'Ultimate Punitiveness', with the aim of exploring whether these two tiers of punitiveness have different influences (Table 9.7). *Basic punitiveness* is operationalized as a person's level of support for harsher penalties for rulebreakers with an emphasis on tougher sanctions across three regulatory systems. These sanctions are purposefully non-specific and aim to tap into a person's general level of support for the idea of tougher sanctions for rulebreakers. *Ultimate punitiveness* is operationalized as a person's level of support for extreme, permanent sanctions for rulebreakers across three regulatory systems. These sanctions are purposely explicit and aim to tap into the most punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers.

Table 9.6. Reduction in agreement in 'Tiered Punitiveness'

	Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments	School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded	Reduction
Strongly Agree	27%	22%	-5%
Agree	47%	37%	-10%
Agreement Total	74%	59%	-15%
	Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties	Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped	
Strongly Agree	49%	39%	-10%
Agree	35%	30%	-5%
Agreement Total	84%	69%	-15%
	<i>People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences</i>	<i>For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence</i>	
Strongly Agree	36%	32%	-4%
Agree	35%	22%	-13%
Agreement Total	71%	54%	-17%

Table 9.7. Basic and Ultimate Punitiveness Variables

Type of punishment	School pupils	Welfare Claimants	Lawbreakers
Basic Punitiveness (Increased punishment)	Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments.	Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties.	People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences.
Ultimate Punitiveness (Maximum punishment)	School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded.	Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped.	For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence.

Constructing Basic and Ultimate Punitiveness Variables

Exploratory factor analysis was conducted using principle axis factoring with oblique rotation for both basic and ultimate punitiveness. Firstly, the KMO measure verified the sampling adequacy for the analysis of the 'basic punitiveness' variable, $KMO=.681$, which is above the minimum criteria of 0.5 and falls into the range of 'mediocre' (Kaiser and Rice, 1974). All KMO values for individual items were greater than .65, which is above the acceptable limit of 0.5. One factor had eigenvalues over Kaiser's criterion of 1 and in combination explained 65.67% of the variance with the scree plot confirming the retention of 1 factor. The basic punitiveness items have a good reliability (Cronbach's $\alpha=.738$). Results from factor analysis and Cronbach's alpha confirm the suitability of constructing a single variable, specifically, *Basic Punitiveness*, from the three items. Table 9.8 shows the factor loadings.

Table 9.8: Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for 'basic punitiveness'	Factor 1
People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences	.768
Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments	.669
Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties	.655

The KMO measure for the 'ultimate punitiveness' variable verified the sampling adequacy for the analysis, $KMO=.644$, which is above the minimum criteria of 0.5 and falls into the range of 'mediocre' (Kaiser and Rice, 1974). All KMO values for individual items were greater than .63, which is above the acceptable limit of 0.5. One factor had eigenvalues over Kaiser's criterion of 1 and in combination explained 57.20% of the variance, with the scree plot confirming retaining 1 factor. The ultimate punitiveness items have a lower reliability than basic punitiveness (Cronbach's $\alpha=.611$). Values of $\alpha=0.7$ and above are generally accepted values, however, when more complex psychological constructs are involved values below 0.7 can be expected due to the diversity of constructs being measured (Kline, 1999 in Field, 2018: 823). Based on the results from factor analysis and Cronbach's alpha, a single variable, namely, *Ultimate Punitiveness*, from the three items was constructed. Table 9.9 shows the factor loadings.

Table 9.9: Summary of exploratory factor analysis results for 'ultimate punitiveness'	Factor 1
Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped	.663
For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence	.570
School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded	.564

Exploring the different influences of basic and ultimate punitiveness towards rulebreakers

Model 1: Socio-demographic factors⁶⁶

Socio-demographic factors explain a similar amount of the variance in both basic (15.3%) and ultimate punitiveness (16.3%). The results follow a similar trend but with some differences in effect size and significance values. *Politics* and *education* have the strongest effects for both basic punitiveness (beta=.311, p<.001; beta=.103, p<.001, respectively) and ultimate punitiveness (beta=.353, p<.001 and beta=.135, p<.001, respectively) with the effect size for both variables being greater for ultimate punitiveness. As respondents self-identify as more politically conservative their punitive attitudes increase and those with lower education appear to be more punitive. Notably, *age* for basic punitiveness (beta=.072, p<.001) suggests that basic punitiveness increases with age. In contrast, *age* for ultimate punitiveness (beta=-.050, p<.05) has a weaker, but still significant, effect and suggests that younger age is related to increased ultimate punitiveness. *Class origin* and *religiosity* also appear to be relevant factors to both tiers of punitiveness. *Marital Status* has a stronger effect on ultimate punitiveness (beta=.071, p<.001) than on basic punitiveness (beta=.048, p<.05) suggesting that those who are in a marriage type relationship are more punitive than those who are single. Finally, *income* appears to be a relevant factor for basic punitiveness (beta=.043, p<.05) but not for ultimate punitiveness, suggesting that as income increases support for harsher sanctions also increases.

⁶⁶ These are coded as follows: Gender: 0=Male, 1=female; Age=1=16-24, 2=25-34, 3=35-44, 4=45-54, 5=55-64, 6=65-74, 7=75+; Income: 1=below £5,000, 2=£5,000-£9,999, 3=£10,000-£14,999, 4=£15,000-£19,999, 5=£20,000-£24,000, 6=£25,000-£29,999, 7=£30,000- £34,999, 8=£35,000-£39,999, 9=40,000-£44,999, 10=£45,000-£49,999, 11=£50,000-£59,999, 12=£60,000-£69,999, 13=70,000-£84,999, 14=£84,000-£99,999, 15=over £100,000; Education: 1=Degree level, 2=below degree level qualifications, 3=no qualifications; Religiosity scale: 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious; Politics scale: 0=left to 10=right; Class Origin: 0=working class, 1=middle class; Relationship status: 0=single, 1=in relationship; Universal Credit: 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant; IMD: 1=1st quartile, 2=2nd quartile, 3=3rd quartile, 4=4th quartile; Ethnicity: 0=Other, 1=White.

Model 2: Crime related factors

When crime related factors were introduced in Model 2, *victimisation* has no significant effect on either basic or ultimate punitiveness. The effect and significance of *fear of crime* (*How safe do you feel walking around in the area you live in after dark?*) is significant at the $p < .001$ level for both basic ($\beta = .090$) and ultimate punitiveness ($\beta = .101$) when introduced in Model 2, indicating that as fear increases so too does punitiveness. Fear of crime has very little effect on the socio-demographic factors in the model, with the exception of *income* for ultimate punitiveness ($\beta = .045$, $p < .05$) which becomes a significant factor. Whilst fear of crime appears to be a significant factor in Model 2, the R-Square change is small at .007 for basic punitiveness and .009 for ultimate punitiveness. The variance explained by Model 2 as a whole is 16% for basic punitiveness and 17.2% for ultimate punitiveness.

Model 3: Belief Systems

Model 3 introduces belief systems. *Neo-conservative values* has a significant effect at the $p < .001$ level for both tiers of punitiveness, with the strongest effect on basic punitiveness ($\beta = .684$), suggesting that as neo-conservative values increase, so too does support for both harsher sanctions and extreme sanctions. Notably, *neo-liberal values* only has a significant effect on ultimate punitiveness ($\beta = .157$, $p < .001$) indicating that as neo-liberal values increase, so too does support for extreme, permanent sanctions. The introduction of neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values has an interesting effect on *fear of crime*. Regarding basic punitiveness, the effect of *fear of crime* diminishes once *neo-conservative values* are introduced to the model; this suggests that neo-conservative values inflated the effect of fear of crime for basic punitiveness in Model 2. In contrast, for ultimate punitiveness, *fear of crime* in Model 3 remains significant at the $p < .001$ but with a reduced effect size ($\beta = .053$). This suggests that whilst neo-liberal values and neo-conservative values inflated the effect of fear of crime in Model 2, fear continues to remain a significant factor related to increased ultimate punitiveness.

The introduction of neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values has a notable effect on some socio-demographic factors for both tiers of punitiveness. *Gender* becomes significant for both tiers of punitiveness, but with the strongest effect on basic punitiveness ($\beta = .059$,

p<.001), with punitiveness increasing with being female. The effect of *age* diminishes for basic punitiveness once neo-conservative values are introduced, suggesting that neo-conservative values inflated the effects of age in Model 2. In contrast, the effect and significance of *age* increases for ultimate punitiveness (beta=-.101, p<.001) suggesting that support for extreme, permanent sanctions increases with younger age groups and that this is related to neo-conservative values.

Table 9.10: Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'Basic Punitiveness' (n=2,090)⁶⁷

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio-demographic factors⁶⁶				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	.028	.010	.059***	.057***
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	.072***	.076***	-.007	-.012
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.043*	.051*	.057***	.059***
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.103***	.098***	.007	.005
Religiosity (1=extremely...7=unextremely)	.085***	.084***	.061***	.059***
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.311***	.312***	.064***	.056**
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.093***	-.087***	-.040**	-.038**
Marital Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.048*	.047*	-.008	-.007
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	.010	.013	.018	.019
IMD (scale: 1=1 st quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	.013	.000	-.022	-.023
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.001	.002	.025	.024
Crime related				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.013	-.021	-.023
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.090***	.022	.020
Belief systems (high scores=more values)				
Neo-liberal values			.030	.035*
Neo-conservative values			.684***	.643***
Nostalgia (high score=more nostalgic)				
Social nostalgic values				.038*
Economic nostalgic values				.066***
Political nostalgic values				-.053**
R-square Value	.153***	.160***	.536***	.541***
Adjusted R-square	.149	.156	.533	.538
R-square change		.007	.376	.005

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

The effects of *education* diminish for basic punitiveness suggesting that neo-conservative values inflated the effects of education in the previous models, whilst for ultimate punitiveness the effects reduce somewhat but remain a relevant factor with support for extreme sanctions increasing with those with lower qualifications. The effects of *income*

⁶⁷ See page 230 for more detail on the n-size

increase with both tiers of punitiveness with a stronger effect on basic punitiveness (beta=.057, p<.001). The effects of *marital status* diminish for both tiers of punitiveness once *belief systems* are introduced to the model, whilst *class origin* reduced somewhat but remains significant at the p<.01 level for both tiers of punitiveness. The effects of those identifying as politically more conservative reduce substantially for both tiers of punitiveness but remains significant at the p<.001 level with a stronger effect on ultimate punitiveness (beta=.087). Finally, *ethnicity* (beta=.031, p<.05) becomes a significant factor for ultimate punitiveness suggesting that support for extreme, permanent sanctions increases with white ethnicity. Model 3 explains 53.6% of the variance (an increase of 37.6% from Model 2).

Table 9.11: Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'Ultimate Punitiveness' (2,090)⁶⁸

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio -demographic factors				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	.013	-.008	.035*	.032*
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	-.050*	-.046*	-.101***	-.104***
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.036	.045*	.047**	.053**
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.135***	.128***	.046**	.039*
Religiosity (1=extremely...7=unextremely)	.071***	.070***	.056***	.053***
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.353***	.354***	.087***	.076***
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.077***	-.070***	-.044**	-.039*
Marital Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.071***	.069***	.022	.023
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	.005	.009	.011	.013
IMD (scale: 1=1 st quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	.023	.009	-.012	-.017
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	.008	.011	.031*	.029
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.020	-.022	-.026
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.101***	.053***	.036*
Belief systems				
Neo-liberal values			.157***	.158***
Neo-conservative values			.542***	.473***
Nostalgia				
Social nostalgic values				.113***
Economic nostalgic values				.047*
Political nostalgic values				-.044*
R-square Value	.163***	.172***	.448***	.460***
Adjusted R-square	.159	.167	.445	.456
R-square change		.009	.276	.012

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

⁶⁸ See page 230 for detail on the n-size

Model 4: Nostalgia

When nostalgic values are entered in Model 4, all items appear to be relevant factors to both tiers of punitiveness, albeit with varying degrees of effect size and significance, suggesting that as nostalgia increases, so does punitiveness. *Social nostalgic values* (beta=.113, $p<.001$) has the strongest effect for ultimate punitiveness of all the nostalgic items. *Social nostalgic values* (beta=.038, $p<.05$) also appears to be a significant factor in regard to basic punitiveness, but with a much weaker effect. In contrast, *economic nostalgic values* (beta=.066, $p<.001$) has the strongest effect on basic punitiveness, whilst also relevant with a weaker effect for ultimate punitiveness (beta=.047, $p<.05$). Finally, *political nostalgic values* (beta=-.053, $p<.01$) has the strongest effect on basic punitiveness, with a slightly weaker effect on ultimate punitiveness (beta=-.044, $p<.05$).

The introduction of nostalgic values in Model 4 has the largest effect on ultimate punitiveness in comparison to basic punitiveness, with some notable changes to some of the other variables, whilst the other factors for basic punitiveness remain largely stable with the exception of belief systems. Firstly, *neo-conservative values* continues to have the strongest effect for both basic punitiveness (beta=.643, $p<.001$) and ultimate punitiveness (beta=.473, $p<.001$) once nostalgic values are introduced to the model, with the most notable effect on ultimate punitiveness which sees the largest effect size reduction. This suggests that neo-conservative values and social nostalgic values (as this has the strongest effect) may be related. *Neo-liberal values* continues to be strongly related to ultimate punitiveness (beta=.158, $p<.001$) remaining stable from Model 3, whilst *neo-liberal values* (beta=.035, $p<.05$) becomes a significant factor, with a very small effect, for basic punitiveness in Model 4. Considering the effects of nostalgic values on crime-related factors, there is very little change with the exception of the effect on *fear of crime* (beta=.036, $p<.05$) for ultimate punitiveness which reduces substantially. This suggests that nostalgic values (most likely social nostalgic values as this has the largest effect size) inflated the effects of fear of crime in the previous model. Finally, in consideration of the socio-demographic factors, there is very little change in regard to basic punitiveness with the exception of *politics*, which reduces in effect size and significance (beta=.056, $p<.01$). For ultimate punitiveness most of the socio-demographic factors remain largely stable with the exception of a reduction in effect size and significance for *class origin* (beta=-.039, $p<.05$) and *education* (beta=.039, $p<.05$),

whilst the effects of *ethnicity* diminish. *Nostalgic values* explains a greater amount of variance in ultimate punitiveness (R-square change = 1.2%) compared to basic punitiveness (R-square change = 0.5%). The total variance explained by Model 4 as a whole is 54.1% for basic punitiveness and 46% for ultimate punitiveness suggesting that the model is a better fit for basic punitiveness.

Table 9.12. Relevant statistically significant factors for tiered punitiveness towards rulebreakers (Model 4)

Variables	Basic Punitiveness	Ultimate Punitiveness
Female	*** (beta=.057)	* (beta=.032)
Age	X	*** (beta=-.104, younger age)
Higher Income	*** (beta=.059)	** (beta=.053)
Lower educational attainment	X	* (beta=.039)
Decreased religiosity	*** (beta=.059)	*** (beta=.053)
Political conservatism	** (beta=.056)	*** (beta=.076)
Working Class Origin	** (beta=-.038)	* (beta=-.039)
Marital Status	X	X
Universal Credit	X	X
Victimisation	X	X
Fear of crime	X	* (beta=.036)
Neo-liberal values	* (beta=.035)	*** (beta=.158)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.643)	*** (beta=.473)
Social nostalgic values	* (beta=.038)	*** (beta=.113)
Economic nostalgic values	*** (beta=.066)	* (beta=.047)
Political nostalgic values	** (beta=-.053)	* (beta=-.044)
R-Square Value	54.1%	46%

* = p<.05, ** = p<.01, *** = p<.001

Summary

Analyses suggests that both tiers of punitiveness are largely driven by neo-conservative values, with a stronger effect on basic punitiveness, shown by the large increase in R-square values in Model 3 (37.6% for basic punitiveness and 27.6% for ultimate punitiveness) and a bigger effect size. Whilst the findings for both tiers are similar in some respects, there are some notable differences. Factors relating to only ultimate punitiveness appear to be younger age, lower educational attainment and fear of crime. Additionally, neo-liberal values and social nostalgic values have a much stronger effect on support for extreme, permanent sanctions. The model explains a greater amount of variance in *basic punitiveness*, which also appears to more strongly related to being female, economic nostalgic values and political nostalgic values. Table 9.12 shows the statistically significant factors, and the effect sizes in brackets, related to basic and ultimate punitiveness.

Normality, linearity, homoscedasticity and outliers

The histograms (Figure 9.3 and Figure 9.4) shows that the normally distributed errors assumption is met with the means (0.02 for Basic Punitiveness and 0.03 for Ultimate Punitiveness) very close to zero for both tiers of punitiveness. The Normal Probability Plots (Figures 9.5 and 9.6) show the data lie in a reasonably straight line suggesting no major deviations from normality for both tiers.

Figure 9.3. Histogram for basic punitiveness Figure 9.4. Histogram for ultimate punitiveness

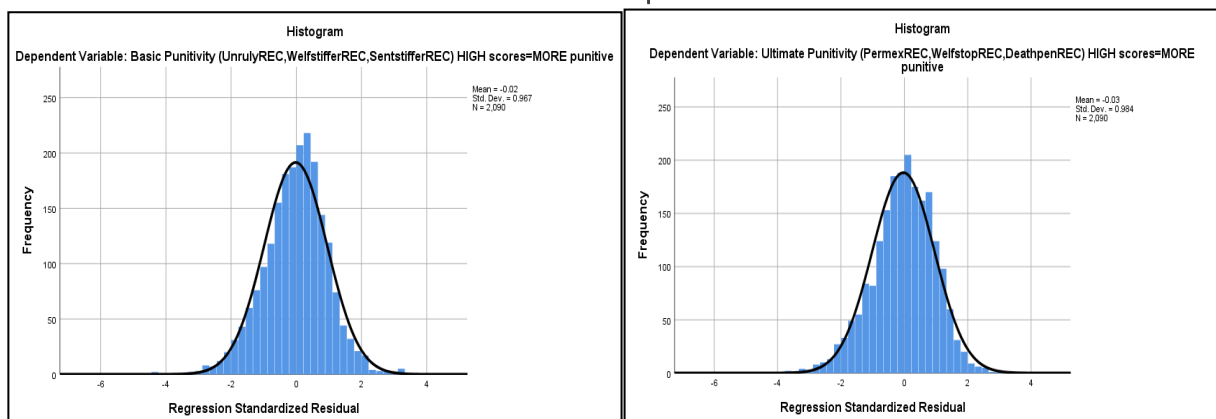


Figure 9.5. Normal P-P Plot for basic punitiveness

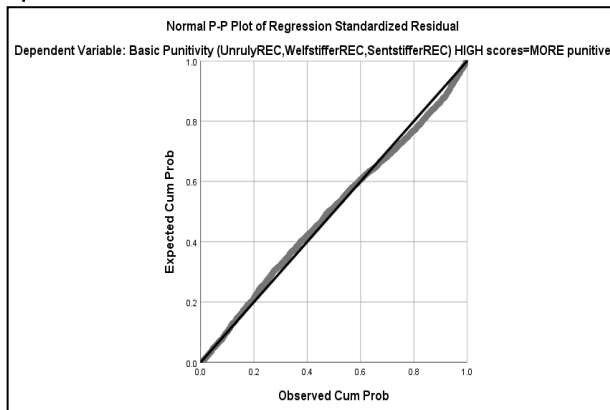
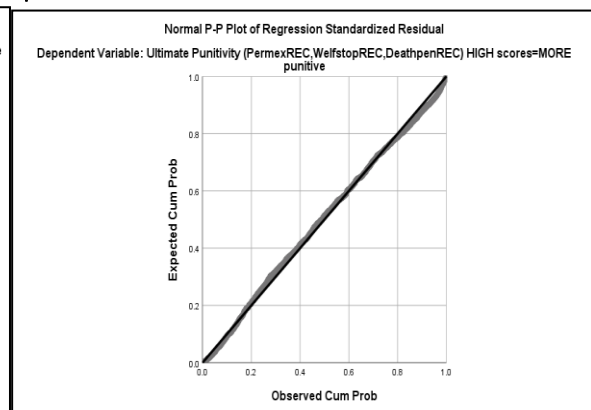


Figure 9.6. Normal P-P Plot for ultimate punitiveness



Casewise diagnostics

For basic punitiveness, casewise diagnostics shows that 14 cases (0.2% of the sample) have standardized residual values below -3 or above +3, which is below the 1% which would otherwise indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016; Field, 2018). Further investigation of these 14 cases suggests that no cases are have a Cook's distance value⁶⁹ greater than 1 with the largest value of .014. Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances⁷⁰ shows 64 cases have Mahalanobis distances greater than 42.312 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013) for both tiers of punitiveness. Further examination of the DFBeta and DfFit statistics for the independent variables, which indicate problematic cases having an undue influence on the model parameters, highlight no concerns with no cases close to 1 (Field, 2018). In relation to ultimate punitiveness, casewise diagnostics shows that 10 cases (0.17% of the sample) have standardized residual values below -3 or above +3, which is below the 1% which would indicate concern. Further investigation of these 10 cases suggests that no cases have a Cook's distance greater than 1, with the largest value of .014 suggesting that no cases are having an undue influence of the model. Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances shows 63 cases have Mahalanobis distances greater than 42.312 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013) for both tiers of punitiveness. Further examination of the DFBeta and DfFit statistics for the independent

⁶⁹ Cook's distance indicates whether a case has an undue influence on the results with values above 1 suggesting a potential problem (Pallant, 2016).

⁷⁰ Inspection of the Mahalanobis distances allow identification of outliers (Pallant, 2016). To identify which cases are outliers, the critical chi-square value was determined using 16 independent variables as the degrees of freedom (Pallant, 2016) from the critical values chi-square table and an alpha level of .001 (Tabachnick and Fidell, 2013: 10).

variables, which indicate problematic cases having an undue influence on the model parameters, highlight no concerns with no cases close to 1 (Field, 2018).

Collinearity Diagnostics

No preliminary concerns were raised with multicollinearity by viewing the correlation matrix of all dependent and independent variables for both tiers of punitiveness. This shows with no correlations between independent variables are greater than .9 with the largest between political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values ($r=.509$). The largest correlation between both tiers of punitiveness and the independent variables was with neo-conservative values ($r=.718$, $p<.001$ for basic punitiveness and $r=.624$, $p<.001$ for ultimate punitiveness). All variance inflation factors (VIFs) are well below 10 which would indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the highest 1.932 (Economic nostalgic values) in any of the equations. No Tolerance values were below .10 which would also indicate concerns (Pallant, 2016) with the lowest value of .518 (Economic nostalgic values), and the standard errors are low (highest .049 for universal credit in Model 2 for basic punitiveness and .044 for universal credit for ultimate punitiveness). The average VIF in model 4 is 1.39 is also not substantially more than 1 (Field, 2018), therefore suggesting no concerns with multicollinearity.

9.6. Developing a Structural Equation Model for Tiered Punitiveness

Structural Equation Modelling takes a hypothesis testing approach using a series of regression equations, modeled pictorially, to assess the concepts theorized (Byrne, 2016). Basic punitiveness (Figure 9.7), ultimate punitiveness (Figure 9.8) and collective punitiveness (Figure 9.9) have been modelled following the multiple regression models applied in the previous sections of this chapter. These models only include the conceptual variables, as not all of the socio-demographic variables are suitable for linear regression, allowing a focus on the value-based variables. Included independent variables are social nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, political nostalgic values, neo-liberal values and neo-conservative values. Figure 9.7 and Figure 9.8 below show Basic Punitiveness and Ultimate Punitiveness respectively. The models show specified regression paths from social nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values and political nostalgic values to both neo-liberal values and neo-conservative values, and then regression paths from neo-liberal values and

neo-conservative values to first Basic Punitiveness and then Ultimate Punitiveness. A regression path is also specified from social nostalgic values to both basic and ultimate punitiveness. Both models show statistically significant regression paths ($p < .001$) between all of the variables in the models. Both models fit the data well, with reference to the CFI (.997) and the RMSEA (.059)⁷¹ for Basic Punitiveness and the CFI (.998) and the RMSEA (.039) for Ultimate Punitiveness.

As shown by the diagrams (Figure 9.7 and Figure 9.8) the Basic Punitiveness model explains a great amount of variance (52 percent) than Ultimate Punitiveness (43 percent). The models suggest that social nostalgic values is positively associated with neo-liberal values (standardized coefficient = .30) and more strongly with neo-conservative values (standardized coefficient = .47). This suggests that social nostalgia, that is a sense of sadness about local and national change, is associated with attitudes supportive of the free market, reduced state intervention and privatization (neo-liberal values) and a desire for social order, traditional values and authoritarianism (neo-conservative values). Additionally, whilst social nostalgic values is positively associated with both Basic Punitiveness (standardized coefficient = .06) and Ultimate Punitiveness (standardized coefficient = .13), it is much more relevant to Ultimate Punitiveness. A sense of sadness about local and national change is more strongly associated with support for specific extreme sanctions than support for general non-specific sanctions. Economic nostalgic values is negatively associated with neo-liberal values (standardized coefficient = -.23) but positively associated with neo-conservative values (standardized coefficient = .16). This suggests that those who agree that profit dominates society, the market has increased inequality and that local and national losses occurred through the closure of traditional industries (economic nostalgia) are less likely to support neo-liberal ideals of the free market, reduced state intervention and privatization but are more supportive of the neo-conservative themes of social order, traditional values and authoritarianism. Finally, political nostalgic values are negatively associated with both neo-liberal values (standardized coefficient = -.29) and neo-conservative values (standardized coefficient = -.26) suggesting that those in agreement that Margaret Thatcher has had a

⁷¹ The CFI (Comparative Fit Index) should be $>.95$ to represent a good fitting model and the RMSEA (Root Mean Square Error of Approximation) values $<.06$ indicate a good fit between the hypothesized model and the data (Byrne, 2016).

negative impact on communities and the quality of ordinary people’s lives (political nostalgia) are less likely to hold neo-conservative values and neo-liberal values.

Turning the attention now to the regression paths between neo-liberal values and neo-conservative values and punitiveness. The models suggest that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on both tiers of punitiveness but is more strongly associated with Basic Punitiveness (standardized co-efficient = .67) than Ultimate Punitiveness (standardized coefficient = .49). Support for social order, traditional values and authoritarianism is more strongly associated with support for general, non-specific sanctions for rulebreakers than with support for specific, extreme sanctions. Whereas neo-liberal values has a stronger association with Ultimate Punitiveness (standardized coefficient = .19) than Basic Punitiveness (standardized coefficient = .05). This suggests that support for the free market, reduced state intervention and privatization is more strongly associated with support for specific, extreme sanctions.

Figure 9.7. Structural Equation Model of Basic Punitiveness (n=5,781)

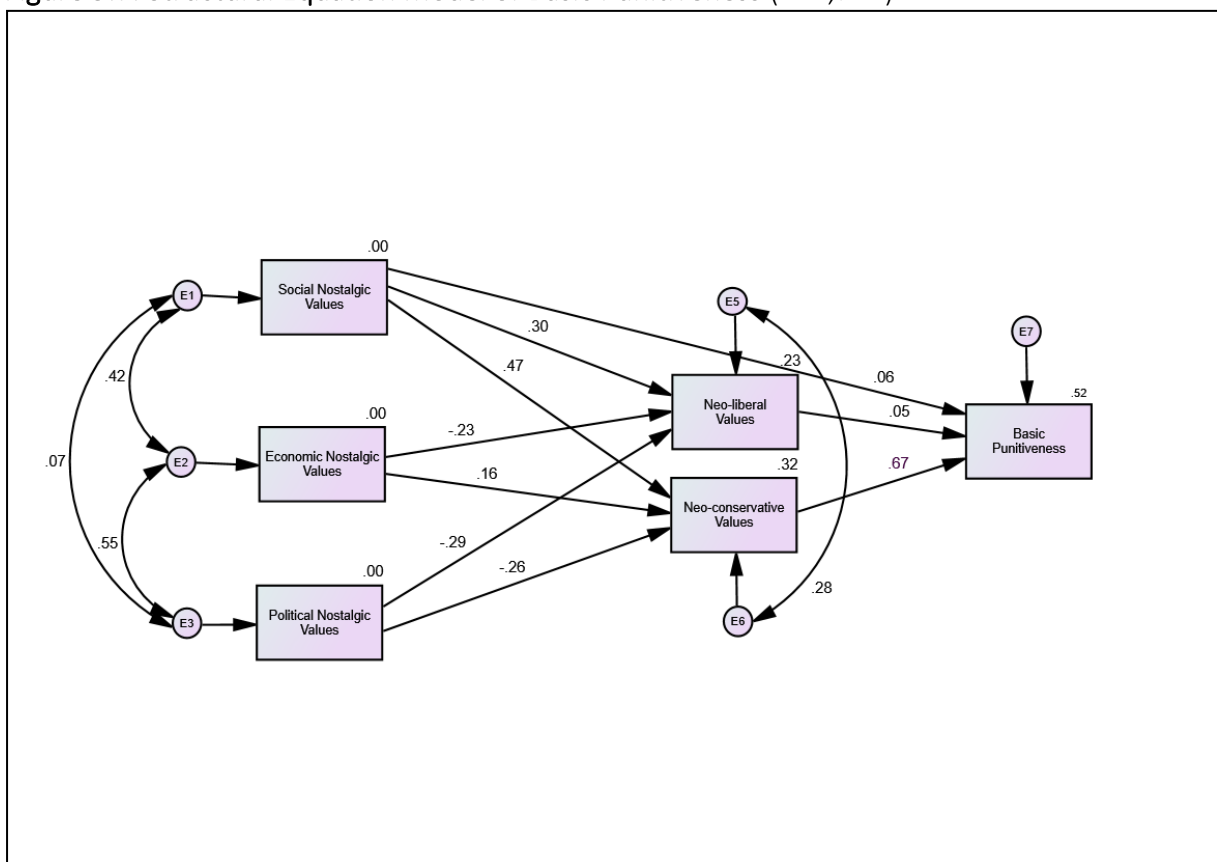
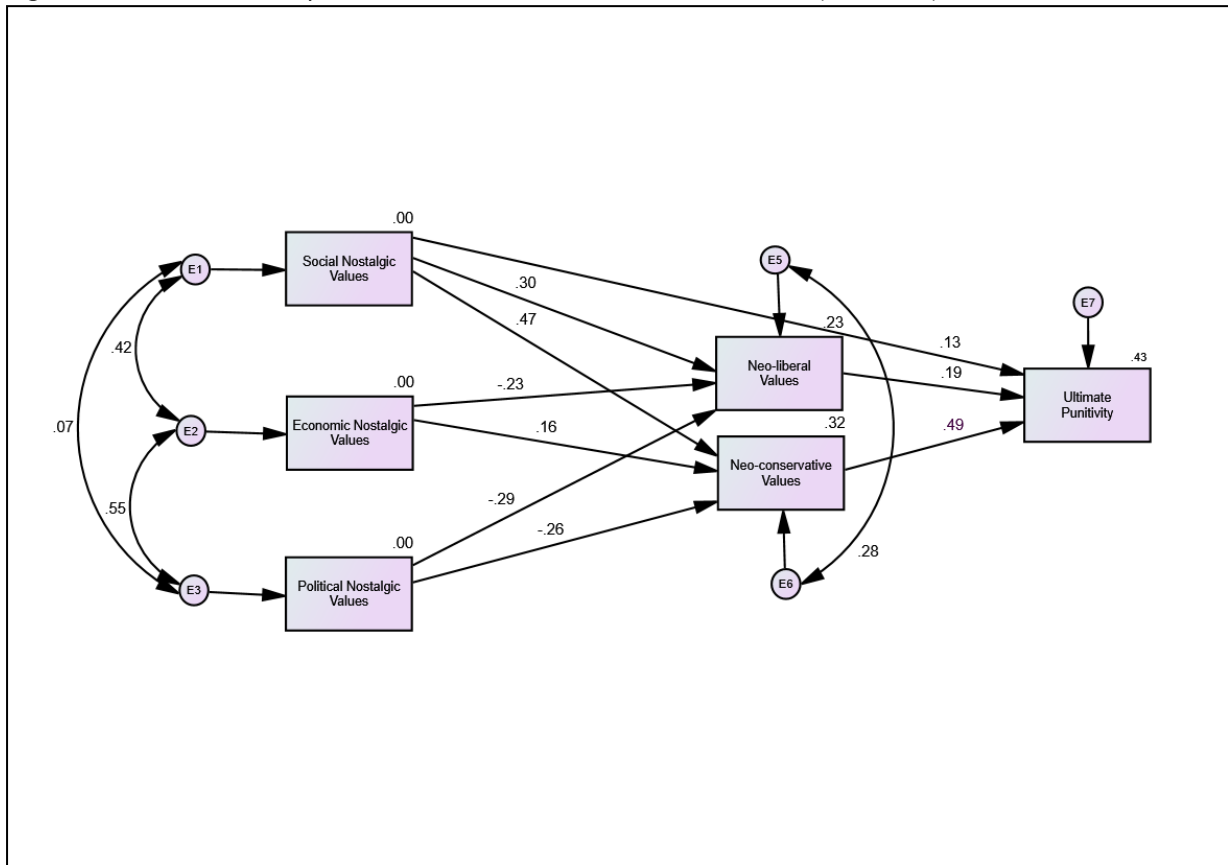


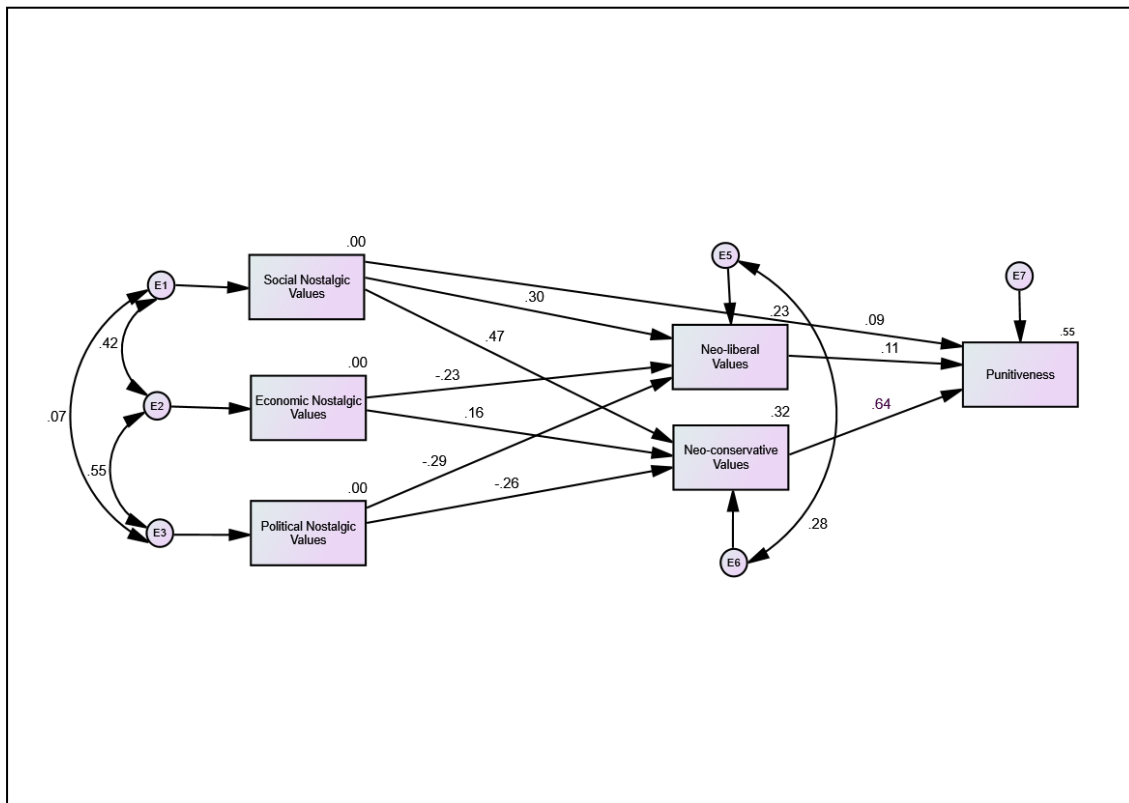
Figure 9.8. Structural Equation Model of Ultimate Punitiveness (n=5,781)



The Collective Punitiveness Model (Figure 9.9), which incorporates all variables from both basic and ultimate punitiveness models, shows statistically significant regression paths ($p < .001$) between all of the variables in the models. The model fits the data well, with reference to the CFI (.997) and the RMSEA (.058)⁷². The variance explained by the model is 55 percent, with social nostalgic values (standardized coefficient = .09), neo-liberal values (standardized coefficient = .11) and neo-conservative values (standardized coefficient = .64) all associated with Collective Punitiveness.

⁷² The CFI (Comparative Fit Index) should be $>.95$ to represent a good fitting model and the RMSEA (Root Mean Square Error of Approximation) values $<.06$ indicate a good fit between the hypothesized model and the data (Byrne, 2016).

Figure 9.9. Structural Equation Model of Collective Punitiveness (5,781)



Discussion

First, in consideration of basic and ultimate punitiveness models. The findings suggest that support for generally harsher sanctions for those who break the rules is largely associated with support for social order, traditional values and authoritarianism. Interestingly, support for specific, extreme sanctions appears to be associated with a greater range of factors suggesting that it is a more complex attitude. Again, support for social order, traditional values and authoritarianism has the biggest influence on ultimate punitiveness, however, neo-liberal values and social nostalgic values also appear to have an important influence. Neo-liberal values is operationalized here as a belief in the power of the market, anti-taxation and reduced state intervention and promotes individualism and self-reliance. It suggests that the market works for everyone and people should be able to look after themselves. Findings here then suggest that there is a relationship between these neo-liberal ideals and attitudes supportive of extreme sanctions for rulebreakers. Social nostalgic values refers to feelings of sadness about local and national change. People who experience higher levels of social nostalgia are also more likely to want to sanction people who break the rules very harshly. The lower variance explained by the ultimate punitiveness model also suggest that extreme

attitudes are harder to predict, at least by the concepts used in this study. The Collective Punitiveness model incorporates all of the basic and ultimate punitiveness items into one variable. This shows that neo-conservative values has by far the largest effect on general punitiveness and that the model explains 55 percent of the variance in punitiveness. What this shows is that using all items together to measure punitiveness as a discrete concept does not allow us to tease out the differences in complex attitudes.

Previous criminological research has generally examined punitive attitudes towards lawbreakers through a combination of numerous questions; this mostly uses either support for stiffer sentences, support for the death penalty, or occasionally both. King and Maruna (2009) used a punitiveness scale containing eight questions which included *With most offenders, we need to 'condemn more and understand less'*, *My general view towards offenders is that they should be treated harshly*, and *We should bring back the death penalty for serious crimes*. Roberts and Indermaur (2007) operationalised punitiveness using three questions, *The death penalty should be the punishment for murder*, *People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences* and *Judges should reflect public opinion about crimes when sentencing criminals*. Spiranovic et al. (2012) used a punitive scale of seven items, which included *People who break the law should be give stiffer sentences*. Useem et al. (2003) explored punitiveness towards criminal offenders through *support of the death penalty*, *Courts in this area do not deal harshly enough with criminals*, *Spending too little money to halt the rising crime rate* and *Spending too little on law enforcement*. Costelloe et al. (2009) operationalised punitiveness through support for a range of punitive policies including the *Death penalty for juveniles who murder*, *Send repeat juvenile offenders to adult court*, *Lock up more juvenile offenders*, *Make sentences more severe for all crimes* and *Limit appeals to death sentences*. Finally, Gerber and Jackson (2016) operationalised punitiveness by using the single-item *People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences*.

Research exploring the hardening of attitudes towards welfare claimants has generally used a range of questions exploring people's views of the welfare system, of welfare claimants or the extent of inequality. Taylor-Gooby and Martin (2008) used *The government should spend more on welfare for the poor*. Sefton (2005) used a range of questions including *If welfare benefits weren't so generous, people would learn to stand on their own two feet*, *Many people*

who get social security don't really deserve any help and Most people on the dole are fiddling in one way or another. Schofield and Butterworth (2015) used *People who receive welfare benefits should be under more obligation to find work, Around here most unemployed people could find a job if they really wanted to, Welfare benefits make people lazy and dependent and Most people getting welfare are trying to get a job.* There is little research exploring public attitudes towards welfare claimants who break the rules. Baumberg et al. (2012) examined respondents' estimates of 'claiming falsely' and 'committing fraud' to determine the extent to which claimants were seen as undeserving or deserving. Bamfield and Horton (2009) explored attitudes between benefit fraud and tax evasion, and Marriott (2017) asked *People who commit welfare fraud deserve to be punished.* The British Social Attitudes survey 2000 (Hills, 2001) explored the extent to which respondents thought that lone parents should have their benefits reduced should they fail to attend an interview when asked.

Finally, there is much less empirical research exploring public attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils than for the other two groups of rulebreakers. The majority of studies have surveyed teachers, pupils and parents. In 2011, a YouGov survey asked both teachers and children, *Teachers should be allowed to be tougher when it comes to discipline, Corporal punishments, such as the cane or slipper, should be reintroduced for very bad behaviour, Is smacking or caning children an acceptable form of discipline by teachers and Expelling/suspending children is an appropriate form of discipline by teachers* (Thompson, 2011). The NFER (2012) asked primary and secondary school teachers whether it was *reasonable for teachers to exclude pupils for a fixed term for poor behaviour and reasonable to formally exclude pupils permanently for reasons of poor behaviour.* Grasmick et al. (1992) asked adults their level of support for corporal punishment use ' *if the child talked back to other children; used obscene language; deliberately inflicted injury on another child; skipped school without good reason; and, stole something from school or another child*'. Finally, the Gallup Poll (1974) explored public attitudes towards pupils who fail to comply with school rules by asking, ' *What should be done with a high school student who refuses to obey his teachers?*'.

Analyses in this chapter suggest two things. One, that attitudes towards 'rulebreakers' can be studied across different areas and that there is some value in doing so. Whilst specificity

allows us to examine complex attitudes in more detail, widening the focus has allowed an insight here into how political values can influence our views on the treatment of a range of people who break the rules. Two, that Tiered Punitiveness allows us to tease out the differences in divergent and complex attitudes towards rulebreakers. Tiered punitiveness appears to show that more extreme attitudes are influenced by a greater range of factors than more general attitudes.

9.7. What does this study add to the theories of punitiveness?

A relatively large body of empirical criminological research has found that punitiveness is strongly related to factors external to crime. King and Maruna (2009) found that punitiveness is strongly related to generational anxiety, expressed through concerns about loss of discipline and respect amongst young people in society. Tyler and Boeckmann (1997) found that the deterioration of social values (authoritarianism, dogmatism and liberalism) and family social bonds were key predictors of punitiveness. Moral decline (Unnever and Cullen, 2010), a disciplinarian outlook (Hough et al., 1988), conservative beliefs (King and Maruna, 2009; Costelloe et al., 2009; Unnever and Cullen, 2010), economic beliefs (Kornhauser, 2015; Hogan et al., 2005; Costelloe et al., 2009), economic anxieties (King and Maruna, 2009) and Right-Wing Authoritarianism (Gerber and Jackson, 2016; Palasinski and Shortland, 2017) have also been found to be significantly related to punitiveness towards offenders. Consistent with these previous findings, this study contributes to this body of work by suggesting that criminological punitiveness is strongly related to factors external to crime. Primarily, this study suggests that this can be explained largely by neo-conservative values and to a lesser extent neo-liberal values and nostalgia when measuring support for general and specific extreme sanctions together. Additionally, this study proposes that there is value in examining these two measures separately.

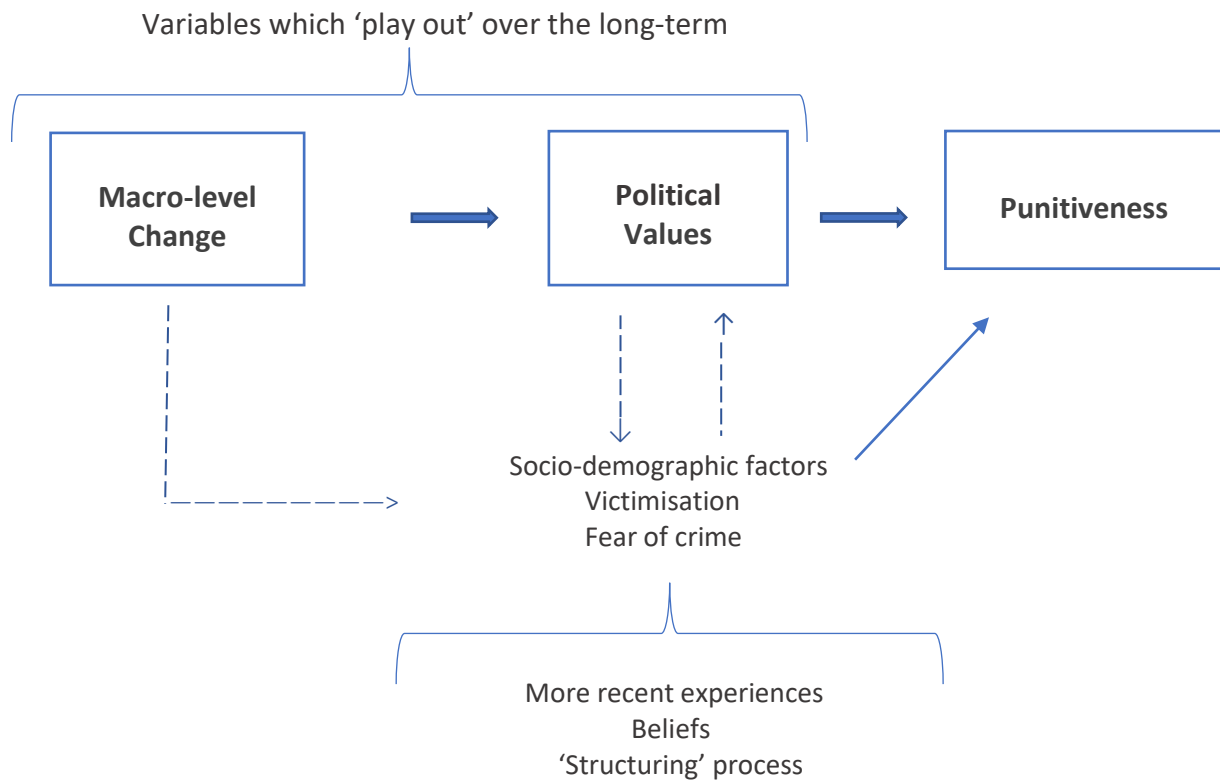
This study also expands criminological punitiveness into examining attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants and school pupils. Previous research has found that less support for welfare is related to conservative beliefs (Taylor-Gooby and Martin, 2008; Deeming, 2015), social values, perceptions and beliefs (Deeming, 2015), self-serving attitudes (Schofield and Butterworth, 2015), subjective beliefs (Baumberg et al., 2012; Bamfield and Horton, 2009), Right-Wing Authoritarianism (Marriott, 2017), and deservingness (Baumberg

et al., 2012). Firstly, this study has designed two new measures to assess punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. Secondly, this study contributes to this field by suggesting that punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants is related to neo-conservative values, neo-liberal values, economic nostalgic values and political nostalgic values. Again, this study proposes that a deeper insight into punitive attitudes can be gained through studying these measures separately as they tap into different forms of punitiveness. Thirdly, this study contributes to the limited welfare literature, which has sought to explore socio-demographic factors related to welfare attitudes.

Finally, this study also expands punitiveness into exploring attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils. There are very few studies that have sought to analyse public attitudes towards school pupils. Previous findings in America have found that attitudes supportive of the use of corporal punishment are related to Evangelical Protestants (Owen and Wagner, 2006), southern culture, rural states, religion, republican political affiliation (Font and Gershoff, 2017), being male, being older, fundamental protestants and lower educational attainment (Grasmick et al., 1992). This study has designed two new measures to explore attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils. Contributing to this previous work, this study suggests that punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils is related neo-conservative values, neo-liberal values and social nostalgic values, although again these attitudes can be better understood by examining these separately as each question appears to tap into different values. Additionally, this study contributes to the existing literature through exploring socio-demographic factors relating to punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils.

Punitiveness towards rulebreakers appears to be rooted in political values, and political values are related to feelings about macro-level change (nostalgia) (Figure 10.1). There is also an interplay with socio-demographic factors, more recent experiences and the 'structuring processes' that form these attitudes. This macro-level change appears to stem from feelings of nostalgia about social and economic change. Political attitudes take the form of neo-conservatism (support for state authority, traditional values and a desire for social order) and neo-liberalism (support for the free market, competition and profit), with neo-conservatism having the greatest effect on punitiveness. Again, political values interplay with various socio-demographic factors, experiences and structuring processes.

Figure 10.1. Theoretical Model of Punitiveness



9.8. Summary

The analysis in this chapter has undertaken a range of tasks. Firstly, attitudinal differences between the different rulebreakers were examined. This chapter commenced by connecting chapters 6 to 8 together by examining the variation in punitive attitudes towards the different groups of rulebreakers (Section 9.2). Analyses show that the model as a whole explains the largest amount of variance in punitive attitudes towards lawbreakers (49.7%; 40.2% of the variance in school punitivity; and 33% of variance in welfare punitivity 33.3%). As the theoretical framework for the models is largely shaped by a criminological foundation this is perhaps not too surprising. There also appears to be some similarities in the factors related to all three groups of rulebreakers. Belief systems has the most notable effect on punitive attitudes towards all three groups of rulebreakers shown by the increase in R-Square value for Model 3 for each group, with the largest effect on rulebreaking school pupils (30.4%). Neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on all groups of rulebreakers, with the strongest effect on rulebreaking school pupils. Whilst, neo-liberal values also appears to be related to all three rulebreaking groups with the strongest effect on criminal rulebreakers.

In addition to the relevance of beliefs systems towards each group of rulebreaker, punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils appears to also be related to social nostalgic values and higher income. Welfare punitivity appears to be influenced by political nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, being female, higher income, those not receiving universal credit, increased political conservatism, younger age, working class origin and lower IMD. Whilst law punitivity appears to be related to social nostalgic values, increased political conservatism, younger age, lower education attainment, working class origin, economic nostalgic values, being in a marital type relationship, political nostalgic values, fear of crime and being female. School punitivity appears to be related to the least number of significant factors (five), whereas welfare and law punitivity appear to have a more complex mix of factors with twelve and thirteen significant factors respectively.

Secondly, section 9.3 then progressed to examine collective punitiveness by combining the three distinct groups of rulebreakers into one rulebreaker group. Again, unsurprisingly, punitive attitudes towards the collective rulebreaker are largely driven by neo-conservative values illustrated by the large increase in R-square value in Model 3 (38.1%) and the effect size of neo-conservative values ($\beta = .620$). Additional relevant factors appear to be neo-liberal values, social and economic nostalgic values, self-identified political conservatism, decreased religiosity, higher income, political nostalgic values, being female, younger age and lower-class origin.

Thirdly, section 9.4 introduced 'tiered punitiveness' exploring whether there is a difference in drivers between 'basic punitiveness', that is support for harsher, non-specific punishments, and ultimate punitiveness, that is support for specific, extreme, permanent sanctions. Analysis suggests that whilst neo-conservative values has a very strong effect on both tiers of punitiveness, it stands out as *the* predominant factor in explaining basic punitiveness, as seen by the large effect size in comparison to the other factors which are all small, despite being significant. Ultimate punitiveness on the other hand appears to be driven by a wider range of factors with a relatively strong influence in addition to neo-conservative values, most notably, neo-liberal values, younger age and social nostalgic values. This suggests that ultimate punitiveness is influenced by a greater complexity of factors than basic punitiveness.

Section 9.5 then presented the Structural Equation Models for basic punitiveness and ultimate punitiveness focusing on the values-based variables. The findings suggest that support for generally harsher sanctions for those who break the rules is largely associated with neo-conservative values, that is support for social order, traditional values and authoritarianism. Whilst support for specific, extreme sanctions appears to be associated with a greater range of factors suggesting that it is a more complex attitude. Support for social order, traditional values and authoritarianism also has the biggest influence on ultimate punitiveness, however, neo-liberal values and social nostalgic values also appear to have an important influence. Neo-liberal values, that is a belief in the power of the market, anti-taxation and reduced state intervention promoting individualism and self-reliance, appears to be important in understanding attitudes supportive of extreme sanctions for rulebreakers. Additionally, people who experience higher levels of social nostalgia are also more likely to want to sanction people who break the rules very harshly. The lower variance explained by the ultimate punitiveness model also suggest that extreme attitudes are harder to predict, at least by the concepts used in this study. Sections 9.5 concluded by presenting the Structural Equation Model for collective punitiveness, which incorporated all of the basic and ultimate punitiveness items into one variable. This analysis showed how examining punitiveness as one discrete attitude does not allow the teasing out of differences in complex attitudes.

The chapter concluded by reflecting on the contributions this study has made to the theories of punitiveness. This study has examined punitiveness from a multi-disciplinary perspective suggesting that the root of punitiveness towards rulebreakers across the three systems are rooted in political values and that these values are related to nostalgia about social and economic change. The chapter concluded by presenting a model of punitiveness.

Part 5: What is the Relationship between Political Attitudes and Punitiveness?

Chapter Ten: Conclusion

10.1. Introduction

The aim of this thesis has been to explore the prevalence of punitive attitudes towards ‘rulebreakers’ in contemporary British society drawing on data from a new national survey of 5,781 respondents. In doing so, it focuses on the relationship between punitiveness and a range of political and social values. This exploration has expanded ‘punitiveness’ into the welfare system and education system with a view to answering the following research questions: What is the relationship between punitive attitudes and political attitudes? How prevalent are punitive attitudes towards ‘rulebreakers’ of the law, the welfare system, and education system evident in British society today? How do punitive attitudes vary towards different groups of ‘rulebreakers’?

Part One placed the thesis in context by reviewing the literature most relevant to the operationalisation of punitiveness in this study towards the three different rulebreakers. Part Two focused on exploring long-term trends in government policies, political discourse and public attitudes towards the distinct groups of rulebreakers considering the extent to which these three areas have become more punitive over the last four decades. Part One and Part Two formed the basis for the development of the survey questions and research detailed in Part Three; this presented a review of the cognitive interviewing literature, the pre-testing of the newly designed questions through cognitive interviewing, the final draft of the survey questions, and the pilot survey. Part Four commenced by placing the quantitative analysis into context by presenting the descriptive statistic and basis analyses for the battery of questions, prior to presenting the construction of the conceptual variables to be used in the subsequent analyses. The remainder of Part Four examined punitive public attitudes in relation to the distinct groups of rulebreakers before moving on to consider punitiveness towards rulebreakers as a collective group. Part Four concluded by introducing ‘tiered punitiveness’ suggesting that ‘punitiveness’ is not a discrete attitude but has different forms,

identified here as 'basic punitiveness' and 'ultimate punitiveness'. This chapter begins with a summary of each chapter, before reflecting on the empirical, methodological and theoretical contributions of this thesis, in addition to considering its limitations.

10.2. Summary

'Punitiveness', operationalised by analysing attitudinal data from surveys measuring public support for harsher sentences in the criminal justice system, has an established history in criminological research over the past few decades. Public demands for harsher sentences for offenders have become customary in many countries across the world (Gerber and Jackson, 2016). 'Populist punitiveness' is a feature of criminal justice over the past 40 years and has influenced sentencing change observed in most Western countries resulting in increases in prison populations (Bottoms, 1995:18). Bottoms (1995) proposes that punitiveness appeals to some politicians due to their belief that prison reduces crime through general deterrence and incapacitation, increases society's moral consensus against certain behaviours and satisfies the electorate. 'Populist punitiveness' reflects the idea of politicians 'tapping into, and using for their own purposes, what they believe to be the public's generally punitive stance' (Bottoms, 1995:40), therefore appealing to the public and politicians alike. Hough and Walker (1988:203) suggest that punitive is 'shorthand to indicate a preference for heavy sentences' irrespective of the basis of this punitiveness.

Empirical research in criminology has sought to understand public punitiveness. Whilst levels of education (King and Maruna, 2009; Spironovic et al., 2012; Tyler and Boeckmann, 1997; Costelloe et al., 2009) and gender (Hough et al., 1988; Useem et al., 2003; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Spironovic et al., 2012) emerge as relevant predictors of punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers, socio-demographic factors alone appear to be weak predictors of punitive attitudes. Fear of crime (Hough et al., 2005; Sprott and Doob, 1997; Spironovic et al., 2012), fear of victimisation (Costelloe et al., 2009) and perceptions of crime (Spironovic et al., 2012) have been found to be relevant factors increasing punitiveness towards offenders, albeit with a small effect. Whereas victimisation has consistently been found not to be a relevant factor in punitiveness (King and Maruna, 2009; Unnever et al., 2007; Hough and Moxon, 1985; Costelloe et al., 2009; Kleck and Baker Jackson, 2016). Beliefs that there has been a loss of discipline and respect in society (King and Maruna, 2009), loss of

social cohesion (Tyler and Boeckmann, 1997) and moral decline (Unnever and Cullen, 2010) appear to be more relevant factors than crime related factors in understanding punitive attitudes. Additionally, conservative beliefs (King and Maruna, 2009; Unnever and Cullen, 2010; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007), right-wing authoritarianism (Gerber and Jackson, 2016) and economic beliefs (Kornhauser, 2015; Costelloe et al., 2009; King and Maruna, 2009; Hanslmaier and Baier, 2016) emerge as more relevant factors in understanding punitive attitudes towards offenders than socio-demographic factors and crime experiences.

‘Punitiveness’ has not previously been operationalized in welfare survey research.

Exploration of welfare attitudes has generally been assessed in Britain through analyzing longitudinal data from the British Social Attitudes Survey measured by responses to questions regarding the welfare system and individuals in receipt of welfare. The majority of studies to date do not specifically examine public attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants, but instead explore attitudes more generally. This literature generally shows a trend in attitudes towards welfare recipients hardening over time. Very few studies have sought to explore the relevance of socio-demographic factors to public attitudes towards welfare claimants. Age (Taylor-Gooby, 2008; Deeming, 2015; Baumberg Geiger, 2017), education (Taylor-Gooby and Martin, 2008; Deeming, 2015; Baumberg Geiger, 2017) and occupational class (Deeming, 2015) emerge as relevant factors in explaining punitive attitudes towards welfare and welfare claimants, albeit explaining a small amount of variance in attitudes. Those holding conservative beliefs have been found to be less supportive of increased spending on the welfare system and welfare benefits (Taylor-Gooby, 2008; Deeming, 2015). Interactional effects between political party support and class have also been found to be relevant in explaining attitudes towards welfare, with conservative supporters and those belonging to the professional class being less supportive of welfare (Deeming, 2015). Beliefs about the value of the welfare state and welfare claimants are also found to be relevant in explaining attitudes; those who hold negative beliefs are less supportive of welfare (Schofield and Butterworth, 2015). Subjective beliefs about the reciprocal contribution of welfare claimants has also been found to be related to welfare attitudes (Bamfield and Horton, 2009; Baumberg et al., 2012). Finally, deservingness perceptions have been found to influence support for welfare with those who perceive claimants as undeserving holding less supportive views (Baumberg et al., 2012).

The examination of public attitudes towards school pupils has received very little attention. Indeed, there is very little empirical research exploring public attitudes towards school pupils at all. Much of the research to date has explored teachers, parents and/or children's attitudes generally to school behaviour and discipline, rather than members of the public. What the available literature does show is that teachers, parents or the general public, generally support the use of stricter punishments for school indiscipline (Elton, 1989, YouGov, 2011; White et al., 2013). The most relevant literature to this study is recent research in America, which has explored public attitudes towards the use of corporal punishment due to its continued use in some US states (Grasmick et al., 1992; Owen and Wagner, 2006; Font and Gershoff, 2017). However, much of this research focuses on state-level data and factors rather than individual attitudes to its usage. Corporal punishment has been found to receive more support in South American states where religion (Font and Gershoff, 2017; Grasmick et al., 1992; Owen and Wagner, 2006), southern culture, rural states, political affiliation, higher income (Font and Gershoff, 2017), being male and older (Grasmick et al., 2012) were found to be predictive of corporal punishment use, whilst higher education was found to be related to lower support (Font and Gershoff, 2017; Grasmick et al., 1992). In Britain, whilst the majority of parents and children disagreed with corporal punishment use in schools, both groups were in agreement that teachers should be allowed to be tougher towards school indiscipline (YouGov, 2011). Support for the use of school exclusions remains high across all groups surveyed, although questions did not differentiate between temporary and permanent exclusions (YouGov, 2011).

Political discourse and policies within the criminal justice system over the last forty years demonstrate an increasing trend of punitiveness (Newburn, 2007; Hay and Farrall, 2014). In the 1970s, the prison population began to cause concerns (Cavadino and Dignan, 2007). Despite this concern, there was an attempt to restrain the prison population through progressive measures (Jennings et al., 2017a). This approach generally prevailed until the early 1990s, when legislation took a punitive turn (Farrall et al., 2016). At this time the prison population began to increase and remains at high levels today (Jennings et al., 2017a). Punitive discourse was ramped up by Margaret Thatcher in her election campaign in 1979, despite her subsequent legislation not employing the same tone (Hay and Farrall, 2014). This discourse however appears to have set the trend for subsequent political leaders to continue

with a tough on crime discourse, which endures today (Farrall and Jennings, 2016). Trends in public attitudes towards lawbreakers using British Social Attitudes survey questions dating back to the early 1980s were also analysed. Analysis shows that support for stiffer sentences for lawbreakers remains high, although this has reduced substantially in recent years. Younger age groups appear to be more punitive than they were in the late 1980s until around 2016, when punitive attitudes began to decrease overall. Whilst support for the death penalty appears to have decreased for all age groups over time.

Historical and contemporary responses to the unemployed were considered by reviewing government policies, political discourse and trends in public attitudes since the 1980s, suggesting that these areas have become increasingly more punitive towards welfare claimants over time. Legislation has increased conditionality, responsibility and sanctions for benefit recipients (Deeming, 2015; Watts et al., 2014). These sanctions have resulted in negative outcomes for some claimants increasing financial difficulties, hardship and resorting to 'survival crime' (Welfare Conditionality Project, 2018:18). Since the early 1980s politicians have embraced negative descriptors of welfare claimants. Negative depictions of welfare claimants have become embedded in modern day politics, regardless of the party in government (Hill and Walker, 2014). Finally, trends in public attitudes, drawing on British Social Attitudes survey data from the 1980s, generally shows a hardening of attitudes over time, although in the last few years these attitudes have started to soften. It appears that over time, it is the younger and older age groups that are less supportive of welfare claimants, with those around their mid-40s holding less punitive views. While there are long-term repeated measures of social attitudes towards those who claim welfare support, there are no survey questions currently that measure punitiveness as proposed by this study.

Since the 1980s, the education system has received criticism by government for a range of social problems, such as anti-social behaviour, excessive liberalness and growing truancy, which has involved a political rhetoric of teachers 'failing pupils' by being incapable of maintaining classroom discipline (Dorey, 2014:109). Government discourse, which commenced during the 1980s, focused on the failings of education enabling the implementation of extensive policy reforms driven by market principles and managerial authority over professionals (Dorey, 2014). Since the early 1980s, legislation has been

enacted based on neo-liberal principles of competition and marketisation (Dorey, 2014). The introduction of league tables and the national curriculum led to an increase in the number of school exclusions (Farrall and Hay, 2014). Children who are excluded from school are disproportionately represented by SEN pupils, BAME pupils and children from disadvantaged backgrounds (Timpson, 2019; Gill et al., 2017). Additionally, research shows that those excluded from school are much more likely to end up in the criminal justice system (Evans, 2010; Berridge et al., 2001; Gill et al., 2017). Exploring relevant BSAS survey questions since the 1980s, those holding beliefs that children should obey authority and that young people do not respect traditional values has remained generally high over time. What has changed however, is the age of those supportive of such beliefs; younger age groups, which were relatively less supportive of such beliefs when the questions were first fielded in the early 1980s, appear to have become more supportive of such beliefs overtime. Additionally, general support for such beliefs have been declining in recent years. While there are long-term repeated measures of social attitudes towards young people, there are no survey questions currently that measure punitiveness as proposed by this study.

The focus of this thesis then turned to the development of survey questions to explore punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants. BSAS survey questions were used to examine punitiveness towards lawbreakers (*People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences*, and *For some crimes, the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence*). A review of cognitive interviewing literature presented the value of undertaking cognitive interviewing in the question design process. The two main cognitive interviewing paradigms of thinking aloud and verbal probing were detailed with their respective strengths and limitations, and the limitations of the method more generally. Considerations were also given to the challenges of conducting web-based surveys.

The cognitive interviewing design process was then outlined, presenting the measurement aims of the interviews. These were to test whether the key terms were understood by participants in a consistent way; to gain an understanding into what these terms brought to participants' minds when answering and what factors influenced responses; and, to assess whether participants were able to answer sufficiently accurately and reliably to meet the measurement aims of the survey. The cognitive interviewing framework was presented prior

to providing an overview of the cognitive interviews. The analysis of the cognitive interviews and the decision making involved throughout the question design was discussed in detail to demonstrate the analytical process involved in the design of new survey questions. The process of undertaking cognitive interviews enabled questions to be pre-tested targeting the population representative of the eventual survey. The finalised questions following two rounds of cognitive interviews were then presented.

Reflections on the application of a quantitative methodology to explore public attitudes towards rulebreakers were then presented. In this study, this took the form of analyses using SPSS and AMOS of data captured through the use of an online survey. The use of quantitative methodology to understand public opinion towards criminal justice has a relatively lengthy history in criminology (see Chapter 2.1.) and public opinion (Bryman, 1984; BSAS, 2019). The strengths of using quantitative methodology to examine public attitudes were highlighted as allowing a large-scale systematic analysis, which enables the operationalization of concepts and the study of relationships between variables of interest. The chapter then progressed to discuss the limitations of using quantitative methodology to explore public attitudes. This consisted of acknowledging that questions of a general nature can over-inflate punitive attitudes, the difficulty of trying to simplify complex attitudes and the efforts made to at least reduce some of the effects of these limitations in this study. Finally, the chapter concluded by presenting the final survey questions and the pilot study.

Chapter 5 then aimed to place the quantitative analysis into context in several ways. Firstly, the sample was described followed by preliminary analyses of the key questions used in the analysis (the six newly designed questions plus the two criminal rulebreakers questions). Frequencies, t-tests and one-way ANOVAs appeared to show a distinction in punitiveness towards each group of rulebreaker with the most punitive response towards support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants. Support for physical punishments appeared to receive the least punitive response. This suggest that whilst there is strong support for *more* punishment, this desire does not take the form of physical punishments. Additionally, the questions referring to non-specific sanctions towards rulebreakers received the top three most punitive responses, whilst the introduction of specific, extreme sanctions

appears to reduce punitive attitudes. The development of the variables to be used in the subsequent analyses in Chapter 6 to Chapter 9 were also detailed, namely, neo-conservative values, neo-liberal values, and the nostalgia variables (social, economic and political nostalgia).

Chapter 6 exclusively explored attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils. The steps taken to examine the data took the form of ordinal logistic regression to examine the separate rulebreaking school pupils' variables, and hierarchical multiple regression to analyze school punitivity, a factor analysis of the two separate items. Socio-demographic factors, crime-related factors, political values and nostalgic values were all examined in the analyses. Qualitative data from the cognitive interviews was also incorporated providing a little insight into public attitudes towards the punishment of rulebreaking school pupils not attainable through quantitative analysis alone. Previous criminological literature on punitiveness was also considered in relation to the findings due to there being no evidence base exploring punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils. Analyses showed that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils, which was the case with both support for tougher punishments and support for permanent exclusion, although the model explained less variance in punitiveness towards permanent exclusion than towards tougher punishments. Additional factors that appear to be related to attitudes supportive of tougher punishments for rulebreaking school pupils are having no religion, being female, higher incomes, those with degree level qualifications, being single and those in the lowest IMD quartile. Whilst those over 65 years old appear to be less punitive. Support for the permanent exclusion of rulebreaking school children also appear to be influenced by neo-liberal values, no experience of victimisation, having no religion, higher incomes, degree level education, social nostalgic values and those from a white background (when compared to those from a Black Caribbean/African background).

Significant factors relating *only* to support for tougher punishments appear to be being female, being aged 16 to 24 years old (when compared to those aged over 65), being single, and those in the lowest IMD quartile. Additionally, the overall model explains a greater amount of variance in support for tougher punishments (46.9%) than towards permanent exclusion (27.7%). Whereas, significant factors relating *only* to support for permanent

exclusion appear to be neo-liberal values, social nostalgic values, no experience of victimisation, those from a white background (compared to those from a Black Caribbean/African background) and those earning incomes in excess of £85,000. This suggests that there are different drivers for support for a specific extreme sanction than for the non-specific idea of 'tougher punishments'. A multiple regression model was then conducted to examine the factors related to 'school punitivity' a variable consisting of the two items designed to measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking school pupils. Findings again suggest that school punitivity is strongly related to neo-conservative values. Other relevant factors appear to be neo-liberal values, those earning higher incomes, social nostalgic values and decreased religiosity, although the effect sizes of these variables suggest that their effect on increased punitiveness towards rulebreaking school children is substantially less than neo-conservative values. Data that emerged from the cognitive interviews showed that, as with the quantitative data, qualitative responses to the two different statements appeared to elicit differing responses. Fundamental beliefs appeared to underlie attitudes toward the use of school punishments, particularly in relation to the use of physical punishments. Whilst responses towards the use of permanent exclusion tended to elicit more compassionate responses towards school pupils from participants which highlighted concerns about the use of punishments for children with special educational needs.

Chapter 7 repeated the analyses conducted in the previous chapter, but this time focusing on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. Findings suggest that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. Again, as with the rulebreaking school pupils items, analysis shows that separating the two measures draws out some notable differences between support for stiffer penalties and support for the more punitive sanction of permanently stopping welfare benefits. Most notably, in relation to the value-based variables, support for the general, non-specific sanction of 'stiffer penalties' is predominately related to neo-conservative values and political nostalgic values with economic nostalgic values having a smaller effect. Support for the more extreme sanction of permanently stopping welfare payments appears to be related to neo-conservative values, neo-liberal values and no experience of victimisation, with political nostalgic values and economic nostalgic values having a smaller effect.

Additional socio-demographic factors that appear to be related to support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants are white ethnicity, higher incomes, being female, working class origin, those not in receipt of universal credit and those with no religion. Additional socio-demographic factors that appear to be related to punitive attitudes towards permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants appears to be being female, those under 25 years old, incomes below £25,000, white ethnicity, not being in receipt of universal credit, having no religion, having no qualifications, and belonging to the lowest IMD quartile. The only factor relating exclusively to support for stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants appears to be being from a working-class origin. Whereas, factors relating only to the more extreme sanction of permanently stopping payments for rulebreaking welfare claimants appear to be younger age, specifically those aged under 25, having no qualifications, and those in the lowest IMD quartile. Additionally, not being in receipt of universal credit and neo-liberal values have a bigger effect on punitiveness towards permanently stopping welfare claimants than towards support for stiffer penalties.

A multiple regression model was then conducted to examine the factors related to 'welfare punitivity', a variable consisting of the two items designed to measure punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants. As found in the ordinal regression models, welfare punitivity is strongly related to neo-conservative values. Other relevant factors related to increased punitiveness towards rulebreaking welfare claimants appear to be political nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, being female, neo-liberal values, higher income, non-universal credit claimants, those identifying as more politically conservative, decreased religiosity, younger age, working class origin and lower IMD quartile. This chapter also incorporated themes that emerged during the cognitive interviews. As with the quantitative data, qualitative responses to the two different measures appeared to elicit different themes. In relation to attitudes towards stiffer penalties for rulebreaking welfare claimants, some respondents' discourse towards welfare claimants appeared to be dominated by connections made between welfare and migrants, 'scroungers' and the belief that some claimants are reluctant to go to work, suggesting a link with political discourse. Deservingness and fairness were evident in the cognitive interviews in consideration of permanently ceasing welfare payments. There was also evidence of some softening of attitudes on reflection of the impacts of permanently stopping payments. Punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare

claimants were displayed by people who were themselves on benefits. However, the quantitative analyses undertaken in this chapter suggests that universal credit claimants are significantly less punitive than those who are not in receipt of universal credit.

Chapter 8 then turned to examine punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers using two established BSAS questions of *People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences*, and *For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence*. As with the previous two chapters ordinal logistic regression and hierarchical multiple linear regression were conducted to analyze the questions first separately, and then, together. Ordinal logistic regression showed that neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers, which was the case with both support for stiffer sentences and support for the death penalty, with the model explaining a similar amount of variance in both measures of criminal punitiveness. Factors relating exclusively to support for stiffer sentences appear to be being female, no experience of victimisation, incomes between £40,000 and £59,999 and economic nostalgic values. Whilst, factors relating to support for the specific extreme sanction of the death penalty appear to be those aged below 25 years old, those with no qualifications, self-identified political conservatism, those in a relationship, being in receipt of universal credit, belonging to the fourth IMD quartile (compare to the first IMD quartile). Additionally, crime-related factors appear to be more relevant to support for stiffer sentences for criminal rulebreakers, whilst socio-demographic factors appear to be more relevant to support for the death penalty.

‘Law punitivity’, a variable consisting of the two separate criminal rulebreaker items, was then examined by conducting multiple regression. As found in the ordinal regression models, law punitivity is strongly related to neo-conservative values. Additionally, social nostalgic values, those who self-identify as politically more conservative, neo-liberal values, decreased religiosity, younger age, lower educational attainment, working class origin, economic nostalgic values, being in a relationship, political nostalgic values, fear of crime and being female also appear to be related to increased punitiveness towards criminal rulebreakers.

Chapters 9 commenced by bringing together the previous distinct chapters by examining the variation in punitive attitudes towards the different groups of rulebreakers. The model as a

whole explains the largest amount of variance in punitive attitudes towards lawbreakers, explaining 49.7% of the variance in law punitivity, 40.2% of the variance in school punitivity and 33.3% of the variance in welfare punitivity. This suggests that the model is a better predictor of punitive attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers than for the rulebreaking school pupils and welfare claimants. This is perhaps not surprising as the theoretical framework for the models is largely shaped by a criminological foundation. There are some similarities in the factors related to all three groups of rulebreakers. Firstly, belief systems appear to have the most notable effect on punitive attitudes towards all three groups of rulebreakers shown by the increase in R-Square value for Model 3 for each group, with the largest effect on rulebreaking school pupils (30.4%). Neo-conservative values has the strongest effect on all groups of rulebreakers, with the strongest effect on rulebreaking school pupils, closely followed by criminal law breakers. Whilst, neo-liberal values also appears to be related to all three rulebreaking groups with the strongest effect on criminal rulebreakers. The only other factor relating to all three rulebreakers is religiosity, with the strongest effect on law punitivity.

Additionally, punitive attitudes towards rulebreaking school pupils appears to be related to social nostalgic values and increased income. Welfare punitivity appears to be influenced by political nostalgic values, economic nostalgic values, being female, higher income, those not receiving universal credit, increased political conservatism, younger age, working class origin and lower IMD. Whilst law punitivity appears to be related to social nostalgic values, increased political conservatism, younger age, lower education attainment, working class origin, economic nostalgic values, being in a marital type relationship, political nostalgic values, fear of crime and being female. School punitivity appears to be related to the least amount of significant factors (five), whereas welfare and law punitivity appear to have a more complex mix of factors with twelve and thirteen significant factors respectively.

Following this initial analysis, the chapter then progressed to merge these three distinct groups of rulebreakers to examine punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers as a collective group. Unsurprisingly, findings suggest that punitive attitudes towards collective rulebreakers are largely driven by neo-conservative values; this is illustrated by the large increase in

R-square value in Model 3 (38.1%) and the effect size of neo-conservative values (beta=.620). Additional relevant factors appear to be neo-liberal values, social and economic nostalgic values, self-identified political conservatism, decreased religiosity, higher income, political nostalgic values, being female, younger age and lower-class origin.

Finally, 'Tiered Punitiveness' was introduced exploring whether there is a difference in drivers between 'basic punitiveness', that is support for harsher, non-specific punishments, and 'ultimate punitiveness', that is support for specific, extreme, permanent sanctions. Analysis suggests that whilst neo-conservative values has a very strong effect on both tiers of punitiveness, it stands out as *the* predominant factor in explaining basic punitiveness, as seen by the large effect size in comparison to the other factors which are all small, despite being significant. Ultimate punitiveness on the other hand appears to be driven by a wider range of factors with a relatively strong influence in addition to neo-conservative values, most notably, neo-liberal values, younger age and social nostalgic values. This suggests that ultimate punitiveness is influenced by a greater complexity of factors than basic punitiveness. This was confirmed by the Structural Equation Models which applied only the conceptual variables to the models. The model explained a greater amount of variance in basic punitiveness with neo-conservative values having the most notable influence. Whilst ultimate punitiveness also appears to be largely influenced by neo-conservative values (but to a lesser extent than for basic punitiveness), neo-liberal values and social nostalgic values also appear to play an important role. Lastly, the Structural Equation Model for collective punitiveness incorporated all of the basic and ultimate punitiveness items into one variable. This shows that neo-conservative values has by far the largest effect on general punitiveness and that the model explains 55 percent of the variance in punitiveness. What this shows is that using all items together to measure punitiveness as a discrete concept does not allow us to tease out the differences in complex attitudes.

10.3. Limitations

Before moving on to discuss potential research implications, the shortcomings of this study should be discussed.

(a) Due to the nature of this project, there were limitations on the number of questions allocated to explore punitiveness towards the different groups of rulebreakers. An increased number of questions per group of rulebreaker may have allowed a further exploration of punitiveness. Are there more than two tiers of punitiveness for example?

Due to the criminal rulebreaker questions being used and fielded by the British Social Attitudes Survey since the 1980s, these questions were not tested in the cognitive interviews. Previous research has suggested that people tend to think of violent crime when answering questions about crime (Roberts and Doob, 1990). Had the criminal rulebreaker questions been tested in the cognitive interviews, some light may have been shed on the types of offenders and crimes brought to people's minds when answering such questions today. Additionally, some interesting differences emerged from the cognitive interviews between attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants and rulebreaking school pupils. Testing the criminal rulebreaker questions in the cognitive interviews would have enabled comparisons to be made with the other two groups of rulebreakers.

(b) There are a range of limitations of web-based surveys, such as self-selection bias, lack of interest or motivation in the topic, lack of concentration when completing the survey, and problems understanding the questions, which may all impact on the data collected (Callegaro et al. (2015). Non-response may also occur; invited participants may refuse to participate altogether, cease participation at any point during the survey, or may only answer certain questions (Vehovar and Mantreda, 2017). The non-response rates for this study (see Table 5.4) resulted in 29% of invited online panellists (3,178 invitees) not participating and 4% (488) dropped out at some point during the survey.

Web-based surveys have also been found to be more likely to elicit higher item non-response and 'don't knows' compared to face-to-face surveys (Heerwegh and Loosveldt, 2008). Refusal to answer specific items perceived to be sensitive, such as some socio-demographic questions, may also result in item non-responses (Tourangeau et al., 2000). Once all variables were included in the regression models in this study the sample size reduced quite considerably. This was most notable in relation to the multiple regression models with a reduction in sample size from 5,781 to 2,090. This was due to the inclusion of some non-completed socio-demographic variables, specifically, religiosity, politics scale, class origin,

income and ethnicity (detailed in the regression models). Religiosity resulted in the highest number of item non-response due to being preceded by a filter question about whether the respondents had a religion. Of the original sample (n=5,781), 2,453 respondents answered that they had no religion; therefore, they were not asked the subsequent religiosity question. However, religiosity was included in the analyses due to its relevance to political attitudes (Friesen Ksiazkiewicz, 2014; McAndrew, 2020).

In an attempt to mitigate some of the above limitations of the web-based survey in this study, a range of steps were undertaken to attempt to design a survey instrument that not only operationalised and measured complex concepts, but also sought to test if certain aspects produced non-response issues. The range of steps taken consisted of expert reviews on the newly designed questions, two omnibus surveys, two rounds of cognitive interviews and a pilot survey during which questions were adapted and re-tested until the final survey instrument consisted of sixty-two items. There were no particular concerns noted with the drop-out rates or item non-responses following the completion of these steps. The drop-out rates for the pilot survey were deemed acceptable by the Principle Investigator and BMG Research.

Further analyses have been undertaken to explore how serious the issue of item non-response (the inclusion of some non-completed socio-demographic variables) was on the empirical results in this study. These analyses compare the existing results of a selection of the four-step multiple regression models (welfare punitivity, law punitivity, ultimate punitiveness) with results when only complete cases from the full model are used at each of the four steps in the multiple regression models (see Appendix F). The results generally show some changes in the relevance of some socio-demographic variables and some small changes in beta coefficients for other variables. However, the results generally show that the main conclusions of this thesis are valid.

Online panels may impact on measurement error through the presence of over-engaged or 'professional' respondents, the absence of non-internet or low-internet usage households, self-selection bias, and representativeness (Callegaro et al., 2015). The sampling strategy used by BMG aimed to reduce the impact of these limitations. BMG use a 'panel blend'

approach inviting participants from a range of panels to spread the fieldwork. Additionally, they also use a range of recruitment methods to recruit participants, which allows them to recruit a more diverse sample.

(c) There is also potential to expand the scope of the neo-conservative values variable, which has been found to be consistently related to all forms of punitiveness in this study. Whilst neo-conservatism in this study was designed to measure the themes of social order, support for traditional values and authoritarianism, it is perhaps limited in its scope whereby the questions relate to young people and children. It might be useful to expand this variable to include a greater range of questions to incorporate variables external to young people.

It is also important to consider the distinction between punitiveness and neo-conservative values (in particular between neo-conservative values and the school punitiveness variables), as the construction of the new survey questions for neo-conservative values refer to beliefs about school punishments. Neo-conservative ideals assert social order, traditional values and the authoritarian state (Hayes, 1994). During the 1970s, there was an increasing concern over falling standards and 'violent' schools (Hall, 1979). There were also concerns about the link between indiscipline in schools and anti-social behaviour in neighbourhoods (Berridge et al., 2001). An educational strategy emerged under the conservative governments during this period, which reiterated 'social skills, respect for authority, traditional values and discipline' founded on a traditional education (Hall, 1979:19).

The design of the new survey questions was partly influenced by parliamentary discourse relating to young people prevalent in the 1980s and 1990s (see Chapter 3.3). The power of the state to be able to administer physical discipline to young people as a form of social control was a much debated topic by Conservative MPs during this period. During the same period, the education system was criticised by government for a range of social problems, such as anti-social behaviour (Dorey, 2014). Conservative MPs supported the caning of school children to 'save them from a life of crime' (HC Deb 28 January 1997). The core of the neo-conservative belief system is to advocate authority to secure order (Hayes, 1994). Neo-conservatism represents traditional impulses with order and authority clearly evident (Hayes, 1994). Neo-conservatism essentially is an evaluation of the *past* in response to how

people observe and experience the *present*. It is an underlying belief that is rooted in the past. It differs from punitiveness due to this historical construction.

Punitiveness is explicitly related to attitudes to punishment, in particular about how people think that rulebreakers *ought* to be punished. Punitiveness has 'connotations of excess', suggests an intensification of punishment either by duration or severity, and is applied disproportionately (Matthews, 2005:179). The operationalisation of punitiveness in this study aims to tap into the public's desire for harsher penalties and extreme sanctions (school punishments, welfare sanctions, sentences). It is an attitude that suggests that punishment as it is, in its present form, is not enough, and that it should be harsher (Kury and Ferdinand, 1999; Roberts and Indermauer, 2007; Roberts et al, 2003). It is a reflection on the present form of punishment and shows a desire for harsher punishments in the *future*.

The distinction between punitiveness and neo-conservatism was evident in the cognitive interviews (See Chapter 5). There was a clear distinction between people's beliefs about how authority was administered in the past (neo-conservative items) and their attitudes towards how rulebreakers ought to be punished (school punitiveness items); respondents held beliefs that social control measures were more effective in the past but did not generally seek harsher punishments (punitive attitudes). Some respondents were clear that past forms of behaviour management are not a form of social control that they would desire today.

Whilst there are some similarities in the nature of the neo-conservative values variable and the punitiveness questions (particularly school punitiveness), there is also a clear distinction in the root of these questions. Respondents in the cognitive interviews made a distinction between the *historical* nature of the neo-conservative items and their reflections on *current* school punishments in relation to the school punitiveness items. Additionally, collinearity diagnostics were performed in all multiple regression models and no concerns were raised with multicollinearity (see p237, p264, p290, p308, p320) (Pallant, 2015; Field, 2018). Further analysis using the neo-conservative values variable as the dependent variable demonstrated that there were differences in the age and gender profile of neo-conservative values and punitiveness, with being male and being older being related to neo-conservatism but not

punitiveness. This analysis also showed that nostalgia (R-square change 17.8) is more strongly related to neo-conservative values.

Whilst a range of steps were taken to attempt to design a survey instrument that operationalised and measured complex concepts, there remains some limitations with the various scales, most notably, political nostalgia. The political nostalgic values items refer explicitly to Margaret Thatcher, and as such the results are most likely a reflection of people's admiration or distain for Margaret Thatcher rather than a general sense of political nostalgia. In relation to the economic nostalgia variable, *I feel there has been a loss of community spirit around here since the 1980s*, could possibly be construed as social nostalgia. However, the question was included within this battery alongside *It feels to me like the country lost something when coal mines, steel mills and shipyards closed* in order to tap into the community spirit that accompanied the coal mining, steel and shipbuilding industries.

(d) A clear limitation of survey research is the injustice that quantifying attitudes can do to the subtlety of individual viewpoints (Hough and Roberts, 2005). Using general questions can inflate punitiveness and providing more information to the public about sentencing scenarios has been found to soften people's responses to the use of (youth) custody (Roberts and Hough, 2005). When people are given more time, information or questions on a subject, their punitiveness reduces (Hough and Roberts, 2005). Spratt (1999) noted that different responses may be elicited from general questions and case specific questions and this disparity may relate to different concerns being highlighted by each questioning technique. This study has explored punitive attitudes by using generally broad questions; the nature of the rulebreaking behaviours for each rulebreaker have not been specified, nor has information been provided about the rulebreakers. However, the purposes of this study are to gain a general sense of punitive attitudes and to understand how this relates to political attitudes, to attempt to understand what influences these attitudes, and to compare attitudes towards different groups of rulebreakers. In order to do so, within the constraints of the survey, it was necessary to design the questions in a simple way. Additionally, when people answer survey questions, they draw on their emotional backlog, so their attitudes express deep-seated opinions and emotions, as well as their experiences (Farrall et al., 2009); Jackson, 2004). Moreover, using the same style of questions for each rulebreaker has

enabled comparisons to be made. Zamble and Kalm (1990:336) suggest that generalised questions are attitudinal in nature and that they 'express a generalised cognitive and emotional response to all sorts of information and experience'. This is also the manner in which politicians use punitiveness.

10.4. Part Two: Future Research Directions

1. Tiered Punitiveness: Basic and Ultimate Punitiveness

Previous criminological research has examined punitiveness towards offenders as a discrete concept. This has taken the form of either using the items used in this study towards criminal rulebreakers together, as single questions to represent punitiveness, or in combination with a range of other measures. Through the basic quantitative analyses and the cognitive interviews, attitudinal differences were observed between support for increased, non-specific punishment and support for specific, extreme sanctions. Subsequent advanced statistical analyses aimed to explore whether there are different degrees of punitiveness. In pursuit of this aim, this thesis has introduced the idea of Tiered Punitiveness. 'Tiered Punitiveness' suggests that 'punitiveness' is not a discrete attitude but has different degrees to it, here identified as 'Basic Punitiveness' and 'Ultimate Punitiveness'. There is potential for future research to consider Tiered Punitiveness, and to develop this idea further, in an examination of punitiveness.

2. Age Period Cohort Analyses

Throughout the analyses, certain age effects have been noted. Firstly, previous literature has found age to be inconsistently related to punitiveness. Conditional formatting of longitudinal BSAS survey questions shows that attitudes of younger age groups have generally hardened from the early to mid-1990s onwards towards lawbreakers, welfare claimants and young people. Findings in this study have found that age is a relevant factor in relation to Ultimate Punitiveness. The Age Period Cohort (APC) approach acknowledges the distinct temporal processes of individual ageing, contexts and generational membership and aids understanding into social changes (Gray et al., 2018; Grasso et al., 2018). When measuring age in a group of people, Gray et al. (2018) highlight the importance of considering how much change is due to the individual aging process, how

much is due to the historical context of the data collection and how much due to the generation in which the individual grew up in. Gray et al. (2018) found that public perceptions of crime can be impacted by the socio-political environment in which people spend their formative years, that is the age at which individuals are most responsive to forming their opinions. This 'political socialisation' can impact on public perceptions and can endure throughout a person's life course (Grasso et al., 2017). APC analysis requires longitudinal data; therefore, the continued fielding of the newly designed questions for this study would enable APC modelling to be undertaken in the future.

3. Education and Welfare Research

This thesis has expanded the punitiveness lens into two additional two policy areas. This has enabled comparisons to be drawn and differences to be observed between the criminal justice system, the welfare system, and the education system. There is little empirical investigation into public attitudes towards the punishment of school pupils; this study has aimed to begin to fill that gap. Previous scholars have made links between education and the criminal justice system. Kim et al. (2010) identify the failures of the education system as a key source of why children enter the criminal justice system, whilst McAra and McVie (2013) found that offending pathways for young people is driven by school exclusions and truancy. This study also suggests a link between the punishment of school pupils and the punishment of lawbreakers in a range of ways. It has been argued that government policies towards the two groups of rulebreakers have followed a similar trend since the early 1980s, and that the repercussions of these policies have resulted in negative consequences for those involved. It is suggested that these policies are underpinned by neo-conservatism and neo-liberalism and that these same values are related to punitive attitudes in the general population. Additionally, nostalgia also appears to be relevant in explaining attitudes towards criminal rulebreakers and rulebreaking school pupils. Further research may wish to expand on this link between British society's treatment of school pupils and lawbreakers. Why do we treat school children in the same manner in which we treat adults who have committed crime, when often the misdemeanours of school children are inconsequential in comparison to some of the graver offences committed by adults? What is it about school children's unruly behaviours that instils so much concern into society? Additionally, this study also suggests

attitudes towards rulebreaking welfare claimants have followed a similar trend as for lawbreakers and rulebreaking school pupils and that public attitudes are related to political attitudes and nostalgia. Future work may seek to explore punitiveness in a multi-disciplinary way.

4. Mixed Methods

This study applied a quantitative methodology to the examination of punitiveness. At the outset it was envisaged that qualitative interviews may also be undertaken. However, due to time constraints it was not deemed possible to undertake the expanse of qualitative interviews necessary to do this work justice. Future research may wish to consider the value of conducting mixed methods research into punitive attitudes. A purposive sampling approach to in-depth qualitative interviews with members of the public identified through being a respondent of a survey could enable a greater exploration into the complexities of punitive attitudes and attitude formation that is limited through a survey alone. This would have allowed a deeper exploration into the differences between Basic and Ultimate Punitiveness for example, or to draw out some of the differences towards the different rulebreakers and the influences that underpin these.

5. Subgroup Analyses

The interaction of socio-demographic factors may be very powerful and increase our understanding of punitive attitudes. Repeating the analyses with a larger dataset for socio-demographic factors may allow further valuable insights into punitiveness. The complex background information of respondents may allow insight into attitudinal shifts within social cleavages.

6. Exclusionary punishment

Support for physical punishments received the least punitive responses in this study. Thus, whilst there is strong support for *more* punishment, this desire does not take the form of physical punishments. However, attitudes generally appear to be supportive of exclusionary measures, shown particularly in response to *welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped* and *school pupils who frequently break school rules should be permanently excluded*. Whilst

'sentences' does not explicitly refer to *prison* sentences, Roberts and Hough (2005) note that people normally answered sentencing related questions with imprisonment in mind, which also shows support for social exclusion. Further analysis of exclusionary measures as a form of punishment would provide further insight into this observation.

10.5 Final Words

It has been almost fifty years since Cohen first noted the public's 'short-term reactions to the immediate and long-term general reflections on the state-of-our-times' (Cohen, 2002:vii). Cohen (2002) observes that these emotions endure but are projected towards different groups of people over time suggesting that there are always 'problematic' groups in society that require 'managing'. The observations in this thesis support this observation; the general public appear to support the harsh sanctioning of rulebreakers across different policy domains, and these attitudes can fluctuate over time. Punitive attitudes are complex; this study highlights the importance of considering the role of politics in understanding punitive public attitudes towards rulebreakers, which is powerful across disciplines. Political values motivate how we respond to certain groups of people. The political culture that emerged in the 1980s and 1990s in Britain (and America) endures and has increased the use of exclusionary and social control practices (Garland, 2001). 'Deep-seated anxieties' are expressed through practices that aim to manage social change and reassert social order (Garland, 2001:194).

This thesis has highlighted the relevance of considering political values and nostalgia in understanding the public's punitive response towards rulebreakers. Drawing on work by Garland (2001), Chancer and Donovan (1994) and Hogan et al. (2005), Hanslmaier and Baier (2016:295) suggest that punitive attitudes can be explained by 'the subjective experience of social conditions', which can derive from a broad range of experiences. In line with this observation, punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers in this study are related to individual feelings about macro-level change. This nostalgia is related to neo-conservative values and to neo-liberal values. Political values therefore are central to understanding punitive attitudes.

The findings of this thesis make an additional observation: that using a tiering model can aid a deeper understanding into public punitiveness. Whilst values supportive of authority and traditional values are relevant to both tiers of punitiveness, these values are the most important driver in understanding more general support for harsher sanctions towards rulebreakers. However, we can see here how more extreme attitudes are influenced by a wider range of values. Feelings of sadness about local and national change, along with a belief in reduced state intervention and the free market are more relevant in explaining more extreme punitive attitudes towards rulebreakers. Additionally, research so far has explored punitiveness in disciplinary isolation, this thesis suggests that punitiveness is not exclusive to criminal rulebreakers but is prevalent towards rulebreakers across different regulatory systems and that this punitiveness is underpinned by similar values.

REFERENCES

- Adams, F. (2005) 'Discipline in Scottish Schools: A Survey of Teachers' Views', The General Teaching Council for Scotland, available at http://dera.ioe.ac.uk/9801/1/discipline-in-scottish-schools-teachers-views-full1767_328.pdf [accessed 18/01/2018]
- Adoption UK (2017) 'Adoption UK's School and Exclusion Report', available at <https://www.adoptionuk.org/sites/default/files/Adoption%20UK%20Schools%20and%20Exclusions%20Survey%20Report%20FINAL.pdf> [accessed 19/01/2018]
- Allison, E. and Hattenstone, S. (2016) 'Approved restraint techniques can kill children, MOJ found', available at <https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/dec/05/approved-restraint-techniques-can-kill-children-moj-found> [accessed 23/02/2016]
- Andrews, K. and Jacobs, J. (1990) *Punishing the Poor*. London: Macmillan.
- Annison, H. (2018) 'The Policymakers' Dilemma: Change, Continuity and Enduring Rationalities of English Penal Policy', in *The British Journal of Criminology*, 58(5), 1066-1086.
- Anti-Social Behaviour, Crime and Policing Act (2014) C.12. Available at <http://www.legislation.gov.uk/ukpga/2014/12/notes/annex/2?view=plain> [accessed 19/12/2019]
- Apple, M. (2006) 'Understanding and Interrupting Neoliberalism and Neoconservatism in Education', in *Pedagogies*, 1, 21-26. Available at <https://www.longviewoneducation.org/wp-content/uploads/2018/01/BetweenNeoliberalismNewconservatism.pdf> [accessed 04/12/2019]
- Arnott, M.A. (2011) 'The more things change....?': The Thatcher years and educational reform in Scotland', in *Journal of Educational Administration and History*, 43(2), 181-202.
- Ashworth, A. (1995) 'Coping with the Criminal Justice and Public Order Act', *Criminal Law Review*, 1-3.
- Atkinson, R. and Lupton, C. (1990) 'Industrial and Training Policy', in Savage, S.P. and Robins, L. (eds) *Public Policy Under Thatcher*. Hampshire: MacMillan Education Ltd.
- Bainham, A. (1999) 'Corporal Punishment of Children: A Caning for the United Kingdom', in *The Cambridge Law Journal*, 59, 291-293.
- Bamfield, L. and Horton, T. (2009) 'Understanding attitudes to tackling economic inequality', *Joseph Rowntree Foundation Publication*.
- Baumberg, B. (2012) 'Three ways to defend social security in Britain', in *Journal of Poverty and Social Justice*, 20(2), 149 – 61.

Baumberg Geiger, B. (2017) 'False Beliefs and the Perceived Deservingness of Social Security Benefit Claimants', in van Oorschot, W., Roosma, F., Meuleman, B. and Reeskens, T. (eds) *The Social Legitimacy of Targeted Welfare: Attitudes to Welfare Deservingness*. Cheltenham: Edward Elgar Books.

Baumberg, B., Bell, K., Gaffney, D., Deacon, R., Hood, C. and Sage, D. (2012) 'Benefit Stigma in Britain', Turn2Us, available at <https://www.turn2us-2938.cdn.hybridcloudspan.com/T2UWebsite/media/Documents/Benefits-Stigma-in-Britain.pdf> [accessed 01/03/2018]

Baumberg Geiger, B., Reeves, A. and de Vries, R. (2017) 'Tax avoidance and benefit manipulation', *British Social Attitudes 34*, The National Centre for Social Research, available at www.bsa.natcen.ac.uk/media/39144/bsa34_benefit_tax_final.pdf [accessed 27/02/2018]

BBC (2005) '1969: MPS vote to abolish hanging', available at http://news.bbc.co.uk/onthisday/hi/dates/stories/december/16/newsid_3258000/3258437.stm [accessed 06/01/2020]

BBC (2019) 'Home Secretary Priti Patel: I want criminals to feel terror', available at <https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-49213743> [accessed 04/12/2019]

Beard, J. (2019) 'The Prison Estate', *House of Commons Library*, Briefing Paper Number 05646, 28 November 2019, available at <https://researchbriefings.files.parliament.uk/documents/SN05646/SN05646.pdf> [accessed 12/05/2020]

Beatty, P. C. and Willis, G.B. (2007) 'Research synthesis: The practice of cognitive interviewing', in *Public Opinion Quarterly*, 71(2), 287–311.

Beckett, K. and Western, B. (2000) 'Crime Control, American Style: From Social Welfare to Social Control', in *Criminal Policy in Transition*. Oregon: Hart Publishing.

Berkeley, R. (1999) 'Not fitting in: Exclusions from school, a local study', paper presented at the British Research Association Conference, University of Sussex, available at <http://www.leeds.ac.uk/educol/documents/000001084.htm> [accessed 23/07/2019]

Bennett, T. (2017) 'Creating a Culture: How school leaders can optimise behaviour', Independent review of behaviour in schools, available at https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/602487/Tom_Bennett_Independent_Review_of_Behaviour_in_Schools.pdf (accessed 27/04/2019)

Berridge, D., Brodie, I., Pitts, J., Porteous, D. and Tarling, R. (2001) 'The independent effects of permanent exclusion from school on the offending careers of young people', *Research Development and Statistical Occasional Paper No 71*, Home Office, available at <http://troublesofyouth.pbworks.com/f/occ71-exclusion.pdf> [accessed 21/03/2018]

Bishop, G.F. (2004) *The Illusion of Public Opinion: Fact and Artifact in American Public Opinion Polls*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield Publishers.

Blair, T. (1997) 'Speech at Aylesbury Estate', available at <http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/special/politics97/news/06/0602/blair.shtml> [accessed 12/11/2019]

Blair, J. and Brick, P.D. (2010) 'Methods for analysis of cognitive interviews', *Proceedings of the Survey Research Methods Sections*. American Statistical Association, pp 3739-48, available at https://ww2.amstat.org/sections/srms/Proceedings/y2010/Files/307865_59514.pdf

Blair, J. and Conrad, F.G. (2011) 'Sample Size for Cognitive Interview Pretesting', in *Public Opinion Quarterly*, (75), 636-658.

BMG (2019) 'Survey to assess the relevance of Thatcherism today: Main Study Technical Report', University of Derby.

Bottoms, A. (1995) 'The philosophy and politics of punishment and sentencing', in Clarkson, C. and Morgan, R. (eds) *The politics of sentencing reform*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Bove, A. (2014) 'For Whose Benefit? Fear and Loathing in the Welfare State', in *Journal of Political Marketing*, 13(1), 108-126.

Brewer, M. (2003) 'The New Tax Credits', The Institute for Fiscal Studies, Briefing Notes 35, available at https://revenuebenefits.org.uk/pdf/new_tax_credits_IFS_briefing_paper_2003.pdf [accessed 15/03/2020]

Brewer, M., Clark, T. and Wakefield, M. (2002) 'Social Security under New Labour: What did the Third Way mean for welfare reform?', *Institute for Fiscal Studies*, available at <https://www.ifs.org.uk/conferences/socsec/clark.pdf> [accessed 02/08/2018]

British Social Attitudes Survey (2019) 'BSA Variable Analysis', British Social Attitudes Information System, available at www.britisocat.com [accessed 27/04/2018]

Brookes, M., Goodall, E. and Heady, L. (2007) *Misspent youth: the costs of truancy and exclusion – a guide for donors and funders*. New Philanthropy Capital, London.

Brooks, L. (2017) 'Calls for UK-wide ban on smacking children after Scottish move', *The Guardian*, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/society/2017/oct/19/smacking-children-to-be-banned-in-scotland> [accessed 24/02/2017]

Brooks, L. (2019) 'Scotland becomes first country in UK to ban smacking of children', *The Guardian*, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/oct/03/scotland-becomes-first-country-in-uk-to-ban-smacking-of-children> [accessed 18/02/2020]

Brundage, A. (2002) *The English Poor Laws, 1700 – 1930*. Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan.

Bryman, A. (1984) 'The Debate about Quantitative and Qualitative Research: A Question of Method or Epistemology?', in *The British Journal of Sociology*, (35) 1, 75-92.

Buchanan, M. (2017) 'Beveridge Report: How has the UK changed in the past 75 years?', *The BBC News*, available at <http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-42182013> [accessed 28/03/2018]

Burney, E. (1985) *Sentencing Young People: What went wrong with the Criminal Justice Act 1982?* Aldershot: Gower.

Burney, E. (2005) *Making People Behave: Anti-social behaviour, politics and policy*. Collumpton: Willan Publishing.

Byrne, B.M. (2016) *Structural Equation Modeling with Amos: Basic Concepts, Applications and Programming*. (Third Edition). London: Routledge.

Byrne, B. and Brooks, K. (2015) 'What is Justice? Re-imagining penal policy: Post-Yot Youth Justice', *Howard League What is Justice? Working Papers 19/2015*, available at https://howardleague.org/wp-content/uploads/2016/04/HLWP_19_2015.pdf [accessed 26/05/2020]

Caffyn, R.E. (1989) 'Attitudes of British secondary school teachers and pupils to rewards and punishments', in *Educational Research*, 31(3), 210 – 220.

Cairney, P. (2011) *The Scottish Political System Since Devolution: From New Politics to the New Scottish Government*. Exeter: Imprint Academic.

Callaghan, J. (1977) 'SPEECH ON EDUCATION IN THE UNITED KINGDOM BY THE PRIME MINISTER/ THE RT.HON. JAMES CALLAGHAN', *Higher Education in Europe*, 2(1), 11-13.

Callegaro, M., Lozar Manfreda, K.L. and Vehovar, V. (2015) *Web Survey Methodology*. London: SAGE Publications Ltd.

Carroll, J.S., Perkowski, W.T., Lurigio, A.J. and Weaver, F.M. (1987) 'Sentencing Goals, Causal Attributions, Ideology, and Personality', in *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, 52, 107–118.

Cavadino, M. and Dignan, J. (2007) *The Penal System*. Fourth Edition. London: Sage.

Centre for Longitudinal Studies (2020) 'Covid-19 survey', Centre for Longitudinal Studies, UCL Social Research Institute, available at <https://cls.ucl.ac.uk/covid-19-survey/> [accessed 28/10/2020]

Chambliss, W.J. (1964) 'A Sociological Analysis of the Law of Vagrancy', in *Social Problems*, 12(1), 67-77.

Children (Equal Protection from Assault) (Scotland) Act 2019, 2019 asp 16, Acts of the Scottish Parliament, available at <http://www.legislation.gov.uk/asp/2019/16/enacted> [accessed 18/02/2020]

Cohen, S. (2002) *Folk Devils and Moral Panics*. London and New York: Routledge Classics.

Cohn, S., Barkan, S. and Halteman, W. (1991) 'Punitive Attitudes Towards Criminals: Racial Consensus or Racial Conflict?', in *Social Problems*, 38(2), 297-296.

Cole, I. (2015) 'Is a little knowledge about welfare a dangerous thing? A small scale study into attitudes, and knowledge about, welfare expenditure', in *People, Place and Policy* 9(1), 48-64.

Collins, D. (2015a) *Cognitive Interviewing Practice*. London: SAGE Publications Ltd.

Collins, D. (2015b) 'Analysis and Interpretation', in Collins, D. (eds) *Cognitive Interviewing Practice*. London: SAGE Publications Ltd.

Collins, D. and Gray, M. (2015) 'Sampling and Recruitment', in Collins, D. (eds) *Cognitive Interviewing Practice*. London: SAGE Publications Ltd.

Comptroller and Auditor General (2018) 'Rolling out Universal Credit', *Department for Work and Pensions*, National Audit Office, available at <https://www.nao.org.uk/wp-content/uploads/2018/06/Rolling-out-Universal-Credit-Summary.pdf> [accessed 19/05/2020]

Conrad, F. and Blair, J. (2009) 'Sources of Error in Cognitive Interviews', in *Public Opinion Quarterly*, 73(1), 32-55.

Conservative Party Manifesto (1979) 'Conservative General Election Manifesto 1979', available at <https://www.margaretthatcher.org/document/110858> [accessed 04/03/2018]

Conservative Party Manifesto (1992) 'Conservative Party 1992 - The Best Future for Britain', available at <http://www.johnmajorarchive.org.uk/1990-1997/conservative-party-manifesto-9-april-1992/> [accessed 29/09/2020]

Conservative Manifesto (2010) *The Conservative Manifesto 2010 – Invitation to Join the Government of Britain*, available at <https://conservativehome.blogs.com/files/conservative-manifesto-2010.pdf> [accessed 29/06/2020]

Conservative and Unionist Party Manifesto (2019) 'Get Brexit Done: Unleashing Britain's Potential', https://assets-global.website-files.com/5da42e2cae7ebd3f8bde353c/5dda924905da587992a064ba_Conservative%202019%20Manifesto.pdf [accessed 06/01/2020]

Costelloe, M. T., Chiricos, T. and Gertz, M. (2009) 'Punitive attitudes toward criminals: Exploring the relevance of crime salience and economic insecurity', in *Punishment and Society*, 11(1), 25–49.

Crawford, A. (2003) 'Contractual Governance of Deviant Behaviour', in *Journal of Law and Society*, 30(4), 479-505.

Crocker, R. H. (1987) 'The Victorian Poor Law in Crisis and Change: Southampton, 1870-1895', in *Albion: A Quarterly Journal Concerned with British Studies*, 19, (1), 19-44.

Croxford, L. and Cowie, M. (2005) 'Accounting for School Performance in Scottish Local Authorities', available at <http://www.ces.ed.ac.uk/PDF%20Files/Brief037.pdf> [accessed 16/02/2018]

Cullen, F.T., Clark, G.A., Cullen, J.B. and Mathers, R. A. (1985) 'Attribution, Salience, and Attitudes toward Criminal Sanctioning', *Criminal Justice and Behavior*, 12(3), 305–331.

D'Ardenne, J. (2015a) 'Planning a Cognitive Interviewing Project', in Collins, D. (eds) *Cognitive Interviewing Practice*. London: SAGE Publications Ltd.

D'Ardenne, J. (2015b) 'Developing Interview Protocols', in Collins, D. (eds) *Cognitive Interviewing Practice*. London: SAGE.

D'Ardenne, J., and Collins, D. (2015) 'Data Management', in Collins, D. (eds) *Cognitive Interviewing Practice*. London: SAGE Publications Ltd.

Daniels, H., Cole, T., Sellman, E., Sutton, J., Visser, J. and Bedward, J. (2003) 'Study of Young People Permanently Excluded from School', School of Education at the University of Birmingham. Nottingham: DfES Publications. Available at <http://webarchive.nationalarchives.gov.uk/20130404090819/https://www.education.gov.uk/publications/eOrderingDownload/RR405.pdf> [accessed 24/02/2018]

Data Parliament (2017) 'Labour Market Regimes', available at http://data.parliament.uk/DepositedPapers/Files/DEP2017-0556/76_Labour_Market_regimes_V6.0.pdf [accessed 23/04/2018]

Daunton, M.J. (1995) *Progress and Poverty: An Economic and Social History of Britain 1700-1850*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Davis, J. (2002) 'The Inner London Education Authority and the William Tyndale Junior School Affair, 1974-1976', in *Oxford Review of Education*, 28(2/3): 275-298.

De Vaus, D.A. (1995) *Surveys in Social Research*. (Fourth Edition). London: Routledge.

de Vries, R., and Reeves, A. (2017) 'Why do people care more about benefit 'scroungers' than billions lost to the rich?' in *The Guardian*, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2017/nov/15/benefit-scroungers-billions-rich-paradise-papers-tax-avoidance> [accessed 01/03/2018]

Deeming, C. (2015) 'Foundations of the Workfare State - Reflections on the Political Transformation of the Welfare State in Britain', in *Social Policy and Administration*, 49(7), 862-886.

Demaine, J. (2002) 'Education policy and contemporary politics', in Demaine, J. (eds) *Education Policy and Contemporary Politics*. London: Macmillan.

DeMaio, T. J., Rothgeb, B. and Hess, J. (1998) Improving survey quality through pretesting (Working Papers in Survey Methodology No. 98/03). Washington, DC: U.S. Census Bureau. Retrieved February 11, 2004, from www.census.gov/srd/papers/pdf/sm98-03.pdf

Denscombe, M. (2014) *The Good Research Guide*. (Fifth Edition). Berkshire: Open University Press.

Department for Communities and Local Government (2015) 'Index of Multiple Deprivation', available at

https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/464430/English_Index_of_Multiple_Deprivation_2015_-_Guidance.pdf [accessed 26/07/2018]

Department for Education (DfE) (2011) 'Permanent and Fixed-Period Exclusions in England: 2009-2010'. Available at: <https://www.gov.uk/government/statistics/permanent-and-fixed-period-exclusions-from-schools-in-england-academic-year-2009-to-2010> [accessed 27/01/2019]

Department for Education (DfE) (2012) 'Exclusion from maintained schools, Academies and pupil referral units in England. A guide for those with legal responsibilities in relation to exclusion' (DfE London).

Department for Education (DfE) (2017a) 'Exclusion from maintained schools, academies and pupil referral units in England: statutory guidance for those with legal responsibilities in relation to exclusion', Department for Education, September 2017, available at

https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/641418/20170831_Exclusion_Stat_guidance_Web_version.pdf [accessed 24/07/2019]

Department for Education (DfE)(2017b) 'Permanent and fixed-period exclusions in England: 2015 to 2016', table 4, available at <https://www.gov.uk/government/statistics/permanent-and-fixed-period-exclusions-in-england-2015-to-2016> [accessed 18/02/2018]

Department for Education (DfE) (2018) 'Permanent and Fixed-Term Exclusions in England: 2016 to 2017'. Available at: <https://www.gov.uk/government/statistics/permanent-and-fixed-period-exclusions-in-england-2016-to-2017> (accessed 27/01/2018)

Department for Work and Pensions (DWP) (2010) 'Universal Credit: Welfare that works', available at https://www.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/48897/universal-credit-full-document.pdf [accessed 12/03/2018]

Department for Work and Pensions (DWP) (2018a) 'Universal Credit and You', available at <https://www.gov.uk/government/publications/universal-credit-and-you> [accessed 04/03/2018]

Department for Work and Pensions (DWP) (2018b) 'Universal Credit Full Service Survey', Department for Work and Pensions, June 2018, Research Report 958, available at https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/714842/universal-credit-full-service-claimant-survey.pdf (accessed 20/10/2019)

Department for Work and Pensions (DWP) (2019) 'Explanatory Memorandum to the Jobseeker's Allowance and Universal Credit (Higher-level Sanctions) (Amendment) Regulations 2019, No. 1357, available at http://www.legislation.gov.uk/uksi/2019/1357/pdfs/uksiem_20191357_en.pdf [accessed 04/02/2020]

Dommett, K. and Pearce, W. (2019) 'What do we know about public attitudes towards experts? Reviewing survey data in the UK and EU', in *White Rose Research Online*, available at <http://eprints.whiterose.ac.uk/146015>

Dorey, P. (2014) 'The legacy of Thatcherism for education policies: markets, managerialism and malice (towards teachers)', in Farrall, S., and Hay, C. (eds) *The Legacy of Thatcherism: Assessing and Exploring Thatcherite Social and Economic Policies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

- Downes, D. and Morgan, R. (1997) 'Dumping the "Hostages to Fortune"?' in Maguire, M., Morgan, R. and Reiner, R. (eds) *The Oxford Handbook of Criminology*. 2nd Edition. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Downes, D. and Morgan, R. (2012) 'Overtaking on the Left? The Politics of Law and Order in the 'Big Society'' in Maguire, M., Morgan, R. and Reiner, R. (eds) *The Oxford Handbook of Criminology*. 5th Edition. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Downie, M. (2019) 'The Vagrancy Act criminalises homeless people, but sadly its harm goes even deeper than that', *Crisis*, available at <https://www.crisis.org.uk/about-us/the-crisis-blog/the-vagrancy-act-criminalises-homeless-people-but-sadly-its-harm-goes-even-deeper-than-that/> [accessed 05/02/2020]
- Driver, S. and Martell, L. (2002) *Blair's Britain*. Cambridge: Polity Press.
- Dunn, Y. (2007) 'Political discourse and 'bad behaviour' in schools: trends under New Labour', *Paper at the British Educational Research Association Annual Conference*, Institute of Education, University of London, 5-8 September 2007, available at www.leeds.ac.uk/educol/documents/166156.htm [accessed 06/04/2020]
- Durand, C. (2016) 'Surveys and Society', in Joye, D., Wolf, C., Smith, T.W. and Fu, Y. (eds) *The Sage Handbook of Survey Methodology*, available at <http://methods.sagepub.com/sheffield.idm.oclc.org/Book/the-sage-handbook-of-survey-methodology> [accessed 20/03/2020]
- Dwyer, P. and Wright, S. (2014) 'Universal Credit, ubiquitous conditionality and its implications for social citizenship', in *Journal of Poverty and Social Justice*, 22(1), 27-35.
- Education Act 1996, c.56. Available at <http://www.legislation.gov.uk/ukpga/1996/56/section/19> [accessed 17/03/2020]
- Elton (1989) 'The Elton Report: Discipline in Schools', *Report of the Committee of Enquiry*, Department of Education and Science and the Welsh Office. London: Her Majesty's Stationary Office, available at <http://www.educationengland.org.uk/documents/elton/elton1989.html> [accessed 30/11/2017]
- Ericsson, K. A. and Simon, H.A. (1980) 'Verbal reports as data', in *Psychological Review*, 87, 215-251.
- Evans, D.T. (1989) 'Section 28: law, myth and paradox', *Critical Social Policy*, 9, 73-95.

Evans, J. (2010) 'Not present and not correct: Understanding and preventing school exclusions', Barnardo's, available at http://www.barnardos.org.uk/not_present_and_not_correct.pdf [accessed 10/01/2018]

Farnworth, M., Bennett, K, and West, V.M. (1996) 'Mail vs Telephone Surveys of Criminal Justice Attitudes: A Comparative Analysis', in *Journal of Quantitative Criminology*, 12(1), 113-133.

Farrall, S. (2017) 'Using Cognitive Interviews to Guide Questionnaire Construction for Cross-National Crime Surveys', in *Oxford Research Encyclopaedia of Criminology, Criminology and Criminal Justice*, 1-34.

Farrall, S., Bannister, J., Ditton, J. and Gilchrist, E. (1997) 'Questioning the Measurement of the 'Fear of Crime': Findings from a Major Methodological Study', in *British Journal of Criminology*, 37(4), 658-679.

Farrall, S., Burke, N. and Hay, C. (2016) 'Revisiting Margaret Thatcher's law and order agenda: The slow burning fuse of punitiveness', in *British Politics*, 11(2), 205-231.

Farrall, S. and Hay, C. (2014) 'Locating 'Thatcherism' in the 'here and now'', in Farrall, S., and Hay, C. (eds) *The Legacy of Thatcherism: Assessing and Exploring Thatcherite Social and Economic Policies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Farrall, S. Jackson, J. and Gray, E. (2009) *Social Order and the Fear of Crime in Contemporary Times*. Oxford: Oxford University Press: Clarendon Studies in Criminology.

Farrall, S. and Jennings, W. (2014) 'Thatcherism and crime: the beast that never roared?', in Farrall, S., and Hay, C. (eds) *The Legacy of Thatcherism: Assessing and Exploring Thatcherite Social and Economic Policies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Farrall, S. and Jennings, W. (2016) 'Thatcherism and crime: the beast that never roared?' in *The Legacy of Thatcherism: Assessing and Exploring Thatcherite Social and Economic Policies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Faulkner, D. (2001) *Crime, State and Citizen*. Winchester: Waterside Press.

Field, A. (2018) *Discovering Statistics Using IBM SPSS Statistics*. (Fifth Edition). London: Sage.

Finn, D. (2000) 'From full employment to employability: a new deal for Britain's unemployed?', in *International Journal of Manpower*, 21(5), 384-399.

Fletcher, D.R. and Wright, S. (2017) 'A hand up or a slap down? Criminalising benefit claimants in Britain via strategies of surveillance, sanctions and deterrence', in *Critical Social Policy*, 1-22.

Font, S.A. and Gershoff, E.T. (2017) 'Contextual Factors Associate with the Use of Corporal Punishments in U.S. Public Schools', in *Children and Youth Services Review*, 79, 408-417.

Fowler, F.J. (1995) *Improving Survey Questions: Design and Evaluation* (Vol.38). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

Fraser, N. (1989) *Unruly Practices, Discourse and Gender in Contemporary Social Theory*. Minnesota: University of Minnesota Press.

Friesen, A., and Ksiazkiewicz, A. (2014) 'Do Political Attitudes and Religiosity Share a Genetic Path?', *Political Behavior*, 1–28.

Gallup, G.H. (1974) 'Sixth Annual Gallup Poll of Public Attitudes toward Education', *The Phi Delta Kappan*, 56 (1), 20-32.

Gamble, A. (1988) *The Free Economy and The Strong State: The Politics of Thatcherism*. Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan.

Garland, D. (2001) *The Culture of Control: Crime and Social Order in Contemporary Society*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Garas, N., Blair, J. and Conrad, F. (2003) 'Inside the black box: Analysis of interviewer-responder interaction in the cognitive interview', *Paper presented at the 2003 Federal Committee on Statistical Methodology Research Conference*, Arlington, VA.

Garrisi, D. (2015) 'On the skin of a soldier: The story of flogging', in *Clinics of Dermatology*, 33(6), 693 – 696.

Gayle, D. (2019) 'Home Secretary Priti Patel criticized over wish for criminals 'to feel terror'', *The Guardian*, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2019/aug/03/priti-patel-home-secretary-wants-criminals-to-literally-feel-terror> [accessed 04/12/2019]

Gerber, M. M. and Jackson, J. (2016) 'Authority and Punishment: On the Ideological Basis of Punitive Attitudes towards Criminals', in *Psychiatry, Psychology and Law*, 23(1), 113–134.

Gest, J. (2016) *The New Minority: White Working Class Politics in an Age of Immigration and Inequality*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Gibb, N. (2016) 'The importance of the curriculum speech', Department of Education, available at <https://dera.ioe.ac.uk/26176/1/The%20importance%20of%20the%20curriculum%20-%20Speeches%20-%20GOV%20UK.pdf> [accessed 17/06/2019]

- Gill, K., Quilter-Pinner, H. and Swift, D. (2017) 'Making The Difference: Breaking the link between school exclusion and social exclusion', *IPPR*, available at <http://www.ippr.org/publications/making-the-difference> [accessed 05/01/2018]
- Golding, P. and Middleton, S. (1982) *Images of Welfare*. Oxford: Martin Robertson & Company Ltd.
- Gordon, A. (2001) 'School Exclusions in England: children's voices and adult solutions?', in *Educational Studies*, 27, 69-85.
- Gould, M. (2007) 'Sparing the Rod', *The Guardian*, 9th January 2007, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/education/2007/jan/09/schools.uk1> [accessed 27/11/2017]
- Gov.uk (2010) 'Universal Credit introduced: Press Release', available at <https://www.gov.uk/government/news/universal-credit-introduced> [accessed 12/03/2018]
- Gov.uk (2018) *School discipline and exclusion*, available at <https://www.gov.uk/school-discipline-exclusions> [accessed 10/01/2018]
- Grasmick, H.G., Morgan, C.S. and Kennedy, M.B (1992) 'Support for Corporal Punishment in the Schools: A Comparison of the Effects of Socioeconomic Status and Religion', in *Social Science Quarterly*, 73(1), 177-187.
- Grasmick, H. G. and McGill, A. L. (1994) 'Religion, attribution style and punitiveness towards juvenile offenders', in *Criminology*, 32(1), 23-46.
- Grasso, M.T., Farrall, S., Gray, E., Hay, C. and Jennings, W. (2017) 'Thatcher's Children, Blair's Babies, Political Socialisation and Trickle-down Value Change: An Age, Period, and Cohort Analysis', in *British Journal of Political Science*, 1-20.
- Grasso, M.T., Farrall, S., Gray, E., Hay, C. and W. Jennings (2018) 'Socialisation and generational political trajectories: An age, period and cohort analysis of political participation in Britain', in *Journal of Elections, Public Opinion, and Parties* (Open Access) <https://doi.org/10.1080/17457289.2018.1476359>
- Gray, M. (2015) 'Survey mode and its implications for cognitive interviewing', in Collins, D. (eds) *Cognitive Interviewing Practice*. London: SAGE Publications Ltd.
- Gray, E., Grasso, M., Farrall, S., Jennings, W. and Hay, C. (2018) 'Political socialisation, worry about crime, and antisocial behaviour: an analysis of age, period and cohort effects', in *British Journal of Criminology*, Open Access.

- Grayling, C. (2012) 'Chris Grayling 2012 Conservative Party Conference Speech, UKPOL, available at <http://www.ukpol.co.uk/chris-grayling-2012-conservative-party-conference-speech/> [accessed 12/03/2020]
- Green, C. (2014) 'British people stopped believing in the benefits system due to Tony Blair, researchers claim', *Independent* 25th September 2014, available at <https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/british-people-stopped-believing-in-the-benefits-due-to-tony-blair-researchers-claim-9753824.html> [accessed 02/08/2018]
- Green, D. (2008) 'When Children Kill Children', in Green, D. (eds) *When Children Kill Children: Penal Populism and Political Culture*. Oxford Scholarship Online.
- Gregory, J. (2008) 'Poverty from Workhouse to the Welfare State', in *History Today*, 58(7), 44-52.
- Greydanus, D.E., Pratt, H.D., Spates, C.R., Blake-Dreher, A.E., Greydanus-Gearhart, M.A. and Patel, D.R. (2003) 'Corporal Punishment in Schools', in *Journal of Adolescent Health*, 32(5), 385-393.
- Groves, R.M., Fowler, F.J., Couper, M.P., Lepkowski, J.M., Singer, E. and Tourangeau, R. (2009) *Survey Methodology*. Second Edition. Hoboken, NJ Wiley.
- Haddon, C. (2012) 'Making policy in opposition: the development of Universal Credit, 2005-2010', *Institute for Government*, available at <https://www.instituteforgovernment.org.uk/sites/default/files/publications/Universal%20Credit%20final.pdf> [accessed 12/03/2018]
- Guardian (2012) 'Workless families: a convenient untruth', available at <https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2012/feb/02/workless-families-convenient-truth-editorial> [accessed 08/08/2018]
- Hall, S. (1979) 'The great moving right show', *Marxism Today*, available at https://mronline.org/wp-content/uploads/2019/06/79_01_hall.pdf [accessed 25/10/2020]
- Hamzelou, J. (2017) 'Scotland has banned smacking children – so should everyone else', *The New Scientist*, available at <https://www.newscientist.com/article/2151013-scotland-has-banned-smacking-children-so-should-everyone-else/> [accessed 24/02/2018]
- Hanslmaier, M. and Baier, D. (2016) 'Rising punitivity in times of economic crisis? Assessing the relationship between the economic situation and the longing for harsher sanctioning', in *International Journal of Comparative and Applied Criminal Justice*, 40(4), 293-306.
- Harding, R. (2017) 'Key Findings: A kind-hearted but not soft-hearted country', *British Social*

Attitudes Survey 34, The National Centre for Social Research, available at www.bsa.natcen.ac.uk/media/39195/bsa34_key-findings.pdf

Harris, R. (2003) 'Government and the economy, 1688-1850', in Floud, R., and Johnson, P. (eds) *The Economic History of Modern Britain: Volume 1: Industrialisation, 1700 – 1860*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Harvey, D. (2005) *A Brief History of Neoliberalism*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Hay, C. (1996) *Restating Social and Political Change*. Buckingham: Open University Press.

Hay, C. and Farrall, S. (2014) 'Interrogating and conceptualising the legacy of Thatcherism', in Farrall, S., and Hay, C. (eds) *The Legacy of Thatcherism: Assessing and Exploring Thatcherite Social and Economic Policies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Hayes, M. (1994) *The New Right in Britain: An Introduction to Theory and Practice*. London: Pluto Press.

HC Deb (28 January 1985) vol. 72, cc38-117, available at http://hansard.millbanksystems.com/commons/1985/jan/28/education-corporal-punishment-bill#S6CV0072P0_19850128_HOC_295 [accessed 11/01/2018]

HC Deb (28 January 1997) vol. 289, cc212-40, available at <http://hansard.millbanksystems.com/commons/1997/jan/28/corporal-punishment-lawful-with-parental> [accessed 11/01/2018]

HCRP (2019) 'Background – where we started', *Hull Centre for Restorative Practice*, available at http://www.hullcentreforrestorativepractice.co.uk/?page_id=326 [accessed 24/07/2019]

Heerwegh, D. (2009) 'Mode differences between face-to-face and web surveys: An experimental investigation of data quality and social desirability effects', *International Journal of Public Opinion Research*, 21(1), 111-121.

Heerwegh, D. and Loosveldt, G. (2007) 'Personalising email contacts: Its influence on web survey response rate and social desirability response bias', *International Journal of Public Opinion Research*, 19(2), 258-268.-not read

Heerwegh, D. and Loosveldt, G. (2008) 'Face-to-face versus web surveying in a high-internet-coverage population', *Public Opinion Quarterly*, 72(5), 836-846

Hills, J. (2001) 'Poverty and social security: What rights? Whose responsibilities?', in Park, A., Curtice, J., Thomson, K., Jarvis, L., Bromley, C. and Stratford, N. (eds) *British Social Attitudes, the 18th Report*. London: Sage.

Hill, M. and Walker, A. (2014) 'What were the lasting effects of Thatcher's legacy for social security? The burial of Beveridge?', in Farrall, S., and Hay, C. (eds) *The Legacy of Thatcherism: Assessing and Exploring Thatcherite Social and Economic Policies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

HM Prison and Probation Service (2019) 'Offender Management: Prison Population', available at <https://data.justice.gov.uk/prisons/offender-management> [accessed 02/01/2020]

Hogan, M. J., Chiricos, T. and Gertz, M. (2005) 'Economic insecurity, blame, and punitive attitudes', in *Justice Quarterly*, 22(3), 392–412.

Holborn, M. (2017) 'Beveridge Report – archive 1942', *The Guardian Education Centre*, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/gnmeducationcentre/from-the-archive-blog/2017/nov/01/beveridge-report-archive-1942> [accessed 28/03/2018]

Home Office (2002) 'A Summary of Recorded Crime Data from 1898 to 2001/02', at <https://www.gov.uk/government/statistics/historical-crime-data>, accessed 05/01/2020

Home Office (2013) 'Anti-Social Behaviour, Crime and Policing Bill: Fact sheet: Replacing the ASBO (Parts 1 and 2), available at [https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/251312/01 Factsheet Replacing the ASBO - updated for Lords.pdf](https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/251312/01_Factsheet_Replacing_the_ASBO_-_updated_for_Lords.pdf) [accessed 19/12/2019]

Home Office (2015) 'A Summary of Recorded Crime Data from year ending March 2003 to year ending March 2015', at <https://www.gov.uk/government/statistics/historical-crime-data>, accessed 05/01/2020

Home Office (2019a) 'Population bulletin: weekly 29 November 2019', Prison population figures: 2019, available at <https://www.gov.uk/government/statistics/prison-population-figures-2019> [accessed 02/12/2019]

Home Office (2019b) 'Police recorded crime Community Safety Partnership open data tables, from year ending March 2016 to year ending June 2019', at <https://www.gov.uk/government/statistics/police-recorded-crime-open-data-tables>, accessed 05/01/2020

Home Office (2020) 'Offender Management', available at <https://data.justice.gov.uk/prisons/offender-management> [accessed 02/01/2020]

Hough, M. (1996) 'People Talking About Punishment', in *The Howard Journal of Crime and Justice*, 35(3), 191-214

Hough, M., Lewis, H. and Walker, N. (1988) *Public attitudes to sentencing: surveys from five countries*. Aldershot: Gower Publishing Company Limited.

Hough, M. and Moxon, D. (1985) 'Dealing with offenders: Popular opinion and the views of victims, findings from the British Crime Survey', in *Howard Journal*, 24(3), 160–175.

Hough, M. and Park, A. (2002) 'How malleable are attitudes to crime and punishment? Findings from a British deliberative poll', in Roberts, J. and Hough, M. (eds) *Changing Attitudes to Punishment: Public Opinion, Crime and Justice*. Oxon: Willians Publishing.

Hough, M. and Roberts, J. (2005) *Understanding Public Attitudes to Criminal Justice*. McGraw-Hill Education.

House of Commons (2019a) 'Youth Detention: solitary confinement and restraint', Nineteenth Report of Session 2017-2018, *Joint Committee of Human Rights*, HC 994 HL Paper 343, available at <https://publications.parliament.uk/pa/jt201719/jtselect/jtrights/994/994.pdf> [accessed 16/03/2020]

House of Commons (2019b) 'Youth Detention: solitary confinement and restraint: Government's Response to the Committee's Nineteenth Report of Session 2017-2018, Seventh Special Report of Session 2017-2019, *House of Commons*, HC 2547, available at <https://publications.parliament.uk/pa/jt201719/jtselect/jtrights/2547/2547.pdf> [accessed 16/03/2020]

Hutchinson, J. and Crenna-Jennings, W. (2019) 'Unexplained pupil exits from schools: A growing problem?', Working Paper, *Education Policy Institute*, available at https://epi.org.uk/wp-content/uploads/2019/04/EPI_Unexplained-pupil-exits_2019.pdf [accessed 15/07/2019]

Institute of Education (1989) 'Records of the Society of Teachers Opposed to Physical Punishment (STOPP)', Institute of Education, University of London, available at [https://archive.ioe.ac.uk/Dserve/dserve.exe?dsqIni=Dserve.ini&dsqApp=Archive&dsqCmd=Show.tcl&dsqDb=Catalog&dsqPos=0&dsqSearch=\(RefNo==%27STO%27\)](https://archive.ioe.ac.uk/Dserve/dserve.exe?dsqIni=Dserve.ini&dsqApp=Archive&dsqCmd=Show.tcl&dsqDb=Catalog&dsqPos=0&dsqSearch=(RefNo==%27STO%27)) [accessed 15/07/2019]

Ipsos MORI (2000) 'New Findings Highlight Link Between School Exclusion and Offending', Ipsos, available at <https://www.ipsos.com/ipsos-mori/en-uk/new-findings-highlight-link-between-school-exclusion-and-offending> [accessed 20/08/2018]

Ipsos MORI (2007) A study into the views of parents on the physical punishment of children for the Department for Children, Schools and Families (DCSF), October 2007, available at <http://dera.ioe.ac.uk/6886/8/Section%2058%20Parental%20Survey.pdf> [accessed 24/02/2018]

Jackson, J. (2004) 'Experience and expression: Social and cultural significance in the fear of crime', in *British Journal of Criminology* 44, 946-66.

Jackson, J. and Gray, E. (2010) 'Functional fear and public insecurities about crime', in *British Journal of Criminology*, 50 (1), 1-22.

Jackson, P.M. (2014) 'Commentary: The long run economic consequences of Mrs Thatcher', in Farrall, S. and Hay, C. (eds) *The Legacy of Thatcherism: Assessing and Exploring Thatcherite Social and Economic Policies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Jacobson, J. and Hough, M. (2018) 'Missed Opportunities and New Risks: Penal Policy in England and Wales in the Past Twenty-Five Years', in *The Political Quarterly*, 89(2), 177-186.

Jeffery, B., Devine, D., and Thomas, P. (2018) 'There's nothing: Unemployment, attitudes to work and punitive welfare reform in post-crash Salford', in *Sociological Research Online*, 23(4), 795-811

Jennings W., Farrall, S., Gray, E. and Hay, C. (2017a) 'Penal Populism and the Public Thermostat: Crime, Public Punitiveness, and Public Policy', in *Governance: An International Journal of Policy, Administration and Institutions*, 30(3), 463-481.

Jennings, W., Farrall, S., Gray, E. and Hay, C. (2017b) 'Moral Panics and Punctuated Equilibrium in Public Policy: An Analysis of the Criminal Justice Policy Agenda in Britain', *The Policy Studies Journal*, 1-28.

Johnson, B. (2019) 'Left wingers will howl. But it's time to make criminal afraid – not the public: PM Boris Johnson on his pledge to come down hard on crime and reverse the balance of fear', in *The Daily Mail*, 10th August 2019, available at <https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-7345031/PM-BORIS-JOHNSON-pledge-come-hard-crime.html> [accessed 04/12/2019]

Jones, K. (2009) 'Culture and creative learning: a literature review', *Creativity, Culture and Education Series*, available at <https://www.creativitycultureeducation.org/wp-content/uploads/2018/10/CCE-lit-review-83.pdf> [accessed 01/11/2020]

Joseph Rowntree Foundation (1994) 'The effects of the 1986 Social Security Act on family incomes: findings', *Social Policy Research* 54, available at <https://www.jrf.org.uk/file/37496/> [accessed 02/08/2018]

Kaiser, H.F. and Rice, J. (1974) 'Little Jiffy, Mark iv', in *Educational and Psychological Measurement*, 34(1), 111-117.

Karstedt, S. and Farrall, S. (2006) 'The Moral Economy of Everyday Crimes: Markets, Consumers and Citizens', in *British Journal of Criminology*, 46(6), 1011-1036.

Kim, C.Y., Losen, D.J. and Hewitt, D.T. (2010) *The School-to-Prison Pipeline: Structuring Legal Reform*. New York: New York University Press.

King, A. and Maruna, S. (2009) 'Is a conservative just a liberal who has been mugged?: Exploring the origins of punitive views', in *Punishment & Society*, 11(2), 147–169.

Kleck, G. and Baker Jackson, D. (2016) 'Does Crime Cause Punitiveness?', in *Crime and Delinquency*, 63(12), 1572-1599.

Kornhauser, R. (2015) 'Economic individualism and punitive attitudes: A cross-national analysis', in *Punishment and Society*, 17(1), 27–53.

Kreuter, F., Presser, S. and Tourangeau, R. (2008) 'Social desirability bias in CATI, IVR, and web surveys: The effects of mode and question sensitivity', *Public Opinion Quarterly*, 72(5), 847-865.

Kury, H., and Ferdinand, T. (1999) 'Public Opinion and Punitivity', *International Journal of Law and Psychiatry*, 22, 373-92. Labour Party Manifesto (2019) 'It's Time For Real Change', *The Labour Party*, available at <https://labour.org.uk/wp-content/uploads/2019/11/Real-Change-Labour-Manifesto-2019.pdf> [accessed 12/03/2020]

Lacey, N. (2008) *The prisoner's dilemma: political economy and punishment in contemporary democracies*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Lambert, T. (2016) 'A Brief History of Corporal Punishment', available at www.localhistories.org/corporal.html [accessed 24/01/2018]

Landale, J. (2013) 'Party Conferences: What's at stake for the leaders?', *BBC News*, available at <https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-politics-24085130> (accessed 17/02/2019)

Larkin, P.M. (2007) 'The Criminalization of Social Security Law: Towards a Punitive Welfare State', in *Journal of Law and Society*, 34(3), 295-320.

Lawrence, P. (2017) 'The Vagrancy Act (1824) and the Persistence of Pre-emptive Policing in England since 1750', in *The British Journal of Criminology*, 57(3), 513 – 531.

- Lindert, P.H. (1994) 'Unequal Living Standards', in Floud, R. and McCloskey, D. (eds) *The Economic History of Britain Since 1700: Volume 1.1700-1860*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Loopstra, R. and Lalor, D. (2017) 'Financial Insecurity, food insecurity, and disability: The profile of people receiving emergency food from The Trussell Trust Foodbank Network in Britain', *The Trussell Trust*, available at https://www.trusselltrust.org/wp-content/uploads/sites/2/2017/07/OU_Report_final_01_08_online2.pdf [accessed 06/04/2020]
- Lupton, R. and Obolenskaya, P. (2013) 'Labour's Record on Education: Policy, Spending and Outcomes 1997-2010', *Social Policy in a Cold Climate*, Working Paper 3, July 2013, available at <https://sticerd.lse.ac.uk/dps/case/spcc/wp03.pdf> [accessed 17/03/2020]
- Maguire, M. (1988) 'EFFECTS OF THE "P.A.C.E." PROVISIONS ON DETENTION AND QUESTIONING: Some preliminary findings', in *British Journal of Criminology*, 28 (1), 19-43.
- MacDonald, R., Shildrick, T. and Furlong, A. (2013) 'In search of 'intergenerational cultures of worklessness': Hunting the Yeti and shooting zombies', in *Critical Social Policy*, 34(2), 199-220.
- MacDonald, R., Shildrick, T. and Furlong, A. (2014) 'Benefits Street' and the Myth of Workless Communities', *Sociological Research Online*, 19(1), 1-6.
- Macmillan, L. (2013) 'Justifying 'Never-working Families'? CMPO Viewpoint: A Blog from The Centre for Market and Public Organisation, available at <https://cmpo.wordpress.com/2013/05/03/justifying-never-working-families/> [accessed 04/02/2020]
- Marriott, L. (2017) 'An investigation of attitudes towards tax evasion and welfare fraud in New Zealand', in *Australian and New Zealand Journal of Criminology*, 50(1), 123-145.
- Matthews, R. (2005) 'The Myth of Punitiveness', in *Theoretical Criminology*, 9(2), 175-201.
- McAndrew, S. 2020 'Belonging, believing, behaving, and Brexit: Channels of religiosity and religious identity in support for leaving the European Union', *The British Journal of Sociology*, *Articles in Press*.
- McAra, L. and McVie, S. (2013) 'Delivering justice for children and young people: Key messages from the Edinburgh study of youth transitions and crime', in Dockley, A. (eds) *Justice for Young People: Papers by Winners of the Research Medal 2013*, Howard League for Penal Reform, 3-14. Available at:

http://www.research.ed.ac.uk/portal/files/17725465/Justice_for_young_people_web.pdf

[accessed 30/03/2020]

McClure, T.E. and May, D.C. (2008) 'Dealing with Misbehaviour at Schools in Kentucky: Theoretical and Contextual Predictors of Use of Corporal Punishment', in *Youth & Society*, 39, 406–429.

McCluskey, G., Cole, T., Daniels, H., Thompson, I. and Tawell, A. (2019) 'Exclusion from school in Scotland and across the UK: Contrasts and questions', in *British Educational Research Journal*, 45(6), 1140-1159.

McKay, S. (2014) 'Benefits, poverty and social justice', in *Journal of Poverty and Social Justice*, 22, 3-10.

McVicar, M. (1990) 'Education Policy: Education as a Business?', in Savage, S.P. and Robins, L. (eds) *Public Policy Under Thatcher*. Hampshire: MacMillan Education Ltd.

Merrett, F. and Tang, W.M. (1994) 'The attitudes of British primary school pupils to praise, rewards, punishments and reprimands', in *British Journal of Educational Psychology*, 64, 91-103

Meshor, J. (1981) 'The 1980 Social Security Legislation: The Great Welfare State Chainsaw Massacre?', in *British Journal of Law and Society*, 8(1), 119-127.

Middleton, J. (2008) 'The Experience of Corporal Punishments in Schools, 1890 – 1940', in *History of Education*, 37(2), 253-275.

Miller, K., Willson, S., Chepp, V. and Padilla, J.L. (2014) *Cognitive Interviewing Methodology*. Hoboken, NJ: Wiley.

Ministry of Justice (2010) 'Breaking the Cycle: Effective Punishment, Rehabilitation and Sentencing of Offenders'. Cm 7972. London: TSO. Available at:

<http://www.justice.gov.uk/consultations/docs/breaking-the-cycle.pdf> [accessed 13/06/2017]

Ministry of Justice (2013) 'Story of the Prison Population: 1993-2012 England and Wales', January 2013, Ministry of Justice, available at

https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/218185/story-prison-population.pdf [accessed 06/01/2020]

Morgan, R. and Clarkson, C. (1995) *The Politics of Sentencing Reform*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Morris, S. (2020) 'Wales to ban parents smacking their children from 2022', *The Guardian*, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2020/jan/28/wales-to-ban-parents->

[smacking-their-children-from-2022](#) [accessed 28/05/2020]

Munn, P. and Lloyd, G. (2005) 'Exclusion and Excluded Pupils', in *British Educational Research Journal*, 31 (2), 205-221.

NatCen (2020) *NatCen Social Research*, available at <http://natcen.ac.uk/about-us/> [accessed 08/03/2020]

National Archives (2012) 'Operational Selection Policy 5: The administration of Social Security 1979-1997, available at <https://www.nationalarchives.gov.uk/documents/INFORMATION-MANAGEMENT/OSP5.PDF> [accessed 04/02/2020]

National Archives (2018) 'The Welfare State', available at http://www.nationalarchives.gov.uk/pathways/citizenship/brave_new_world/welfare.htm [accessed 29/03/2018]

National Foundation for Educational Research (NFER) (2012) 'NFER Teacher Voice Omnibus: February 2012 Survey: Pupil Behaviour', *National Foundation for Educational Research*, Department for Education, available at https://www.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/205871/DFE-RR219.pdf [accessed 28/11/2017]

National Probation Service (n.d.) 'NPS Operating Model: Version 1.0', *National Probation Service*, available at https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/555747/NPS-Operating-Model.pdf [accessed 04/04/2020]

National Statistics (2016) 'Exclusions Dataset 2014/15', available at <http://www.gov.scot/Topics/Statistics/Browse/School-Education/exclusiondatasets/exclusionsdataset2015> [accessed 18/02/2018]

Newburn, T. (2003) *Crime and Criminal Justice Policy*. Second Edition. London: Pearson.

Newburn, T. (2007) "Tough on Crime": Penal Policy in England and Wales', in *Crime and Justice*, 36, (1), 425-470.

Ogg, T. and Kaill, T. (2010) *A New Secret Garden? Alternative Provision, Exclusion and Children's Rights*. London, Civitas.

ONS (2016) 'Regional gross disposable household income, UK', *Office for National Statistics*, available at <https://www.ons.gov.uk/economy/regionalaccounts/grossdisposablehouseholdincome/bulletins/regionalgrossdisposablehouseholdincomegdhi/1997to2016> [accessed 25/07/2018]

ONS (2019) 'Average household income, UK: Financial year ending 2018', *Office for National Statistics*, available at <https://www.ons.gov.uk/peoplepopulationandcommunity/personalandhouseholdfinances/incomeandwealth/bulletins/householddisposableincomeandinequality/yearending2018> [accessed 05/06/2019]

ONS (2020) 'Studies about people, families, and households', Office for National Statistics, available at <https://www.ons.gov.uk/surveys/informationforhouseholdsandindividuals/householdandindividualsurveys/opinionsandlifestylesurvey#how-to-take-part-in-the-study> [accessed 28/10/2020]

Owen, S.S. and Wagner, K. (2006) 'Explaining School Corporal Punishment: Evangelical Protestantism And Social Capital in a Path Model', in *Social Justice Research*, 19(4), 471-499.

Palasinski, M. and Shortland, N. (2017) 'Factors behind support for harsher punishments for common and uncommon offenders', in *Safer Communities*, 16(2), 55–63.

Pallant, J. (2016) *SPSS Survival Manual: a step by step guide to data analysis using IBM SPSS*. Sixth Edition. Maidenhead: Open University Press.

Pantazis, C. (2016) 'Policies and discourses of poverty during a time of recession and Austerity', in *Critical Social Policy*, 36(1), 3-20.

Parker-Jenkins, M. (1999) *Sparing the rod: schools, discipline and children's rights*. Wiltshire: Trentham Books Limited.

Persaud, N. (2010) 'Pilot Study', in Salkind, N.J. (eds) *Encyclopedia of Research Design*. Thousand Oaks: SAGE Publications.

Poster, C.D., Blandford, S. and Welton, J.M. (1999) *Restructuring: the key to effective school management*. Oxford: Taylor and Francis.

Presser, S., Jennifer, M., Rothgeb, M.P., Couper, J.T., Lessler, E.M., Martin, J. and Singer, E. (2004) 'Methods for Testing and Evaluating Survey Questions', in *The Public Opinion Quarterly*, 68(1), 109-130.

Priede, C. and Farrall, S. (2010) 'Comparing results from different styles of cognitive interviewing: 'verbal probing' vs. 'thinking aloud', in *International Journal of Research Methodology*, 14(4), 271-287.

- Priede, C., Jokinen, A., Ruuskanenc, E. and Farrall, S. (2014) 'Which probes are most useful when undertaking cognitive interviews?', in *International Journal of Social Research Methodology*, 17(5), 559-568.
- Prison Reform Trust (2017) 'Prison: the facts', Bromley Briefings Summer 2017, available at <http://www.prisonreformtrust.org.uk/portals/0/documents/bromley%20briefings/summer%202017%20factfile.pdf> [accessed 05/09/2018]
- Reed, J. (2003) 'A Review of New Labour's Policy on School Exclusion: The Political Challenge of School Disaffection in England', *Institutue for Public Policy Research*, available at <https://www.ingentaconnect.com/content/ioep/ijsd/2003/00000001/00000002/art00005?crawler=true> [accessed 28/05/2020]
- Reeve, K. (2017) 'Welfare conditionality, benefit sanctions and homelessness in the UK: ending the 'something for nothing culture' or punishing the poor?', in *Journal of Poverty and Social Justice*, 25(1), 65–78.
- Reiner, R. (2000) 'Crime and Control in Britain', in *Sociology*, 34(1), 71-94.
- Rentoul, J. (1997) *Tony Blair*. London: Warner Books.
- Riddell, P. (1985) *The Thatcher Government*. (Second Edition). Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- Riddell, P. (1989) *The Thatcher Decade*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- Riley, D. (2007) 'Anti-social behaviour: children, schools and parents', in *Education and the Law*, 19(3-4), 221-236.
- Ritchie, J. and Spencer, L. (1994) 'Qualitative data analysis for applied policy research', in Bryman, A. (eds) *Analyzing Qualitative Data*. London: Routledge.
- Roberts, J.V., Stalans, L.J. and Indermaur, D., & Hough M. (2003) *Penal populism and public opinion: Lessons from five countries*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Roberts, L. D. and Indermaur, D. (2007) 'Predicting punitive attitudes in Australia', in *Psychiatry, Psychology and Law*, 14(1), 56–65.
- Sage, D. (2012) 'Fair Conditions and Fair Consequences? Exploring New Labour, Welfare Contractualism and Social Attitudes', in *Social Policy and Society*, 11(3), 359-373.
- Sanders, A., Young, R. and Burton, M. (2010) *Criminal Justice*. Fourth edition. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Sanders, B. and Albanese, F. (2017) 'An examination of the scale and impact of enforcement interventions on street homeless people in England and Wales', *Crisis*, available at <https://www.crisis.org.uk/media/237532/an-examination-of-the-scale-and-impact-of-enf>

[orcement 2017.pdf](#) [accessed 12/07/2018]

Savage, S.P. (1990) 'A War on Crime? Law and Order Policies in the 1980s' in Savage, S.P. and Robins, L. (eds) *Public Policy Under Thatcher*. Hampshire: MacMillan Education Ltd.

Schmuecker, K. (2016) 'We need to get Universal Credit back on track', *Joseph Rowntree Foundation*, available at <https://www.jrf.org.uk/blog/we-need-get-universal-credit-back-track> [accessed 20/10/2019]

Schofield, T. P. and Butterworth, P. (2015) 'Patterns of welfare attitudes in the Australian population', in *PLoS ONE*, 10(11), 1–14.

Schwarz, N. (2007) 'Cognitive Aspects of Survey Methodology', in *Applied Cognitive Psychology*, 21, 277-287.

Scottish Government (2011) 'National guidance for schools and local authorities in managing school exclusions', available at <http://www.gov.scot/Publications/2011/03/17095258/0> [accessed 18/02/2018]

Scottish Government (2017a) 'Exclusions Dataset 2016/17', available at <https://www2.gov.scot/Topics/Statistics/Browse/School-Education/exclusiondatasets/exclusionsdataset2017> [accessed 21/02/2020]

Scottish Government (2017b) 'Included, Engaged and Involved Part 2: A Positive Approach to Preventing and Managing School Exclusions', available at <https://www.gov.scot/publications/included-engaged-involved-part-2-positive-approach-preventing-managing-school/> (accessed 28/01/2019)

Scottish Government (2018) 'School Exclusions 2016/17', available at <https://www2.gov.scot/Topics/Statistics/Browse/School-Education/exclusiondatasets/exclusionsdataset2017> (accessed 28/01/2019)

Scottish Prison Service (2020) 'SPS Prison Population', available at <https://www.sps.gov.uk/Corporate/Information/SPSPopulation.aspx> [accessed 10/01/2020]

Sefton, T. (2005) 'Give and take: attitudes to redistribution', in Park, A., Curtice, J., Thomson, K., Bromley, C., Phillips, M. and Johnson, M. (eds) *British Social Attitudes, the 22nd Report – Two terms of New Labour: the public's reaction*. London: Sage.

Select Committee (1997) 'Select Committee on Social Security First Report: Tax and Benefits, An Interim Report', available at <https://publications.parliament.uk/pa/cm199798/cmselect/cmsocsec/283i/ss0104.htm#note20> [accessed 02/08/2018]

Sheehy, K. (2015) 'Explainer: what happens to kids who are kicked out of school', *The Conversation*, available at <https://theconversation.com/explainer-what-happens-to-kids-who-are-kicked-out-of-school-36522> [accessed 26/01/2018]

Skinns, L. (2010) 'Stop the clock? Predictors of detention without charge in police custody areas', *Criminology and Criminal Justice*, 10(3), 303-320.

Skinns, L. (2011) *Police Custody*. Ullompton, UK: Willan Publishing.

Smith, R. (2003) *Youth Justice*. Collumpton: Willan Publishing.

Smith, R., Aston, H. and Pyle, K. (2012) *NFER Teacher Voice Omnibus November 2012 Survey: School exclusions*. Slough: NFER. Available at <https://www.nfer.ac.uk/publications/99930/99930.pdf> [accessed 30/11/2017]

Solomon, E. and Allen, R. (2009) 'Out of Trouble: Reducing child imprisonment in England and Wales – lessons from abroad', *Prison Reform Trust*, <http://www.ohrn.nhs.uk/resource/policy/Reducingchildimprisonment2009.pdf> [accessed 26/05/2020]

Spiranovic, C. A., Roberts, L. D. and Indermaur, D. (2012) 'What predicts punitiveness? An examination of predictors of punitive attitudes towards Offenders in Australia', in *Psychiatry, Psychology and Law*, 19(2), 249–261.

Sprott, J.B. and Doob, A. N. (1997) 'Fear, victimization and attitudes to sentencing, the courts, and the police', in *Canadian Journal of Criminology*, 39(3), 275–291.

Sprott, J. B. (1999) 'Are members of the public tough on crime? The dimensions of public "punitiveness"', in *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 27, 467–474.

Stanley, L. and Hartman, T.K. (2016) 'SPERI British Political Economy Brief No. 22: Welfare recipients, public opinion and deservingness', *Sheffield Political Economy Research Institute*, available at <http://speri.dept.shef.ac.uk/wp-content/uploads/2016/04/Brief-22-Welfare-recipients-public-opinion-and-deservingness.pdf> [accessed 04/09/2018]

Steber, M. (2017) 'Fundamentals at stake: The Conservatives, industrial relations and the rhetorical framing of the miners' strike in 1984/1985', in *Contemporary British History*, 32(1), 60-77.

Stillman, A. (1986) 'Preference or choice? Parents, LEAs and the Education Act 1980, in *Educational Research*, 28(1), 3-13.

Sturge, G. (2019) 'UK Prison Population Statistics', Briefing Paper Number CBP-04334, 23 July 2019, *House of Commons Library*, available at

<https://researchbriefings.files.parliament.uk/documents/SN04334/SN04334.pdf> [accessed 03/12/2019].

Tabacknick, B.G. and Fidell, L.S. (2014) *Using Multivariate Statistics*. Sixth Edition. Essex: Pearson.

Taylor-Gooby, P. (2013) 'Why Do People Stigmatise the Poor at a Time of Rapidly Increasing Inequality, and What Can Be Done About It?', in *The Political Quarterly*, 84(1), 31-42.

Taylor-Gooby, P. and Martin, R. (2008) 'Trends in Sympathy for the Poor', in Park, A., Curtice, J., Thomson, K., Phillips, M., Johnson, M. and Clery, E. (ed.) *British Social Attitudes The 24th Report*. NatCen Social Research.

Taylor, D. G., Scheppele, K.L. Stinchcombe, A. L. (1979) 'Salience of Crime and Support for Harsher Criminal Sanctions', in *Social Problems*, 26, 413–424.

Taylor-Gooby, P. and Taylor, E. (2015) 'Benefits and Welfare: Long-term trends or short-term reactions?', *British Social Attitudes 32*, National Centre for Social Research, available at http://www.bsa.natcen.ac.uk/media/38977/bsa32_welfare.pdf [accessed 14/03/2018]

Tes (2019) 'The differences between teaching in England and Wales, available at <https://www.tes.com/articles/differences-between-teaching-england-and-scotland> accessed (01/02/2019)

Thompson, H. (2011) 'Classroom Crackdown', YouGov Plc, available at <https://yougov.co.uk/topics/lifestyle/articles-reports/2011/09/22/classroom-crackdown> [accessed 06/01/2020]

Thompson, H. (2014) 'The Thatcherite Economic Legacy', in Farrall, S. and Hay, C. (eds) *The Legacy of Thatcherism: Assessing and Exploring Thatcherite Social and Economic Policies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Timpson Review (2019) 'Timpson Review of School Exclusion', *Department of Education*, available at <https://www.gov.uk/government/news/edward-timpson-publishes-landmark-exclusions-review> [accessed 15/07/2019]

The Trussell Trust (2020) 'Latest Stats', available at <https://www.trusselltrust.org/news-and-blog/latest-stats/> [accessed 06/04/2020]

Timmins, N. (2017) *The Five Giants: A Biography of the Welfare State*. London: William Collins.

Tinsley, M. (2013) 'Cultures of Dependency: Fact, fiction and solutions', in *Policy Exchange*, available at <https://policyexchange.org.uk/wp-content/uploads/2016/09/cultures-of-dependency.pdf> [accessed 07/08/2018]

Tourangeau, R., Rips, L. and Rasinski, K. (2000) *The Psychology of Survey Response*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Tyler, T.R. and Boeckmann, R. J. (1997) 'Three Strikes and You Are Out, but Why? The Psychology of Public Support for Punishing Rule Breakers', in *Law & Society Review*, 31(2), 237–266.

UK Census Data (2018) 'England', available at www.ukcensusdata.com [accessed 25/07/2018]

University of Sheffield (2020) 'Ethics Policy Governing Research Involving Human Participants Personal Data and Human Tissue: General Principles and Statements', The University of Sheffield's Ethics Policy Governing Research Involving Human Participants, Personal Data and Human Tissue: Version 7.5.

Unnever, J. D. and Cullen, F. T. (2010) 'The social sources of americans' punitiveness: A test of three competing models', in *Criminology*, 48(1), 99–129.

Unnever, J. D., Cullen, F. T. and Fisher, B. S. (2007) "'A liberal is someone who has not been mugged": Criminal victimization and political beliefs', in *Justice Quarterly*, 24(2), 309–334.

Useem, B., Liedka, R. and Piehl, A. (2003) 'Popular support for the prison build-up', in *Punishment and society*, 5(1), 5–32.

Vehovar, V. and Manfreda, K.L. (2017) 'Overview: Online Surveys', in Fielding, N.G., Lee, R.M. and Blank, G. (eds). Second Edition). *The SAGE Handbook of Online Research Methods*. London: SAGE Publications Ltd.

Walker, C. (2014) "'Don't cut down the tall poppies': Thatcherism and the strategy of inequality', in Farrall, S., and Hay, C. (eds) *The Legacy of Thatcherism: Assessing and Exploring Thatcherite Social and Economic Policies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Wallington, P. (1985) 'Policing the miners' strike', in *Industrial Law Journal*, 14(3), 145-159.

Walmsley, R. (2018) 'World Prison Population List: twelfth edition', World Prison Brief, *Institute for Criminal Policy Research*, available at https://www.prisonstudies.org/sites/default/files/resources/downloads/wppl_12.pdf [accessed 06/01/2020].

Watts, B., Fitzpatrick, S., Bramley, G. and Watkins, D. (2014) 'Welfare Sanctions and Conditionality in the UK', *Joseph Rowntree Foundation*, available at

<https://www.jrf.org.uk/sites/default/files/jrf/migrated/files/Welfare-conditionality-UK-Summary.pdf> [accessed 26/02/2018]

Waugh, R. and Pidd, H. (2014) 'Begging prosecutions increase dramatically across England and Wales', *The Guardian*, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/society/2014/nov/30/begging-prosecutions-increase-england-wales> [accessed 29/03/2018]

Weale, S. (2017) 'School exclusions data in England only' the tip of the iceberg', *The Guardian*, 10th October 2017, available at

<https://www.theguardian.com/education/2017/oct/10/school-exclusion-figures-date-england-only-tip-iceberg> [accessed 27/11/2017]

Weale, S. (2019) 'Teaching Union calls zero-tolerance school policies 'inhumane'', in *The Guardian*, available at <https://www.theguardian.com/education/2019/apr/17/teaching-union-calls-zero-tolerance-school-policies-inhumane> (accessed 27/04/2019).

Weaving, H. and Aston, H. (2013). *Teacher Voice Omnibus May 2013 Survey: pupil behaviour*. Slough: NFER. Available at

https://www.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/210297/DFE-RR304.pdf [accessed 11/12/2017]

Web of Science (2020) 'Total Publications', Clarivate Analytics, available at

http://apps.webofknowledge.com/sheffield.idm.oclc.org/CitationReport.do?product=UA&search_mode=CitationReport&SID=D12Z3GPX72L8H3abvMY&page=1&cr_pgid=1&viewType=summary [accessed 08/03/2020]

Webster, D. (2014) 'JSA Sanctions and Disallowances', Evidence submitted to the House of Commons Work and Pensions Committee Inquiry into the Role of Jobcentre Plus in the reformed welfare system, Second Report of Session 2013-14, 2, 90-101. Technical Report. House of Commons, London.

Webster, D. (2017) 'Benefit Sanctions Statistics: JSA, ESA, Universal Credit and Income Support for Lone Parents', *Child Poverty Action Group*, available at www.cpag.org.uk/david-webster [accessed 02/03/2018]

Webster, D. (2019) 'Briefing: Benefit Sanctions Statistics, November 2019, available at <https://cpag.org.uk/policy-and-campaigns/briefing/david-webster-university-glasgow-briefings-benefit-sanctions> [accessed 04/02/2020]

Welfare Conditionality Project (2018) 'Final Findings Report: Welfare Conditionality Project 2013 – 2018', available at http://www.welfareconditionality.ac.uk/wp-content/uploads/2018/06/40475_Welfare-Conditionality_Report_complete-v3.pdf [accessed 20/07/2018]

Welfare Reform Act (2007) 'Welfare Reform Act, Chapter 5', available at http://www.legislation.gov.uk/ukpga/2007/5/pdfs/ukpga_20070005_en.pdf [accessed 28/03/2018]

Welfare Reform Act (2012) 'Welfare Reform Act, Chapter 5', available at www.legislation.gov.uk/ukpga/2012/5/pdfs/ukpga_20120005_en.pdf [accessed 12/03/2018]

Welsh Government (2018) 'Permanent and fixed-term exclusions from schools', Llywodraeth Cymru, available at: <https://gov.wales/permanent-and-fixed-term-exclusions-schools-september-2017-august-2018> (accessed 27/01/2019)

Welsh Government (2019) 'Wales takes the next step to end the physical punishment of children', available at <https://gov.wales/wales-takes-next-step-end-physical-punishment-children> accessed 28/05/2020]

White, R., Lamont, E. and Aston, H. (2013) 'OCC School Exclusions Inquiry: Perspectives of Teaching Staff and other Professionals'. Slough: National Foundation for Educational Research. Available at: <https://www.nfer.ac.uk/publications/FGSE01/FGSE01.pdf> [accessed 11/12/2017]

Whitty, G. (2009) 'Evaluating 'Blair's Educational Legacy?': some comments on the special issue of *Oxford Review of Education*', in *Oxford Review of Education*, 35(2), 267-280.

Willis, G.B. (2005) *Cognitive Interviewing: A Tool for Improving Questionnaire Design*. London: Sage Publications.

Willis, G. (2014) 'Foreword', in Miller, K., Willson, S., Chepp, V. and Padilla, J.L. (eds) *Cognitive Interviewing Methodology*. Hoboken, NJ: Wiley.

Willis, G. B. and Artino, A.R. (2013) 'What Do Respondents Think We're Asking? Using Cognitive Interviewing to Improve Medical Education Surveys', in *Journal of Graduate Medical Education*, 5(3), 353-356.

Windlesham, L. (1993) *Responses to Crime*. Volume 2. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Windlesham, L. (2001) *Responses to Crime*. Volume 4. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Work and Pensions Committee (2017) 'Universal Credit: the six-week wait', *House of Commons*, HC 336, available at

<https://publications.parliament.uk/pa/cm201719/cmselect/cmworpen/336/336.pdf>

[accessed 24/03/2020]

Work and Pensions Committee (2020) 'Universal Credit Inquiry', Work and Pensions Committee, available at <https://www.parliament.uk/business/committees/committees-a-z/commons-select/work-and-pensions-committee/inquiries/parliament-2017/inquiry/>

[accessed 24/03/2020]

Wright, S., Dwyer, P., Jones, K., McNeill, J., Scullion, L. and Stewart, A. (2018) 'Final Findings: Universal Credit', available at <http://www.welfareconditionality.ac.uk/wp-content/uploads/2018/05/40414-Universal-Credit-web.pdf> [accessed 09/09/2018]

YouGov (2011) 'Classroom Crackdown', available at

<https://yougov.co.uk/news/2011/09/22/classroom-crackdown> [accessed 06/02/2018]

YouGov (2017) 'Should smacking children be banned?', available at

<https://yougov.co.uk/opi/surveys/results#/survey/dbc963d7-6b9f-11e7-bc0d-e7924d4c4383/question/f59d545f-6b9f-11e7-82b4-37e5bc96ed54/toplines> [accessed 24/02/2018]

Zaller, J. and Feldman, S. (1992) A simple theory of the survey response: Answering questions versus revealing preferences, in *American Journal of Political Science*, 36(3), 579–616.

Zamble, E. and Kalm, K.L. (1990) 'General and specific measures of public attitudes towards sentencing', in *Canadian Journal of Behavioural Science*, 22(3), 327-37.

Appendix A: Ethics Application



Application 016314

Section A: Applicant details

Date application started:

Wed 6 September 2017 at 09:22

First name:

Stephen

Last name:

Farrall

Email:

s.farrall@sheffield.ac.uk

Generic research application:

No

Last updated:

26/10/2017

Department:

School of Law

Applying as:

Staff member

Research project title:

What Became of Thatcher's Children?

Similar applications:

Earlier ESRC funded projects on Thatcherism

Section B: Basic information

Co-Applicants(s)

Name

Philip Jones

Emily Gray

Vickie Barrett (School of Law PGR)

Email

phil.jones@sheffield.ac.uk

emily.gray@sheffield.ac.uk

VBarrett1@sheffield.ac.uk

Proposed project duration

Start date (of data collection):

Sat 6 January 2018

Anticipated end date (of project)

Tue 31 March 2020

3: URMS number (where applicable)

URMS number

- not entered

Suitability

Takes place outside UK?

No

Involves NHS?

No

Healthcare research?

No

ESRC funded?

Yes

Involves adults who lack the capacity to consent?

No

Led by another UK institution?

No

Involves human tissue?

No

Clinical trial?

No

Social care research?

No

Vulnerabilities

Involves potentially vulnerable participants?

No

Involves potentially highly sensitive topics?

Yes

Section C: Summary of research

1. Aims & Objectives

There are a number of elements to the research project. These include:

- * secondary data analysis of existing data
- * face to face cognitive interviews with a small number of 'ordinary people' in order to refine the survey questions.

The first of these do not really need research ethics review (since we will not be the collectors of the data) but are included here for information and conclusion. The project's objectives are to explore, via secondary data analyses of existing longitudinal data (the British Cohort Study and National Child Development Study), the ways in which the social and economic policies of the 1980-90s might have affected the lives of those born in 1970 (and as such came of age during the 'Thatcher era') and especially how these shaped their experiences of:

- a) schooling (especially truancy and exclusion)
- b) home-leaving and homelessness
- c) engagement in the labour market, and
- d) family-formation.

These will be explored with a view to understanding how changes in the above at an individual level and regional level affect the following:

- e) popular punitive sentiments towards the treatment of offenders (such as support for the death penalty)
- f) anxieties about crime,
- g) attitudes towards law-breaking, and,
- h) experiences of victimisation, drug-taking, arrest, offending and desistance from crime.

In addition to the above, we will design and commission a survey of the extent to which 'Thatcherite' social and economic values have become embedded in British society.

2. Methodology

The project involves:

The analysis of secondary data (the BCS70 and NCDS): there are no special ethical matters relating to this. The data is in the public domain and there is no way in which we could identify cohort members in either data set.

The production of a new survey. The design and refinement of the survey items will involve face to face interviews with interviewees. There are two forms of interviews which are planned; the main approach will be survey questions development whereby we give respondents draft survey questions, ask them to complete these and then ask them about how easy they found it to answer the questions. These interviews normally take about 20-25mins and will be conducted in interviewees' homes. In the event of interviewers needing to arrange call-backs to complete the interviews, any notes made in order to arrange these will be destroyed after the fieldwork has been completed. In addition to the above, the PhD student involved in the project (Vicki Barrett) may wish to undertake longer interviews with other people about attitudes toward punishment of offenders, poorly behaved school children and welfare claimants. These interviews will again be conducted at people's homes. We are NOT applying for research ethics clearance for Vickie Barrett's work since, at this stage, we are unsure of the fieldwork she will undertake and so will make a separate application for this part of the research project.

3. Personal Safety

Raises personal safety issues? Yes

The face to face interviews will be conducted in interviewee's homes by lone researchers.

These risks will be managed by:

1) training the interviewers in good fieldwork practices, and 2) pre-arranging interviews so that the PI knows where and when interviews will be conducted, and interviewers phoning in after interviewing. The PI, Emily Gray and Phil Jones have decades of experience in supervising fieldwork in far more hostile environments than those planned in this project. Vickie Barratt will be trained in this by the PI as part of her PhD supervision.

Section D: About the participants

1. Potential Participants

We will select neighbourhoods in which to undertake the fieldwork and then randomly call on houses, asking if people would like to be involved. If they agree we will arrange a further time for an interview. We anticipate that fieldwork will be conducted in Sheffield and another town further south (most likely Banbury, where Emily Gray is based). We have chosen these areas for ease of fieldwork as team members live in Sheffield and Banbury.

2. Recruiting Potential Participants

Interviewees will be contacted in person, face to face and will be explained verbally the research project and given an information sheet about it. This will include a contact for the PI.

2.1. Advertising methods

Will the study be advertised using the volunteer lists for staff or students maintained by CiCS? Yes

This is an option which we have not ruled out, since the final survey will be an online survey. We may combine the 'door knocking' approach for some interviews and the CiCS email list for later ones (one normally does two rounds of these sort of design interviews).

3. Consent

Will informed consent be obtained from the participants? (i.e. the proposed process)

Yes. We will ask interviewees to read and sign a consent form.

4. Payment

Will financial/in kind payments be offered to participants? No

5. Potential Harm to Participants

What is the potential for physical and/or psychological harm/distress to the participants?

We foresee very little harm (physical or psychological) to interviewees. Most of our face to face interviews will simply involve asking interviewees to answer questions on attitudes about politics and checking if they found the questions easy to use. No detailed personal data will be collected from them (except for age and gender for basic analyses of ease of question interpretation across genders/age). The interviews will last 20-25mins. We are not expecting that these interviews will provoke uncomfortable memories.

How will this be managed to ensure appropriate protection and well-being of the participants?

We cannot foresee any harm (physical or psychological) being produced.

Section E: About the data

1. Data Confidentiality Measures

We will not be collecting data about names or addresses (except for the arranging of the interviews in some cases, and such data will be destroyed after the fieldwork has been completed), nor will we be collecting data which would be able to enable linkage to other data (such as NHS numbers, driving licenses, etc.). When transcribed, any identifying data (such as names of 3rd parties or particular streets) will be redacted (although this is unlikely in any case, given the nature of the interviews, which will be focused on the survey questions).

2. Data Storage

1: Who will have control of, and act as the custodian for, the data generated by the project?

The team of researchers listed above.

2: Where the analysis of the data from the project will take place and who will analyse the data?

The team of researchers listed above will undertake the analyses, which will take place at University of Sheffield premises, mainly the School of Law.

3: Whether any encryption or other anonymisation will be used and at what stage? The data will be anonymised when transcribed.

4: Who will have access to the data generated by the project?

The team of researchers listed above.

5: Is it likely that the data will be made available for use in future research projects?

We are required to archive the data with the UK Data Service, but data of this nature is unlikely ever to be used again. In any case, it will be suitably anonymised.

6: When (if ever) will the data will be destroyed?

In the sense that it will be archived, it will never be destroyed.

7: If your research is externally funded and if so, has it has met the requirements of the funder with regards to data storage and management.?

We have not yet met these requirements (since we are not yet at the end of the project), but we fully intend to. The requirement is that all data is deposited at the UK Data Service's Archive at Essex University.

Section F: Supporting documentation

Information & Consent

Participant information sheets relevant to project?

Yes

Document 1035935 (Version 4)

Consent forms relevant to project?

Yes

Document 1035315 (Version 1)

Additional Documentation

N/A

Section G: Declaration

Signed by: Stephen Farrall

Date signed: Tue 24 October 2017 at 09:58

Official notes

Not entered

Appendix B: Participant Information Sheet



Contemporary Social Attitudes Towards “Rulebreakers”: Information Sheet

What is the project about?

I am interested in the social attitudes of people living in the UK today. I am exploring attitudes towards people who break the law, benefit ‘cheats’, and school pupils who break school rules. I am interested in how these attitudes form, what influences these attitudes, and their relevance to society today. If you agree to become involved, you will be asked a number of questions about your attitudes towards these people.

Participation is voluntary. If you agree to take part, you will be asked to sign a consent form. You may withdraw at any time.

The researcher, Vickie Barrett, is supervised by Professor Stephen Farrall and Dr Emily Gray who work at the University of Sheffield. The project will run until 2020. For further details about the project see: <https://www.sheffield.ac.uk/law/phd-research/ourstudents/vbarrett>.

Why have I been asked to be interviewed?

We have chosen your house and street completely randomly.

Who will interview me?

Vickie Barrett, a PhD student in the School of Law at Sheffield University, will interview you. Please ask to see her ID card.

Who is funding the research?

The School of Law at the University of Sheffield.

What kinds of questions will the interviewer ask me?

The interviewer will ask you some general questions about your thoughts and opinions about certain groups of people (as noted above). You will also be given some scenarios which the researcher will explore in more detail with you.

How long will the interview last?

This varies, but it is expected to last between 30 – 45 minutes. The interview will be audio-recorded, as long as you do not mind (this makes things faster). The audio-recording will only

be used for analysis and no-one outside the project will be allowed access to the original recordings.

Who can I contact if I have any further questions about the project?

You can contact Professor Stephen Farrall or Dr Emily Gray at the School of Law, Sheffield University, Bartolome House, Winter Street, Sheffield, S3 7ND. Stephen's contact details are: 0114 222 6718 or s.farrall@sheffield.ac.uk. Emily's contact details are: emily.gray@sheffield.ac.uk.

Confidentiality

Everything you say in the interview will be kept private and confidential. Only members of the research team will be able to listen to or read what you have said. If anything that you have said is quoted in writing in any reports or articles that we write, you will be given a pseudonym (pretend name) or a number, and your real name will never be used.

What will happen to what I say in the interview?

After the interview, the recording will be transcribed (written down on paper). The transcription and the recording will be securely stored on the School of Law's premises in Sheffield. I will carefully read and analyse what you tell me during the interview – along with what other people tell me. My aim is to try to understand public attitudes in more detail. Extracts from your interview may be used in reports or articles that I write for other researchers and policy makers to read, but your real name will not be used in any written reports. The anonymised interview transcripts will be archived with the UK Data Service so that other researchers, who may wish to use them, can do so.

Appendix D: Main Survey

Item No	Item Wording
1.1	<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?: Competition brings out the worst in people, it makes them greedy and selfish.</i>
1.2	<i>The law should be obeyed, even if it is wrong</i>
1.3	<i>British governments of any party will place the needs of the nation above the interests of their own political party?</i>
1.4	<i>When their child is being badly behaved, it is okay for a parent to smack them</i>
1.5	<i>Do you think that trade unions in this country have too much power or too little power? Far too much power Too much power About the right amount of power Too little power Far too little power Can't choose</i>
1.6	<i>What do you think of the gap between rich and poor in UK? 1 = too large 2 = about right 3 = too small</i>

Item No	Item Wording
VB1	<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements? School pupils who repeatedly break school rules should be permanently excluded.</i>
VB2	<i>Unruly school children should receive tougher punishments.</i>
VB3	<i>Caning in schools was a good way of tackling disruptive behaviour.</i>
VB4	<i>School punishments these days are not strict enough to stop bad behaviour</i>
VB5	<i>Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should face stiffer penalties.</i>
VB6	<i>Welfare claimants who repeatedly cheat the system should have their payments permanently stopped.</i>

Item No	Item Wording
2.1	<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements? Ordinary working people get their fair share of the nation's wealth.</i>
2.2	<i>Young people today don't have enough respect for traditional values.</i>
2.3	<i>There is no need for strong trade unions to protect employees' working conditions and wages.</i>
2.4	<i>Private enterprise is the best way to solve Britain's economic problems.</i>
2.5	<i>Major public services and industries ought to be in state ownership.</i>
2.6	<i>For some crimes the death penalty is the most appropriate sentence.</i>
2.7	<i>It would be better for everyone if we all paid less tax.</i>
2.8	<i>Welfare benefits should be reserved for only the extremely needy.</i>
2.9	<i>People who break the law should be given stiffer sentences.</i>
2.10	<i>Schools should teach children to obey authority</i>

Item No	Item Wording
3.1	<i>How much do you agree or disagree with each of the following statements?: I would like my country to be the way it used to be.</i>
3.2	<i>More and more, I don't like with what my country has become.</i>
3.3	<i>These days I feel like a stranger in my own country.</i>
3.4	<i>The country's best days are behind it.</i>
3.5	<i>The profit motive has come to dominate all aspects of our society.</i>
3.6	<i>I feel sad when I think about how areas like theone I grew up in have changed.</i>
3.7	<i>...one I now live in have changed.</i>
3.8	<i>Making money is all people care about these days</i>
4.1	<i>The reliance on market forces has increased the gap between rich and poor.</i>
4.2	<i>Margaret Thatcher's governments decreased the quality of life for many ordinary people.</i>
4.3	<i>It feels to me like the country lost something when coal mines, steel mills and shipyards closed.</i>
4.4	<i>Margaret Thatcher's governments did a lot of damage to communities around here.</i>
4.5	<i>I feel that there has been a loss of community spirit around here since the 1980s.</i>
4.6	<i>Many of the problems we now face started in the 1980s with Margaret Thatcher.</i>

Item No	Item Wording
5.1	<p><i>Using the 0 to 10 scale below, how much do you think politicians care about people like you?</i></p> <p><i>The end marked 0 means 'politicians don't care at all about people like me', and the end marked 10 means that 'politicians care a lot about people like me'.</i></p>
5.2	<p><i>Using the 0 to 10 scale below, how much do you think politicians cared about people like you 30 years ago?</i></p> <p><i>The end marked 0 means 'politicians didn't care at all about people like me', and the end marked 10 means that 'politicians cared a lot about people like me'.</i></p>
5.3	<p><i>Using the 0 to 10 scale below, how important to society do you think people like you are today?</i></p> <p><i>The end marked 0 means 'people like me are not at all important to society today', and the end marked 10 means that 'people like me are very important to society today'.</i></p>
5.4	<p><i>Using the 0 to 10 scale below, how important to society do you think people like you were 30 years ago?</i></p> <p><i>The end marked 0 means 'people like me were not at all important to society 30 years ago', and the end marked 10 means that 'people like me were very important to society 30 years ago'.</i></p>
5.5	<p><i>Using the 0 to 10 scale below, how much power do people like you have in the UK?</i></p> <p><i>The end marked 0 means 'people like me don't have any political power', and the end marked 10 means that 'people like me have a lot of political power'</i></p>
5.6	<p><i>Using the 0 to 10 scale below, how much power do you think people like you had in the UK 30 years ago?</i></p> <p><i>The end marked 0 means 'people like me didn't have any political power', and the end marked 10 means that 'people like me had a lot of political power'</i></p>
5.7	<p><i>Using the 0 to 10 scale below, how financially well off do you consider yourself compared to other people in the UK?</i></p> <p><i>The end marked 0 means 'I am less financially well off than other people in the UK', and the end marked 10 means that 'I am more financially well off than other people in the UK'</i></p>
5.8	<p><i>Using the 0 to 10 scale below, how financially well off were people like you 30 years ago compared to other people in the UK?</i></p> <p><i>The end marked 0 means 'People like me were less financially well off 30 years ago than others', and the end marked 10 means that 'People like me were a lot better off 30 years ago than others'</i></p>

Item No	Item Wording
6.1	<p><i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements about Margaret Thatcher's time as Prime Minister?</i></p> <p><i>Margaret Thatcher made Britain Great again.</i></p>
6.2	<p><i>Margaret Thatcher was right to sell council houses to tenants.</i></p>
6.3	<p><i>Private companies run utilities like gas, electricity and water better than the government ever could.</i></p>
6.4	<p><i>The social and economic changes since the 1980s have ensured a brighter future for all.</i></p>
6.6	<p><i>Although there were some losers, overall the changes Margaret Thatcher's governments made were necessary.</i></p>
6.7	<p><i>Margaret Thatcher was right to take on trade unions.</i></p>
6.8	<p><i>Margaret Thatcher only looked after the interests of the rich.</i></p>
6.9	<p><i>Today's housing crisis is a result of selling off so many council homes in the 1980s.</i></p>

Item No	Item Wording
7.1	<p><i>Do you or a member of your household own (or co-own) a business?</i> [tick all that apply] [Yes, myself, Yes, someone I live with, yes, no, Don't know]</p>
7.2	<p><i>Do you or a member of your household own stocks or shares?</i> [Yes, no, Don't know]</p>
7.3	<p><i>Are you yourself covered by a private health insurance scheme, that is, an insurance scheme that allows you to get private medical treatment?</i> [tick all that apply] [Yes, paid for by my employer (or my partner's); Yes, paid for by myself or my family; Yes, partly paid for by my employer and partly paid for by myself; Yes, other; No, I am not covered by private medical insurance].</p>
7.4	<p><i>Have you, or any of your children, ever attended a fee-paying school?</i> [yes, just myself; yes, just my children; yes, both myself and my children; no neither of us].</p>
7.5	<p><i>Excluding music lessons, have you ever paid for additional tutoring outside of school for any of your children for any of their school subjects?</i> [tick all that apply] [Yes, for children still at school; Yes, for children who have now left school; No, but I would consider doing this; No; Not applicable]</p>
7.6	<p><i>Do you, or anyone in your household, own any residential property in the UK or abroad which you do not permanently live in?</i> [tick all that apply] <i>Include properties that are let out to others, second homes, or which are co-owned with others. Exclude caravans, park homes and timeshares.</i> [Yes, rented out to someone as their home; Yes, used as a holiday home/weekend cottage; Yes, rented to others as a holiday home; Yes, for occupation while working away from home; Yes, other; No]</p>
7.7	<p><i>Some say that certain kinds of information should be made available to help people make informed choices about public services such as schools and hospitals. Others think that this information is irrelevant or cannot be trusted.</i> <i>How useful do you think it would be for someone choosing which surgeon to see to be given league tables that show the number of patients who have died under the care of different surgeons?</i> [Very useful, quite useful, Not very useful, Not at all useful]</p>
7.8	<p><i>How useful do you think it would be for someone choosing which school to send their child to be given league tables that compare the exam results of secondary schools in their area?</i> [Very useful, quite useful, Not very useful, Not at all useful]</p>
7.9	<p><i>Have you ever used this sort of information to make choices about which hospital or school to use?</i> [tick all which apply: Yes, schools, Yes, hospitals, Yes another public service, No].</p>

Item No	Item Wording
8.1	In politics people sometimes talk of left and right. Where would you place yourself on the following scale?

Item No	Item Wording
9.1	<p><i>Can you remember which party your father voted for when you were growing up?</i></p> <p>[Conservative, Labour, Liberal Party/Liberal Democrats/SDP, Scottish National Party (SNP), Plaid Cymru, Green Party, United Kingdom Independence Party (UKIP), British National Party (BNP), National Front (NF), Other (write in), Varied, Not brought up in Britain, Did not vote, Can't remember, DK, refused].</p>
9.2	<p><i>Can you remember which party your mother voted for when you were growing up?</i></p> <p>[Conservative, Labour, Liberal Party/Liberal Democrats/SDP, Scottish National Party (SNP), Plaid Cymru, Green Party, United Kingdom Independence Party (UKIP), British National Party (BNP), National Front (NF), Other (write in), Varied, Not brought up in Britain, Did not vote, Can't remember, DK, refused].</p>

Item No	Item Wording
10.1	<i>Around 28% of people did not vote at the UK's EU Referendum held on the 23rd June 2016. Many said that this was because they were sick, too busy or simply weren't interested in politics. How about you? Did you vote at the EU Referendum?</i>
10.2	<i>... and how did you vote at the EU Referendum?</i>
10.3	<i>Just under one third of people did not vote at the General Election held in June 2017 because they were away, ill or are not interested in elections. How about you? Did you vote at the General Election held in June 2017?</i>
10.4	<i>You indicated that you voted at the previous General Election held in June 2017. How did you vote at the election?</i>
10.5	<i>Do you know if you are you currently registered to vote in UK General Elections?</i> <i>I know I am definitely registered; I think I am probably registered; I think it is unlikely that I am registered; I know I am definitely not registered</i>
10.6	<i>In November last year the UK and the European Union agreed on terms of a deal which is designed to settle the terms for Britain's exit from the EU.</i> <i>To what extent would you support or oppose another referendum being held asking the public whether they accept or reject the terms of the deal?</i> <i>Strongly support another referendum</i> <i>Somewhat support another referendum</i> <i>Neither support nor oppose another referendum</i> <i>Somewhat oppose another referendum</i> <i>Strongly oppose another referendum</i> <i>Don't know</i>
10.7	<i>In November last year the UK and the European Union agreed on terms of a deal which is designed to settle the terms for Britain's exit from the EU.</i> <i>To what extent would you support or oppose a people's vote being held asking the public whether they accept or reject the terms of the deal?</i> <i>Strongly support another referendum</i> <i>Somewhat support another referendum</i> <i>Neither support nor oppose another referendum</i> <i>Somewhat oppose another referendum</i> <i>Strongly oppose another referendum</i> <i>Don't know</i>
10.8	<i>In November last year the UK and the European Union agreed on terms of a deal which is designed to settle the terms for Britain's exit from the EU.</i>

	<p><i>To what extent would you support or oppose another referendum being held asking the public whether they accept or reject the terms of Theresa May's deal agreed with the EU in November 2018?</i></p> <p><i>Strongly support another referendum</i></p> <p><i>Somewhat support another referendum</i></p> <p><i>Neither support nor oppose another referendum</i></p> <p><i>Somewhat oppose another referendum</i></p> <p><i>Strongly oppose another referendum</i></p> <p><i>Don't know</i></p>
10.9	<p><i>Imagine you were given the choice and the options below were available to you. In this scenario, how do you think you would vote?</i></p> <p><i>To leave without a deal in place</i></p> <p><i>To leave with a different deal to Theresa May's</i></p> <p><i>To accept Theresa May's deal and leave the EU</i></p> <p><i>To remain</i></p> <p><i>Would not vote</i></p> <p><i>DK</i></p>

SOCIO-DEMOGRAPHICS

Item No	Item Wording
11.1	<p><i>Please can you tell me your age at your last birthday?</i></p> <p><i>If they refuse to give exact age, ask:</i></p> <p><i>Which of these age ranges best describes your age?</i></p> <p>[standard age codes]</p>
11.2	<i>What is your gender</i>
11.3	<i>What is your religion?</i>
11.4	<i>Would you describe yourself as extremely religious or extremely non-religious? [Extremely, Very, Somewhat, Neither Somewhat non, Very non-, Extremely non-, Can't choose].</i>
11.5	<p><i>Which of the following best describes your occupation?</i></p> <p><i>If you are retired and have an occupational pension, or if you are not in employment and have been out of work for less than 6 months, please answer for your most recent occupation.</i></p> <p><i>* Semi or unskilled manual work (e.g. Manual workers, all apprentices to be skilled trades, caretaker, Park keeper, non-HGV driver, shop assistant)</i></p> <p><i>Skilled manual worker (e.g. Skilled Bricklayer, Carpenter, Plumber, Painter, Bus/ Ambulance Driver, HGV driver, AA patrolman, pub/bar worker, etc.)</i></p> <p><i>Supervisory or clerical/ junior managerial/ professional/administrative (e.g. Office worker, Student Doctor, Foreman with 25+ employees, salesperson, etc.)</i></p> <p><i>Intermediate managerial/ professional/ administrative (e.g. Newly qualified (under 3 years) doctor, Solicitor, Board director small organisation, middle manager in large organisation, principle officer in civil service/local government)</i></p> <p><i>Higher managerial/ professional/ administrative (e.g. Established Doctor, Solicitor, Board Director in a large organisation (200+ employees, top level civil servant/public service employee)</i></p> <p><i>Full time Student</i></p> <p><i>Casual worker – not in permanent employment</i></p> <p><i>Housewife/ Homemaker</i></p>

	<p><i>Retired and living on state pension (i.e. no private or work-related pension scheme)</i></p> <p><i>Unemployed or not working due to long-term sickness</i></p> <p><i>Full-time carer of another household member</i></p> <p><i>Other</i></p>
11.5a	<p><i>What is the employment status of the chief income earner?</i></p> <p><i>Full time paid job (31+ hours)</i></p> <p><i>Part time paid job (<31 hours)</i></p> <p><i>Doing paid work on a self-employed basis or within your own business</i></p> <p><i>Student (full time) / On a government training programme (Nation Traineeship/Modern Apprenticeship)</i></p> <p><i>Out of work (6 months or less)</i></p> <p><i>Out of work (more than 6 months)</i></p> <p><i>Looking after home / Homemaker</i></p> <p><i>Retired and living on <u>basic state</u> pension (i.e. no private or work-related pension scheme)</i></p> <p><i>Retired and living <u>on an occupational</u> pension</i></p> <p><i>Disabled or long-term sick</i></p> <p><i>Unpaid work for a business, community or voluntary organisation</i></p> <p><i>Prefer not to say</i></p>
11.6	<p><i>When you were growing up, would you say your family was middle class or working class? [Middle class, Working class, Other, Don't know].</i></p>
11.6B	<p><i>Have you been the victim of any of the following crimes in the last 5 years? (tick all that apply)</i></p> <p><i>None</i></p> <p><i>Domestic burglary</i></p> <p><i>Other household theft</i></p> <p><i>Robbery/mugging</i></p> <p><i>Violence with injury</i></p> <p><i>Violence without injury</i></p> <p><i>Theft of a motor vehicle</i></p> <p><i>Other victimization</i></p> <p><i>Can't recall</i></p> <p><i>Don't know</i></p> <p><i>Prefer not to say</i></p>
11.7	<p><i>Which of all of the following income brackets, best represents your household income, before deductions for income tax, National Insurance etc.</i></p> <p><i>Less than £5,000</i></p>

	<p>£5,000 - £9,999</p> <p>£10,000 - £14,999</p> <p>£15,000 - £19,999</p> <p>£20,000 - £24,999</p> <p>£25,000 - £29,999</p> <p>£30,000 - £34,999</p> <p>£35,000 - £39,999</p> <p>£40,000 - £44,999</p> <p>£45,000 - £49,999</p> <p>£50,000 - £59,999</p> <p>£60,000 - £69,999</p> <p>£70,000 - £84,999</p> <p>£85,000 - £99,999</p> <p>More than £100,000</p> <p>Prefer not to say</p>
11.8	<i>Do you have any qualifications? [Y/N]</i>
11.9	<i>Do you have a Bachelor's degree or higher (e.g. BSc, BA, MA, MSc, PhD etc)? [Y/N]</i>
11.10	<p><i>Which of the following do you currently claim?</i></p> <p><i>Child Benefit</i></p> <p><i>Basic State Pension</i></p> <p><i>Pension Credit</i></p> <p><i>Disability Living Allowance</i></p> <p><i>Universal Credit (this now includes Housing Benefit, Working Tax Credit, Job Seekers Allowance, Income Support, Child Tax Credit, Employment & Support Allowance)</i></p> <p><i>Winter Fuel Allowance</i></p> <p><i>Additional State Pension (on-top of the basic state pension)</i></p> <p><i>Other state benefit (please specify)</i></p> <p><i>I do not claim any tax credits or benefits</i></p>
11.11	<i>What is your current marital or civil partnership status?</i>
11.12	<i>Are there any dependent children living in your household? Dependent children are those aged under 18 living in your household.</i>
11.12B	<p><i>Which of the following applies to you? Are you ... [Multi response]</i></p> <p><i>A parent of children aged under 18</i></p> <p><i>A carer of children aged under 18</i></p> <p><i>Neither of the above [Exclusive]</i></p>
11.13	<p><i>Which of the following categories would best describe your ethnicity?</i></p> <p><i>[Standard list offered].</i></p>
11.14	<i>Now a question about economic conditions. How does the financial situation of your household now compare with what it was 12 months ago? [A lot worse, A little worse, The same, A little better, A lot better].</i>
11.15	<i>Which of these best describes the ownership of your home?</i>
11.16	<i>Did you, or the person responsible for the mortgage, buy your present home from the local authority as a tenant? [Yes, No, DK]</i>
11.16a	<i>In what year did you, or the person responsible for the mortgage, buy your present home from the local authority?</i>

	<p><i>If you are unsure, can you give an estimate?</i></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. <i>Before 1980</i> 2. <i>1980 - 1984</i> 3. <i>1985 - 1989</i> 4. <i>1990 - 1994</i> 5. <i>1995 - 1999</i> 6. <i>2000 - 2004</i> 7. <i>2005 - 2009.</i> 8. <i>2010 - 2014</i> 9. <i>2015 – Present</i> 10. <i>Don't know</i>
11.17	<p><i>Have you, or the person responsible for the mortgage, ever bought any previous home from the local authority as a tenant? [Yes, No, DK]</i></p>
11.17a	<p><i>In what year did you, or the person responsible for the mortgage, buy your previous home from the local authority?</i></p> <p><i>If you are unsure, can you give an estimate?</i></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. <i>Before 1980</i> 2. <i>1980 - 1984</i> 3. <i>1985 - 1989</i> 4. <i>1990 - 1994</i> 5. <i>1995 - 1999</i> 6. <i>2000 - 2004</i> 7. <i>2005 - 2009.</i> 8. <i>2010 - 2014</i> 9. <i>2015 – Present</i> 10. <i>Don't know</i>
11.19	<p><i>Which of these do you have access to in your household?</i></p> <p><i>A landline telephone</i> <i>A mobile phone (Smartphone)</i> <i>A mobile phone (Non-Smartphone)</i> <i>Broadband internet</i> <i>Tablet/iPad/Kindle</i> <i>Laptop</i> <i>Desktop PC</i> <i>Smart Watch / Fitness Tracker</i> <i>Games Console (i.e. Nintendo, PlayStation, X-Box etc.)</i> <i>None of the above</i></p>
11.20	<p><i>Approximately how many hours in total have you spent using the internet in the last week?</i></p>
11.21	<p><i>How safe do you feel walking around in the area you live in after dark?</i></p> <p><i>[Very safe, quite safe, a bit unsafe, very unsafe]</i></p>
11.22	<p><i>How many foreign holidays of at least a week or more, if any, have you taken over the past two years?</i></p>

11.23	<i>Including yourself, how many people live in your household?</i>
11.24	<i>Are you the chief income earner in your household?</i> <i>Yes - I am the chief income earner</i> <i>No - Another member of the household is the chief income earner</i> <i>Don't know</i>
11.25	<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?:</i> <i>One day, I would like to own my own business.</i>
11.26	<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?:</i> <i>One day, I would like to send my children to a private school.</i>
11.27	<i>How much do you agree or disagree with the following statements?:</i> <i>One day, I would like to buy my own home.</i>

Item No	Item Wording
12.1	<i>Some of the questions we have asked you have been aimed at finding out your thoughts and feelings about Margaret Thatcher and her time as Prime Minister.</i> <i>On balance, do you think that Mrs Thatcher's governments were good or bad for the country?</i> [good; bad; no opinion]
12.2	<i>And what about the area you now live in? On balance, do you think that Mrs Thatcher's governments were good or bad for that area?</i> [good; bad; no opinion]
12.3	<i>The changes that Margaret Thatcher's governments made ...</i> <i>1: went too far</i> <i>2: were about right</i> <i>3: did not go far enough</i> <i>4: I can't decide</i>
12.4	<i>Right now, the country needs a leader like Margaret Thatcher.</i>
12.5	<i>How much would you say you know about [Margaret Thatcher's period as Prime Minister?</i> <i>1. Not informed at all</i> <i>2. Not very informed</i> <i>3. Somewhat informed</i> <i>4. Fairly well informed</i> <i>5. Very well informed</i>

Appendix E: Unweighted and weighted socio-demographic variable frequencies

Unweighted												
	Gender	Age Range	Income	Education	Religiosity	Religion	Politics	Class Origin	Marital Status	Universal Credit	IMD	Ethnicity
Valid	5781	5781	5092	5781	3303	5654	4389	5399	5781	5781	5781	5526
Missing	0	0	689	0	2478	127	1392	382	0	0	0	255
Mean	.53	4.02	6.50	1.83	3.97	.57	6.10	.31	.74	.86	2.58	.94
Std. Error of Mean	.007	.022	.049	.009	.025	.007	.035	.006	.006	.005	.014	.003
Std. Deviation	.499	1.702	3.516	.674	1.449	.496	2.328	.464	.439	.347	1.097	.244
Variance	.249	2.895	12.365	.454	2.101	.246	5.421	.215	.192	.120	1.204	.060
Skewness	-.136	-.092	.492	.217	.387	-.267	-.196	.803	-1.096	-2.080	-.107	-3.574
Std. Error of Skewness	.032	.032	.034	.032	.043	.033	.037	.033	.032	.032	.032	.033
Kurtosis	-1.982	-1.063	-.632	-.823	-.448	-1.929	-.248	-1.356	-.800	2.329	-1.301	10.778
Std. Error of Kurtosis	.064	.064	.069	.064	.085	.065	.074	.067	.064	.064	.064	.066
Range	1	6	14	2	6	1	10	1	1	1	3	1
Minimum	0	1	1	1	1	0	1	0	0	0	1	0
Maximum	1	7	15	3	7	1	11	1	1	1	4	1

Weighted												
	Gender	Age Range	Income	Education	Religiosity	Religion	Politics	Class Origin	Marital Status	Universal Credit	IMD	Ethnicity
Valid	9636	9636	9636	9636	9636	9427	9636	9636	9636	9636	9636	9247
Missing	0	0	0	0	0	209	0	0	0	0	0	388
Mean	.48	4.60	6.92	1.85	3.99	1.00	6.78	.34	.82	.90	2.51	.93
Std. Error of Mean	.005	.017	.036	.007	.014	.000	.022	.005	.004	.003	.011	.003
Std. Deviation	.500	1.628	3.546	.687	1.423	.034	2.189	.474	.387	.303	1.086	.257
Variance	.250	2.650	12.576	.473	2.025	.001	4.791	.225	.150	.092	1.180	.066
Skewness	.086	-.487	.467	.206	.346	-29.584	-.336	.672	-1.636	-2.633	-.014	-3.341
Std. Error of Skewness	.025	.025	.025	.025	.025	.025	.025	.025	.025	.025	.025	.025
Kurtosis	-1.993	-.736	-.658	-.893	-.529	873.373	.102	-1.548	.676	4.932	-1.285	9.167
Std. Error of Kurtosis	.050	.050	.050	.050	.050	.050	.050	.050	.050	.050	.050	.051
Range	1	6	14	2	6	1	10	1	1	1	3	1
Minimum	0	1	1	1	1	0	1	0	0	0	1	0
Maximum	1	7	15	3	7	1	11	1	1	1	4	1

Appendix F: Multiple regression pairwise and listwise comparison

Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'welfare punitivity' (pairwise regression – used in thesis model)

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio-demographic factors				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	.067***	.054**	.089***	.088***
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	.019	.021	-.033	-.043*
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.073***	.078***	.081***	.081***
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.090***	.086***	.018	.018
Religiosity (1=extremely...7 unextremely)	.066***	.065***	.050**	.047**
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.268***	.287***	.082***	.061**
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.066***	-.062***	-.034*	-.037*
Relationship Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.041	.040	.001	.003
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	.059**	.061**	.064***	.062***
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=highest quartile)	-.021	-.029	-.046**	-.041*
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.001	.002	.020	.019
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.014	-.018	-.018
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.062**	.019	.016
Belief systems (high scores=more neo-con/neo-lib)				
Neo-liberal values			.082***	.081***
Neo-conservative values			.476***	.453***
Nostalgia (high score=more nostalgic)				
Social nostalgic values				.008
Economic nostalgic values				.074***
Political nostalgic values				-.100***
R-square	.127***	.131**	.327***	.333**
Adjusted R-square	.124	.126	.323	.328
R-square change		.003	.196	.006

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'welfare punitivity' (listwise regression – *new*)

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio-demographic factors				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	.053*	.043*	.100***	.098***
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	.070**	.067**	.022	.006
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.086***	.091***	.094***	.096***
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.125***	.122***	.051**	.051**
Religiosity (1=extremely...7 unextremely)	.051*	.048*	.046*	.043*
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.265***	.269***	.093***	.059**
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.030	-.026	-.012	-.017
Relationship Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.027	.025	-.004	.004
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	.059**	.060**	.058**	.056**
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=highest quartile)	-.007	-.014	-.025	-.020
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.014	-.010	.002	.000
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.029	-.031	-.030
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.058**	.024	.018
Belief systems (high scores=more neo-con/neo-lib)				
Neo-liberal values			.098***	.091***
Neo-conservative values			.449***	.409***
Nostalgia (high score=more nostalgic)				
Social nostalgic values				.017
Economic nostalgic values				.100***
Political nostalgic values				-.148***
R-square	.122***	.126*	.315***	.328**
Adjusted R-square	.117	.120	.310	.322
R-square change		.004	.189	.014

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Summary table for relevant statistically significant factors for punitivity towards rulebreaking welfare claimants in Model 4: pairwise and listwise comparisons

Variables	Welfare Punitivity (pairwise regression-used in thesis model)	Welfare Punitivity (listwise regression-new)
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	*** (beta=.088, females)	*** (beta=.098, females)
Age Range 1=16-24 to 7=75+	* (beta=-.043, younger age)	X
Income 1=<£5000 to 15=>£100,000	*** (beta=.081, higher income)	*** (beta=.096, higher income)
Education 1=degree, 2 below degree level, 3=no qualifications	X	** (beta=.051, lower education)
Religiosity 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious	** (beta=.047, decreased religiosity)	* (.043, decreased religiosity)
Political conservatism Scale: 1=left to 10=right	** (beta=.061)	** (beta=.059)
Class Origin 0=working class, 1=middle class	* (beta=-.037, working class)	X
Relationship Status 0=single, 1=relationship	X	X
Universal Credit 0=claimant, 1=non-claimant	*** (beta=.062, non-claimant)	** (beta=.056, non-claimant)
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	* (beta=-.041, lower quartiles)	X
Ethnicity 0=white, 1=other	X	X
Victimisation 0=no, 1=victimised	X	X
Fear of crime 1=very safe to 4= very unsafe	X	X
Neo-liberal values	*** (beta=.081)	*** (beta=.091)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.453)	*** (beta=.409)
Social nostalgic values	X	X
Economic nostalgic values	*** (beta=.074)	*** (beta=.100)
Political nostalgic values	*** (beta=.100)	*** (beta=.148)
R-Square Value	33.3%	32.8%

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'law punitivity' (pairwise regression - used in thesis model)

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio-demographic factors⁴¹				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	.012	-.009	.033*	.029*
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	-.013	-.008	-.073***	-.077***
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	-.010	-.001	.003	.010
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.162***	.152***	.072***	.062***
Religiosity (1=extremely...7 unextremely)	.100***	.099***	.082***	.079***
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.348***	.348***	.109***	.099***
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.096***	-.089***	-.054***	-.048***
Marital Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.095***	.094***	.047**	.048**
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	-.036	-.031	-.028	-.025
IMD (scale: 1=1 st quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	.063***	.048*	.028	.021
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.022	-.017	.005	.003
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.005	-.010	-.015
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.107***	.056***	.035*
Belief systems				
Neo-liberal values			.086***	.088***
Neo-conservative values			.572***	.485***
Nostalgia				
Social nostalgic values				.142***
Economic nostalgic values				.054**
Political nostalgic values				-.044*
R-square Value	.190***	.200***	.478***	.497***
Adjusted R-square	.186	.196	.475	.493
R-square change		.010	.278	.019

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'law punitivity' (listwise regression - *new*)

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio-demographic factors⁴¹				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	-.053**	-.071***	-.001	-.001
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	.039	.038	-.019	-.016
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.023	.031	.035	.044*
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.160***	.157***	.069***	.060***
Religiosity (1=extremely...7 unextremely)	.075***	.072***	.069***	.071***
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.280***	.285***	.068***	.057**
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.088***	-.077***	-.059***	-.054***
Marital Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.084***	.082***	.046*	.048**
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	-.034	-.028	-.030	-.028
IMD (scale: 1=1 st quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	.068***	.050*	.036*	.028
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.037	-.028	-.013	-.020
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.013	-.016	-.019
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.126***	.084***	.063***
Belief systems				
Neo-liberal values			.086***	.119***
Neo-conservative values			.572***	.467***
Nostalgia				
Social nostalgic values				.136***
Economic nostalgic values				.067**
Political nostalgic values				-.059**
R-square Value	.145***	.159***	.448***	.467***
Adjusted R-square	.141	.154	.444	.463
R-square change		.014	.288	.020

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Summary table for relevant statistically significant factors for punitivity towards criminal rulebreakers in Model 4: pairwise and listwise comparisons

Variables	Law punitivity (pairwise regression -used in thesis)	Law punitivity (listwise regression-new)
Gender 0=male, 1=female	* (beta=.029, females)	X
Age Range Scale: 1=16-24 to 7=75+	*** (beta=-.077, younger age)	X
Income Scale= 1=<£5000 to 15=>£100,000	X	* (beta=.044, higher income)
Education 1=degree, 2 below degree level, 3=no qualifications	*** (beta=.062, no qualifications)	*** (beta=.060, no qualifications)
Religiosity 1=extremely religious to 7=extremely non-religious	*** (beta=.079, decreased religiosity)	*** (beta=.071, decreased religiosity)
Political conservatism Scale: 1=left to 10=right	*** (beta=.099)	** (beta=.057)
Class Origin 0=working class, 1=middle class	*** (beta=-.048, working class)	*** (beta=-.054, working class)
Relationship Status 0=single, 1=relationship	** (beta=.048, in relationship)	** (beta=.048, in relationship)
Universal Credit 0=claimant, 1=non=claimant	X	X
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	X	X
Ethnicity 0=white, 1=other	X	X
Victimisation 0=no, 1=victimised	X	X
Fear of crime 1=very safe to 4= very unsafe	* (beta=.035)	*** (beta=.063)
Neo-liberal values	*** (beta=.088)	*** (beta=.119)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.485)	*** (beta=.467)
Social nostalgic values	*** (beta=.142)	*** (beta=.136)
Economic nostalgic values	** (beta=.054)	** (beta=.067)
Political nostalgic values	* (beta=-.044)	** (beta=-.059)
R-Square Value	49.7%	46.7%

* = p<.05, ** = p<.01, *** = p<.001

Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'Ultimate Punitiveness' (pairwise regression - used in thesis model)

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio -demographic factors				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	.013	-.008	.035*	.032*
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	-.050*	-.046*	-.101***	-.104***
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.036	.045*	.047**	.053**
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.135***	.128***	.046**	.039*
Religiosity (1=extremely...7=unextremely)	.071***	.070***	.056***	.053***
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.353***	.354***	.087***	.076***
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.077***	-.070***	-.044**	-.039*
Marital Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.071***	.069***	.022	.023
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	.005	.009	.011	.013
IMD (scale: 1=1 st quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	.023	.009	-.012	-.017
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	.008	.011	.031*	.029
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.020	-.022	-.026
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.101***	.053***	.036*
Belief systems				
Neo-liberal values			.157***	.158***
Neo-conservative values			.542***	.473***
Nostalgia				
Social nostalgic values				.113***
Economic nostalgic values				.047*
Political nostalgic values				-.044*
R-square Value	.163***	.172***	.448***	.460***
Adjusted R-square	.159	.167	.445	.456
R-square change		.009	.276	.012

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Beta weights (standardized coefficients) for multiple linear regression models predicting 'Ultimate Punitiveness' (listwise regression - *new*)

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio -demographic factors				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	-.028	-.044*	.026	.025
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	-.020	-.024	-.072***	-.070***
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	.050*	.057*	.059**	.066***
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.144***	.140***	.052**	.044*
Religiosity (1=extremely...7=unextremely)	.059**	.054**	.052**	.053**
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.310***	.315***	.075***	.063**
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.054*	-.047*	-.035*	-.032
Marital Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.057*	.054*	.019	.021
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	.020	.022	.019	.020
IMD (scale: 1=1 st quartile to 4=4 th quartile)	.031	.019	.004	-.002
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.009	-.002	.015	.008
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		-.036	-.040*	-.042*
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.098***	.060***	.042*
Belief systems				
Neo-liberal values			.180***	.176***
Neo-conservative values			.531***	.459***
Nostalgia				
Social nostalgic values				.121***
Economic nostalgic values				.045*
Political nostalgic values				-.052*
R-square Value	.132***	.141***	.430***	.444***
Adjusted R-square	.127	.136	.426	.439
R-square change		.009	.289	.014

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, *p<.05

Relevant statistically significant factors for Ultimate Punitiveness towards rulebreakers (Model 4): pairwise and listwise comparisons

Variables	Ultimate Punitiveness (pairwise)	Ultimate Punitiveness (listwise)
Female	* (beta=.032)	X (beta=.025)
Age	*** (beta=-.104, younger age)	*** (beta=-.070, younger age)
Higher Income	** (beta=.053)	*** (beta=.066)
Lower educational attainment	* (beta=.039)	* (beta=.044)
Decreased religiosity	*** (beta=.053)	** (beta=.053)
Political conservatism	*** (beta=.076)	** (beta=.063)
Working Class Origin	* (beta=-.039)	X (beta=-.032)
Marital Status	X	X
Universal Credit	X	X
Victimisation	X	* (beta=-.042)
Fear of crime	* (beta=.036)	* (beta=.042)
Neo-liberal values	*** (beta=.158)	*** (beta=.176)
Neo-conservative values	*** (beta=.473)	*** (beta=.459)
Social nostalgic values	*** (beta=.113)	*** (beta=.121)
Economic nostalgic values	* (beta=.047)	* (beta=.045)
Political nostalgic values	* (beta=-.044)	* (beta=-.051)
R-Square Value	46%	44.4%

* = p<.05, ** = p<.01, *** = p<.001

Appendix G: Neo-conservative Values – multiple regression analysis

Beta weights (standardised coefficients) for multiple linear regression predicting neo-conservative values (using pairwise regression) (n=2,090)⁷³

	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3	Model 4
Socio -demographic factors				
Gender (0=male, 1=female)	-.052**	-.069***	-.062***	-.054***
Age Range (1=16-24...7=75+)	.121***	.127***	.147***	.102***
Income (1=<£5000...15=>£100,000)	-.017	-.009	-.013	.010
Education (1=degree, 2=non-degree,3=no quals)	.134***	.129***	.111***	.064***
Religiosity (1=extremely...7 unextremely)	.036	.035	.042*	.029
Politics Scale (0-10, 10 = conservative)	.338***	.338***	.213***	.157***
Class Origin (0=working class, 1=middle class)	-.079***	-.073***	-.093***	-.050**
Relationship Status (0=single, 1=relationship)	.078***	.077***	.070***	.052**
Universal Credit (0=claimant, 1=non-claimant)	-.013	-.008	-.010	.001
IMD (1=lowest quartile to 4=highest quartile)	.046*	.031	.026	-.003
Ethnicity (0=Other, 1=White)	-.037*	-.032	-.024	-.020
Crime related factors				
Victimisation (0=no, 1=yes)		.13	.020	.000
Fear of crime (1=very safe, 4=very unsafe)		.092***	.097***	.023
Belief systems (high scores=more neo-con/neo-lib)				
Neo-liberal values			.236***	.211***
Nostalgia (high score=more nostalgic)				
Social nostalgic values				.327***
Economic nostalgic values				.221***
Political nostalgic values				-.101***
R-square	.204***	.212***	.251***	.429***
Adjusted R-square	.201	.208	.246	.425
R-square change		.008	.039	.178

*=p<.05, **=p<.01, ***=p<.001

⁷³ See P230 for information about the n-size